

A PRETER-PLVPERFECT,  
Spick and Span New NOCTURNALL,  
or *Mercuries* Weekly Night-Newes; wherein  
the Publique Faith is published, and the  
Banquet of *Oxford* Mice  
described.



*Saturday night.*



Would have the Reader to understand that Night-worke and Day-worke is not all one, and as our *London* Diurnals (although the Writers of them have Day-light to see to write truly, yet for all that they do often stumble into most grosse errors, which some are so bold as to call very Lyes: therefore my selfe that am faine to grope in the darke, (or at the best in the Moon-shine) I hope, if I chance to ramble a little at one side now and then, it may be imputed to the darknes of the Times wherein it was written, and that want of eye-sight caused over-sight; and whereas we begin our Diurnals on Mondayes, and *Oxford* Newes begins on Sundayes, I must be contrary to them both, and begin on Saturday-night, as followeth;

This Night (without any vain flourishing, lying, or *Wharsoning*) there happened a very strange accident at *Oxford*,  
10 *Oxon. Aug: 11* A 1643 where



where near the upper end of the Butchers Row, within a quoytes cast of *Carfax*, there dwels one *George Chambers* a Stationer or Bookseller, who since these distracted Troubles hath bought and sold many Pamphlets of divers and contrary subjects; some of them being of His Majesties part, and printed at *Torke*, and at *Oxford*; many of them were of the Parliament partie, and printed at *London*, so that there remained unfold in the said Shop of such sorts (as were stale and past sale) to the number of 160, or thereabouts; these small Trifles were laid one upon another confusedly (like a pack of Cardes shuffled together) so these Books were intermingled together, friends and foes, Truthes and Lyes, all in a heape, one amongst another, tied in a bundle with a pack-thred, the Owner intending to have every sort of them bound by themselves afterwards. All these Divisions being thus accorded with a cord, (or parcell of Hempe, which will end all Divisions) were laid upon a shelve in the Shop; to which Trusse, Fardle, Magazine, Masse, or *Chaos* of Confusion, an Armie of *Mice* came (on the Saturday Night) a Book-haling, where they valiantly assaulted this Bulwarke of Bookes, playing the Pioners part so valiantly, that with tooth and naile they entered the papyreall Suburbs, and never lefť undermining till they had made way, tyrannically tearing through the Territories of that *Babel*, gnawing and eating their passage with their sharpe fanges, (as *Hannibal* did eat his way through the *Alpes* with Vineger) many of them being almost choak'd with eating of three Words, onely *Cavalier*, *Malignant*, and *Delinquent*, the Frogges of *Egypt* never had such a Banquet in *Pharaohs* Court, it would trouble *Vitellius* his Purveyers, *Heliogabalus* his Clerke of the Kitchin, or *Sardanapalus* his Master Cook to have made the Bill of fare, pr ovided the acates, or drest the Diet, the severall Dishes were as followeth. (I pray you pardon me if I erre in the manner of the service, for (it was night and no order was kept

kept in the eating) but to the Diet, of which were all these severall Dishes following.

These valiant Vermin fell first upon some famous Volumes, namely *Plain English*, the *Observer*, *Mercurius Civicus*, the *Continuation*, *Sir Iohn Raies eight Speeches*, *Master Prin's 19<sup>th</sup>* and last Volume, *Master Speakers Parallel between a Parliament and Wife*, *Serjeant Wildes Argument for a new Great Seal*, *Sir Simon Deyes his Revelation*, *Master Callamie his purgation of perjurie*, *M. Marshall his Letter* (written to himselfe and devised by himselfe) *M. Pym's deliverance from the dangerous Plague plaister*, (which indeed was by his own device taken from a gall'd Horse backe) after that the Mice began to nibble at *Sir Benjamin Rudiard's Speeches*, but finding them luke-warme (too cold for the King, and too hot for the Parliament) they left them, and fell to *Anticavalerisme*, then they fell to feed upon *Queres*, *Mistakes*, *Fears*, *Jealousies*, *Malignancies*, *Doubts*, *Orders*, *Ordinances*, *Votes*; these they assaulted, and quickly made spoil of. Then there were many printed Bookes, wherein His Majestie had Declared His Gracious intention to all His loving Subjects, as *Expressions*, *Declarations*, *Exhortations*, *Admonitions*, *Protestations*, *Imprecations*, *Proclamations*, *Demonstrations*, and of all these the Mice would not eat one bit, but couragiously they fell upon *Remonstrances*, *Letters*, *Messages*, *Passages*, *Treaties*, *Animadversions*, *Exprobrations*, *Exclamations*, *Objections*, *Questions*, *Answers*, *Replies*, *Replications*, *Reduplications*, *Quadruplications*, *Detractions*, *Distractions*, *Rebellions*, *Intelligences*, *Observations*, *Decrees*, *Orders*, *Lyes*, *Libels*, *Diurnals*, *Execrations*, *Resolves*, *Proofoes*, *Disproofoes*, *Extravagancies*, *Delinquencies*, *Cases*, *Causes*, *Clauses*, *Articles*, (all this while they touched not any Book or Paper that concerned the King, or wherein any thing was exprest either for His Majesties Service or Honour) Then afresh they fall to't again, gnawing and knabbling, *Briefes*, *Breviates*, *Approbations*, *Amplifications*, *Transcriptions*, *Massacres*, *Petitions*,  
A 2

ons, Repetitions, Declamations, Supplications, Reservations, Degradations, Iustifications, Manifestations, Declarations, Molestations, Condemnations, Advertisements, Remembrances, Pamphlets, Sermons, Seditions, Fights, Bastails, Skirmishes, Suspensions, Submissions, Triumphs, Firings, Plunderings, Advices, Intelligences, Newes, Expositions, Propositions, Impositions, Transpositions, Acquisitions, Depositions, Suppositions, Compositions, Inquisitions, Commissions, and the Devill and all; some Bookes also of *Irish* Rebellion were devoured as they had been *Shamroys*. Amongst which these remarkable Passages, there was one invective railing Pamphlet (written by a namelesse Authour) against Crosses, and any Signes, Figures, or Remembrances of any manner of Crosse whatsoever; upon which crosselesse, untoward, overthwart Book the Mice fell in such curious manner that they gnawed it some foure inches down the backe, and as much on the foldings of the head, just into the perfect forme of a Crosse, almost as even as if it had been cut with a knife, which is a prediction that the very Vermin will rise against these villanous scandalous Pamphlet-mongers, and knabble their damnable Inventions, some all to ratters, and some into the formes and fashions of such laudable Figures, which they have railed against. These were the varieties of Dainties that were spoiled, devoured, sacked and ruined at this banquetting Battail; amongst which Viands three of Master *Pym's* Speeches were mistaken by the Mice to be kissing Comfits, Marmalad, and Suckers, (for in sent and taste they were as sweet as *Sugar* Carrión) but though they were delicious in the palate, it was found (by wofull experience, that no Ratf-bane could be more poysonous, nor any venome more banefull in operation, which is an emblem that though Mice are common pilfering Thieves, and do maintain their straggling Common-wealth onely by stealing, yet when they grow so audaciously impudent that they dare to feed upon Treason (though it have a pleasant smacke)

smacke) yet it choaked them, and proved their bane, for many of them died, and it is certain most of them are destined or bewitched like Traitors to be catch'd in a Trap, or fall into the claws of the Car, as Conspiratours, and wicked treacherous Rebels will drop into the Hangmans budget: but the Day begins to dawn, therefore Ile give over till soon at Night: yet one thing more which was almost forgotten, there were two of *Tailors* Bookes in the bundle which the Mice touched not, the one was intituled *New Preachers*, *New*, and the other was a sweet well favoured Sermon upon *Tobias and his Dog*.

*Sunday Night.*

**T**His Night was very zealously consumed by the Brethren and holy Sisters, till between twelve and one of the clocke: amongst the Flocke there was a devout Gentlewoman (one *Mistris Fumkins* a Porters Wife in Pudding Lane) who made a short Repetition of almost foure houres, upon Master *Woodcockes* Lecture the *New-English* Teacher at *Laurence Church*, at *Laurence Lane* end near *Guild-hall*, *quasi* *All guile*, where true Lye, very Lye, she did exceeding Lye, lay open Lye, how zealous Lye, fervent Lye, ardent Lye, and perswasive Lye, he had encouraged his Auditours, vehement Lye, to continue constant Lye, obstinate Lye, rebellious Lye, she said the Gentleman did swear out most delicate Doctrine, and that he laboured like a Thrasher, and belaboured the Pulpit and Cushion extreme Lye, telling them that if they had not given Money or Plate towards the *Cause*, or laboured with the Shovell, Spade, or Barrow, for the raising of the Defensive (most Offensive) Workes and Fortifications to keep out the Armie of *Protestants*, *Malignants*, and *Cavaliers*, if they had done neither of these good Actions, they were not in the state of Grace, or if they had not or would

not hazard their Estates and Lives, to oppose, cast down, destroy, extirpe, and depose all kingly Government, all Church Order, and decencie, all Lawes and Authoritie, all obedience and loyaltie, all Christianitie, humanitie, and civill societie, that if they had not put any, or all of these vertues in practise there was small hope of any goodnesse in them, or any happiness to befall them.

When this good woman had finished her godly Repetition, there was wine in bottles, & cheare in bowles brought in, which the whole Assemblie fell upon religiously, consuming all in the way of Edification.

The rest of the Night was spent with great diligence and studie, in devising who and where to break open and risse the Houses of such as are doomed or condemned as Malignants, the purchase so gotten (whether it be Money or Goods to be sold) the High and Mightie, Magnificent *Quartermain*, the great Plunder-master Generall. His Fee is three pence in the pound, for all the pillage so lawfully taken, and it was affirmed, that at that rate his Vailes amounted to fifteen pounds in one day. Thus hath he raised his Trades from one degree to another, from a Brewers Clerke to a Preacher in a Mault-floore, and from a preacher to a most valiant *Brownisttiano*, *Plunderissimo*, *Generalissimo*.

*Monday Night.*

ON Monday Night, about six of the clocke in the morning, the Sun being two houres high, there were Letters (with some words in 'em) directed from a trusty hand in *Oxford* to one *Cut-beard* a Barber in scalding Alley, one of which Letters contained briefly that the Cavaliers are in mightie distresse, and the Colledges in much want: but you must understand withall, that they want neither meate, manners, Ammunition, or courage; and yet their case is lamentable, for since  
the



the taking of the sawcy Town of *Tenxbury* by the Parliament Forces, Mustard hath been at a greater price than Biese at *Oxford*; also their miserie is to be pittied (if they were not Malignants, Delinquents, and true Subjects to the King) for if there chance to come into the Market three hundred or more of *Salmonds* in a day, besides other fish and flesh in abundance, yet their poor & wretched estate is such, that it would grieve any tender heart to see what shiftes they are fain to make to get vineger: so that it is manifest that our happinesse doth exceed the Malignant partie in all places, for we have a great deale more sawce than meat, and more meat by halfe than manners.

This Night it was Ordered, that no Butter-women should come to the Citie with any Butter marked, printed, or molded with any formes of Crosses, upon pain that all the said Crosses should be demolished and melted, for the use of Cookes and Schul-boyes, & such like contemptible destructions; for it was wisely taken into consideration that such Crosses were as dangerous and papisticall, as the Crosse in *Cheapside*, or the Crosses upon the ends of Saint *Paul* his Church, or any other Crosses whatsoever, they being by the judgements of the wise and opinions of the Godly held to be markes of the Beast, *Roman* badges, superstitious, Antichristian, idolatrous and abominable, onely such Crosses are allowed and beloved as are upon any manner of money, whether it be Papist or Protestant Princes Coine, the matter is indifferent.

It is to be conjectured, that all the Crosse wayes in *England* must be made round, & that no Tailor shall dare to sit Crosse-legged upon pain of being plundered, for sitting superstitiously, and his Hell raked and ransacked of *all his sine* and lawfully begotten Reliques and Remnants.

*Tuesday*

*Tuesday Night.*

THIS Night three hundred Dragoons brought two old seditious and wicked Ministers out of *Gloucestershire*; It is said they durst not onely presume to pray for the King openly, but also with all vehemencie exhorted the people to obey, love and honour Him, according to the rules and commands of Gods Word and the Lawes of the Land; they were likewise taxed and accused for most wicked seducers of their Auditours to sue and seek for peace, and to be constant in the protestant Religion; and further, they denied to give any money to raise or maintain War against His Majestie and the Orthodox Doctrine established: also it was proved against them, that they perswade many others to the like loyaltie and obedience: one of them was so bold as to preach against Rebellion, and cited some Authours for what he said, he quoted *Casaubon*, and *Casaubon* quoted *Suetonius*, that it was recorded that *Brutus, Cassius, Cymba, Casca, and the rest of the Conspiratours against Caesar* did all kill themselves with their own weapons which they wounded *Caesar* withall: upon this he made application to these Times, and perswaded the people to take heed, and never to dare to lift up their hands against their Sovereigne, for fear of the like or worse judgement to fall upon them. For which rebellious and distastfull kinde of Teaching they were committed to severall prisons, there to lodge amongst their Fellowes, whilest their Cattle must be seised, their Benefices suspended; it is much hoped that Master *Green* the Feltmaker near *Bridewell*, or *Gunne* the preaching Cooper hard by the Bear-garden, or *Carbrain* the Anabaptist Dier on the backe side, shall have their places: their Families turned out of doores, their Houses rifled and ransacked, and their Goods carried to Plunderers Hall, there to be sold for the supportation and furthering of the good Cause,

Cause, and themselves (for examples and terrour of others to remain in Gaole till such times as they have learned better manners.

It was also Voted this Night, that no man or woman should be capable to receive, have, hold, or keep, either goods, lands, meat, drinke, apparell, or any manner of necessities whatsoever, except the said parties shall have the gaining & possessions of the said necessities, either by the meanes of credit, ready money, love, or by the new-made true and lawfull way of stealing and plundering.

Moreover the said Tuesday Night the Garrison at *Walsingham* (being all *Carolists*, *Royalists*, and *Cavaliers*, are in such distresse that Radishes and Onions are exceeding scarce, and (to their further griefe) Oranges and Limmons are dearer to them than to us, so that all manner of meates are like to be in good request amongst them, their best and only sawces are stomacke, pepper and salt.

Also this Night was brought from *Brainsford* to *Queen-bithe* that the Malignant partie did oppose his Excellencie, and that they would shew themselves the Benignant partie, for the service of God, their King, Countrey, and the Protestant Religion, and that we the true Anabaptisticall, Brownisticall, and zealous Reformers shall be as opposite to the Truth as the Truth is to us, which was Voted. Also this Night, there were papers found with some scriblings written by no bodie, wherein our *London* new Bulworkes, Rampires, Trenches and Workes were abused with nick-names, as they called our *Fortifications* but *Twentyfications*, and our *Bul-workes*, *Cow-workes*, because the women made them, but they said, the men were onely for the *Ram-peire*. It was also Voted that (by reason of Feares and Jealousies that the *Cavaliers* would come and plunder the Citie) in policie the people should be all plundered by the Parliament Forces, so that if the *Cavaliers* do chance to come, they shall finde nothing to

take away, for we have a purpose to consume all by this kinde of stratagem of robbing one another.

*Wednesday Night.*

**T**HIS Night there were Pamphlets scattered, one of them was concerning Squares and Rounds, the Authour of Square-dealing was one *Homo Quadratus*, the other was *Non Angulus Rotundus*, wherein some worthy Citizens of *Oxford* were both taxed and vindicated, namely, *T. Gol. Iacke* of all Trades, *W.G.* a diligent zealous brother in warning and meeting at holy Conventicles, with many others meritorious brethren and sisters, who have forsaken *Oxford*, and their King, Religion, and Allcageance, who now suffer worthily for their holy Rebellion, as the Book of *Homo Quadratus*, doth most abusively and truly deliver and lay open.

Also there came from the Presse A New Learned Weake Description of Weekly Newes; it was so acute that it did cut and curry the *Cavaliers*, in such fearfull fashion, that a deafe man would rejoyce to hear it, this Volume of one sheet was called *Mercurius Civicus*, the Authour never wrote before that time, and died in his first Week of his Travels; it is said by the Malignants, that he was most unfortunately choaked with seventeen neat and palpable Lyes, which he had carefully invented, and incerted in the said Book for the credit of our Armie, he is worse than dead, for his reputation is buried with this Epitaph, *Here Mercurius Civicus lyes in his throat*; for we are resolved to believe any thing that makes for the advancing of our Cause, and likewise we suppress and poliriquely give no credit to such Newes or Losses as do make against us; in brieve, we have lost a profitable Member by the death of this painfull Authour, but hang him, it is reported, that he is alive again, or the Devill in his likeness; however, it is to be conjectured, that he that was so nimble

to abuse and tell the Malignant parties roundly in one week, no doubt but if he had lived longer he would have bang'd them backe and side, beyond all beliefe and credit.

It is (almost) certain, that *Bruno Combertus* the High and Mightie Emperour of *Aethiopia*, and *Quoba Condona Phendernich* the puissant King of the large Territories of the invincible and invisible *Utopia*, it is said, that they are both in our Narrow Seas with a thousand shippes, gallies, sloopes, and other Vessels for the War, they have brought two thousand Tunnes of Gold, Silver, pretious stones, and some Hangings, they are come to aid us against the Rebels that obey the King, they have brought five thousand Pieces of wooden Ordnance, powder more than can be counted, or to be spoken of, and shot beyond reckoning, with all other necessaries for War or Peace, they were feasted bravely aboard our Admirall; and they will be ready to give Battail at *Brumingham*, as soon as ever the waters are high enough to bring the shippes thither.

Newes came this Night, that the Authour of a seditious Pamphlet was taken at *Lewis* in *Sussex*, It was a Book wherein was declared the goodnesse and happinesse of the King, that (beyond all example or record) in 15 yeares Raigne had not any Nobleman, Gentleman, or any Subject that arose against him in any way of opposition or Rebellion, so that the Sword of Justice had no occasion to be drawn to cut of Treason (a blessing unparallel'd in this Kingdom or any other for so long time) till now; & the Book said further, that when *Augustus Caesar* reigned, our Saviour was borne, and that the Emperour was Monarch of all the discovered Kingdomes of the World, and that Peace was then over the face of the whole Earth, which whole Earth *Augustus* commanded to be taxed, *Luke 2.1*. Shortly after there was raised a Rebellion in *Spain*, (by an Armie of Thieves) under the command of one *Crocothum* (a mad, hare-brain'd, desperate, ambitious fellow)



fellow ) This *Crocotus* with his crew troubled *Casar*, and committed many outrages upon peaceable people, and to suppress the Rebellion the Emperour caused Proclamations to be set forth, that whosoever could vanquish the Rebels, or take their Generall *Crocotus* and bring him alive or dead, should have twenty five thousand Crownes for his service, and pardon withall for any former faults committed: as soon as *Crocotus* heard of this Proclamation, he began to fear that some of his own Souldiers would cut his throat, or surprise and deliver him to *Casar*, for so great a reward as was proclaimed; upon which consideration, he wisely disguised himselfe, ran away from his Armie, and fell at *Casars* feet, claiming the benefit of the Proclamation, for he had brought *Crocotus* alive, and so revealed himselfe, and was received into grace and favour, mending his manners contrary to all expectation.

The application of this storie was, that it was desired that every offender would imitate *Crocotus*.

*Thursday Night.*

**T**His Night much Time was spent in drinke, smoake, and talke, at the Signe of the Man in the Moon without *Dowgate*; where after some halfe a score rouses, every one began to talke of that which they had nothing to do withall, amongst the rest one ignorant fellow was bold to aske what manner of thing the *Publique Faith* is, and what the reason is that it is laid to pawn for Money every where, but (that which made him most wonder was) wherefore any one man would be so mad as to adventure to lend any thing upon it, (except upon especiall good and lawfull grounded Reasons) therefore he desired to be satisfied, what this kinde of *Publique Faith* is, and how farre the power of it may extend. To which most sawcy and treacherous Question (a learned and

and worthy Welwisher to the Lowest Uppermost House replied, as followeth :

My small Friend (quoth he) I will tell thee briefly what this new *Publique Faith* is, it is called *Publique* because it is common to all, and hath communitie in all, and to take away, waste, and consume all; it is *Generall*, *Catholique*, and *Univerfall*, not peculiar to any man, particular not private to any person, there is no man hath any proprietic in it, more than he hath in his goods and lands (as at this time the case is) so that it is neither *Thine* nor *Mine*, but every mans; it hath absolute power to borrow money, and to force unbelieving people to be exceeding desperate Creditours; and whosoever is so wickedly minded as to presume to deny or delay what the *Publique Faith* demands, such refractory persons must be robb'd (of all they have sometimes) some have been so bold as to call it plundering, but instead of the word *stealing*, there is a pretty nickname given to it, called *Seasing*, for this strange Faith hath that invisibilitie in it, not onely to tolerate Thiefts and Rapines, but to allow Burglaries, Felonies, Murders, Rebellions, (and some parcels of Treasons) to be no breach of Lawes, and to lay all unruly persons in prison as will not be contented quietly (without grumbling) to be rifled and undone. It hath likewise power (with the same extorted or stolne goods or monies taken) to raise War, to transforme Colliers into Captaines, Broken Merchants to Colonells, trade fallen Tapsters into Tyrannicall *Rodemontadoes*, and these brave *Man-diwells* shall be the Leaders of such Troops of unresistable, unconquerable *Marmadomes* that shall inforce all men to the obedience of the *Publike faith*.

This *Faith*, is neither *Protestant*, *Lutheran*, *Calvinist*, *Papist*, or any kinde of *Christian Faith*. The *Turke* hath no faith to follow it, or the *Moore* to follow it, it is a faith that is full of *workes*; (whereby it is notoriously meritorious) and com-

monly it doth no harme to bad men ( for it leaves them to the judgement of another world ) it onely by afflictions tries the vertuous strength of their patience, as do desire peace, and to be obedient to their Sovereigne, and would willingly live quietly in such manner as God and the Lawes of this Kingdome (grounded and derived on and from Gods Word) hath established for the government and tranquillitie both of Church and State, such men as these, and none else but such as these are oppressed, rifled, ransacked, imprisoned, massacred, and beggered by the mightie meanes of the *Publique Faith*: for if all the Goales in *England* were searched (I mean such Goales as are under the high and mightie command of the *Publique Faith*) all those that lie in those Gaoles are laid there by that Faiths command for no other faults, but for being true Protestants and loyall Subjects to their Sovereigne, on the contrary there is not any Anabaptist, Brownist, Schismaticke, Seperatist, or Rebelle in any trouble or prison under the command of the *Publique Faith*.

And whereas (of it selfe) it hath not power, except by direction of legal Statutes & Ordinances, joyned (and protected) by regal power and Authorietie, yet it assumes, (or presumes to take to it selfe, and make of it selfe what Power it list, either regal or legal, what shal most advance the selfe will of it selfe: it is so potent, as it can maintain it selfe in magnificent pompe, by forcible borrowing, and withall it is so just as to pay double (with emptie promises) it can turne Orthodox prayer and preaching into pedlary prating, also Libels, Lyurnals, and scandalous railing Pamphlets are not onely tolerated by the *Publique Faith*, but all and (worfe than all this) hath been countenanced and encouraged by exalting the insulting swarme of mechanicke or trencher *Pulpiteers*, that what betwixt the medley of their seditious gallimaufrey hotch-potch doctrine, and the meer froathie inventions compiled and dispersed in great Volumes for pence a piece; it is most certain,

certain, that God hath not escaped blasphemie, or the King calumnie, the people unspeakable miserie, the estate obloquie, and the whole Kingdome infamie, to the most contemptible scorn of all Nations. The *Publique Faith* can frame and devise Navies of shippes, Armies of men and amunition, and Letters and Messages from the Kings of *Denmarke, France, and Spain.* (of which Letters those Kings never knew, and those Shippes, Armies, and Armes are invisable, or like Castles in the ayre) this Faith can also invent supposed Battailles, Fights, and triumphant Victories, where never stroke was strook or blow given, and it can command Bels to be rung, Bonfires to be inflamed, and publique Thankesgiving in Churches, and proclaim it selfe victorious, when it is most miserably and bravely beaten, and that it killed seven hundred with the losse of two men and one boy, and halfe a Horse, whereby the credulous seduced people have their giddy braines tost to and fro, from Jealousies to Feares, from Feares to Hopes, and from Hopes to lend and give Money as if they were mad, and in so laying out their Money, they deservedly purchase their miserie.

Moreover, this Faith cannot be perswaded by any meanes to endure or abide a King, especially if he be a good one, or will not be such an one as this Faith would make him, but if he do but claime his right, or stand upon lawfull termes for his Royall and just Priviledge and Prerogative; if he be so unruly, that he will not be ruled by this *Publique Faith*, he must then be robb'd and plundered of all that ever he hath, or at least of as much as this Faith can lay hold on, for it hath power with the Kings Amunition, Armes, Shippes, Money, Revenue, Townes, Houses, Castles, or any thing that is the Kings, in the Kings name to shoot bullets against the King, and fight against the King, for the preservation and service of the King. Thus the *Publique Faith* hath surpassed *Pharaoh's* Magicians in Legerdemain, it hath trasform'd our  
Land

Land into the Isle of *Guls* temporally, and old *England* into New *England* Spiritually. It hath made mens wealths and alleageance, crimes and causes, of their losse of estates and lives; it hath put down all Spirituall Courts, so that there is no punishment for the sweet sin of Lecherie, whereby Fornication, Adulterie, Bigamie, Poligamie, and Incest with brazen uncontrolled fronts, make whores, knaves, cuckolds, bawdes, bastards, thieves, and beggars by the hundreds, so that if this world lasts and this geer go forward, we shall have *Plato's* Common-wealth here, and concerning our wives, we shall all turne to be *Nicholaitans*; by which brave unbridled Libertie, *Hey down derry Downing*, Roome for an *Hackney* Presbyterean, that whilest his wife lay sicke, got the Nurse and the Maid servant both with childe, but some satisfaction was made, for the Wife died, he married the Nurse, concerning the other plumpe Girle, some course was taken, but all's one for that, the Parish is big enough to keep both the Cow and the Calfe. Thus can the *Publique Faith* taxe a reverend Clergie with corrupted Simonie, and yet it selfe can make money of all things, it can turne Obedience into Rebellion, and Loyaltie into Treason, it can molest a good King, disturbe and ruinate Kingdomes, and in conclusion to wear it selfe so thred-bare, that all the Cloath-workers in *England* will never be able to set a new nap upon it.

Thus have I declared the almightie and omnipotent sway of the *Publique Faith*, yet I have not related any things concerning particulars, but onely touch'd at the generall Heads of the potencie, power, actions, force, and vertues of it, the Day breakes, and our Authour writes nothing but Night-workes (or Deeds of Darkenesse) so, Good morrow my Masters.



*Friday Night.*

**T**His Night lamentable Newes was brought that Prince *Rupert's* Troopes did most unmercifully plunder a poor old woman within foure miles of South-East *Wickham*, the case was pitifull as it was related, that the woman kept a blinde, smoakie, drie Alehouse, neare the High-way, and that two Tinkers had been there and dranke all her Ale the day before the Armie marched that way, but the next day the Souldiers being on their march demanding drinke for their money, the old woman told them, that she had none left, but the Souldiers being offended, in a revenging manner, entered her house, and plundered it of all the water which she had provided to brew withall, but took nothing at all from her besides, but the poor distressed Ale-wife cried out, and wrung her hands, saying, she was undone, she was undone, utterly undone, at which instant the Prince coming by, and hearing the deplorable noyse of the woman, demanded what was the cause that made her crie out so extremely, she answered, that the Souldiers had been the breaking of her, by depriving her of the benefit of two Trades at once, *videlicet*, a Brewer and an Ale-wife, by drinking up all her water, whereupon his Highnesse threw her an Angell, and rode away laughing at her miserie: some say that *Boy* the Dog of War wagged his taile merrily in a jeering manner at the womans calamitie; and this was the most extraordinary outrage that the Prince or his Armie committed at that or any other time, for the Malignants say it is no robbrie to plunder Rebels.

But now be amazed, astonished, and posselt with wonder and admiration, and if ever we had cause to be beside our selves, out of our wits, or starke mad with joy, now is the time, there was this Night brought to light the most horrible,

ble, terrible, detestable, cruell Plot that ever was contriv'd since the dayes of *Achitophel*, the *Sicilian* Even-song comes short of it, the Massacre of *Paru* comes not neare it, the *Spanish* intended Invasion was a toy to it, and the Powder Plot was but a blast or puffe in comparison of it; but I hold my Reader too long before I come to the unpurposed purpose, or marrow of the matter, which was as followeth:

This Night our watchfull Centinels, closely and carefully examined all that came neare them, and if any were so sawcie as to say they were for God and the King, there was a strict Order for them, for being dangerous persons to the State, about nine of the clocke, or two houres before or behinde: a tall fellow disguised, with a water-tankard on his shoulder, stopt with a clout, as the manner is, which he had filled at the Conduit, as he said, falsely, for it was proved afterwards to be wilde-fire-water, this audacious *Herostratus* knowing where a Souldier stood with his Musket, which Souldier had a pound of Powder in a paper loose in his pocket, which the Villain having notice of, he suddenly stepped to him, and plucked out the stopple of his Tankard, whereat the water gushed forth with such violence that it fired the Powder, and blew the Souldier from the Standard in *Cheape* over the houses into *Milkestreet*, as farre as Saint *Whas d'ye call hims Church*, where the learned Master *Cafe* teaches, the wicked wretch was taken with his watery Engine, and upon examination he confest, that he and seventy nine more of his fellowes were hired by the Malignant partie to fire the Citie in eleven score and twelve places with this new-found stratagem of Water-tankards, for the which Plot the Traitour was committed to *Waltham* house neare *Bedlam*, and it is thought that publike Thankesgiving must be given for this great Deliverance.

This Night also there came Newes of two strange disasters which happened at Saint *Albans*, the the one was of one

one *John Robotham* Esquire, whom the Malignants do call Justice *Ignorance*, this worthy Squire to expresse his Loyaltie did oppresse all such as any way did love or honour the King, for which purpose his Clerke and himselfe did drive a great Trade in buying and selling of *Missimusses*, *War-rans*, *Bindings over*, *Withdrawings of Recognisance*, *Commitments*, *Releasings*, *Fees*, *Plunderings*, and gentle *Rewards*, by which meanes he got a wicked deale of money; this mightie bottomelesse Justice *Robotham* did for the service of His Majestie take away all the Armes and Amunition that any of His Majesties Friends had, and with the same Armour and Armes so plundered, he armed the Rebels, and yet all that was done by him was done for the Kings service; amongst the rest of the Armes he had an head-piece of his own which he took great pride in, for it was light, bright, white, and (at the least Elder-gun prooffe) it was his great Grandfathers *Morion* (a Murrein on't) at the siege of *Southampton* in *Cumberland*, indeed there was a privie search made for it, (for the very house of office was examined) but no finding could be found, and because there were so many Wenches with childe in the Town, [Mistress Justice] Master Justice *Ignorance's* Wife protested by her Halliday and Womanhood that she had rather have lost his Cod-piece than his Head-piece.

Also there was one *Thomas Sadler* who had formerly been a fractur'd Linnen-Draper, retired to a Countrey conversation, his *Lawn* transform'd into Land, his *Holand* metamorphosed into Zeal. And himselfe quite devoured by invisible uncharitable Devotion; to expresse the ardencie, fervencie, vehemencie, and curiositie of his love to the observation of Church Orders, upon a Fast-day he went into his Barne where he congregated his own people and some others, there being a great Bucking-tub brought into the Barne, the said Tub having two holes which a cole-staffe was to be put through

through upon occasion, through which holes a rope was fastened, and Master *Sadler* being in the Tub, the rope was cast over a beame, wherewith he commanded himselfe to be hoisted up, that he might make his preachment, where after nine Psalmes, and a stretch'd out five quarters prayer, he began and proceeded with singular and single Doctrine to perswade his Audience to be loyall in Rebellion, and obedient in opposing all Law and Order, which Godlesse instructions the Assemblie did not onely give large eares unto, but also edified beyond measure thereby; at last he being suddenly inspired and transported with a fierie *Enthusiasmicall* rapture, he began to denounce destruction and confusion against the Cavaliers, and with his violent expressions, and agilitie of action, in stamping the word Damnation hard under his foot, he thumped out the bottome of his hanging Pulpit, (whereby his foundation was as bottomlesse as Hell, or his Doctrine) and withall fell down in the threshing floor, where he lay a good while in a tranuce; some say he was bruised, but the wisest of his Audience do believe that he was in private contemplation with the Spirit. And thus upon the Fast-day was this admirable piece of faste and loose.

It was much disputed in the House what the true meaning of the word Malignant is (that is so often repeated in Print, and Pulpit) one said, it was derived from two Latine words, *Malè lignum*, an evill wood, a crooked, knottie, sappie, unserviceable timber, good onely to make Gallouses.

FINIS.

---

Written at London by I. T. for those that will reade,  
and are to be bought where they are to be sold.

THE  
COPIE OF A LETTER

Sent from

EXETER

By a Gentleman of quality, to a worthy  
friend of his dwelling in *London*.

*SHEWING,*

How the Enemy have besieged the said City, and  
how they lye quartered about it: With a true  
Relation of a Fight between the Citizens  
and the Cavaliers, wherein the Citizens  
took 80. Prisoners from them.

Moreover how the Earl of *Warwick* arriving at a place  
called *Apson*, sent to the high Sheriffe to raise the Coun-  
ty, which he denied; whereupon the Earl sent 3. or 4.  
small Ships, who battered down a Fort where  
the Cavaleins harboured, to the ground,  
and slew 60. or 70. of them.

*Together with other Remarkable matters, of speciall Note  
and consequence.*

This is entered into the Register Book of Stationers Hall, and  
Printed according to Order.

*Aug: 11<sup>th</sup>*

*London*, Printed for Bernard Alsop. 1643.







The true Copie of a Letter sent from

## EXETER.



**S**Ir, the miserable estate and condition of our City I conceive is sufficiently known, yet there hath not any wayes, or meanes, beene neglected by our Major, Aldermen, and the rest of those worthy Citizents, who have been both vigilant and watchfull for prevention of danger; and although some part of this our City is surrounded (and by those blood thirsty people which seek to destroy us, our lives, liberty, and Religion) yet we hope in due time to assuage their malice, and confound their devices.

There was lately a hot fight between us and our Enemy, and Cannons plaid on both sides, but little or no hurt done. one's we took eight or thereabouts of them prisoners. Since which time, Sir *William Cornbury* Commander in chief, Colloneel *Atland* Colloneel *Fulford*, and the rest of the Kings Partie,

have laid at ease, eating and drinking up the sweat of poore mens labours, the Cavalleres with their number amounting neere upon three thousand horse and foot, lyeth at *Apsom*, *Saint Thomas* his Parish, *Affington*, and the passage betweene *Kirton* and *Exeter*. As for the East and Southerne part we have free passage, and have daily great supplies of provision from *Tiverton*, *Silferton*, *Collompton*, and *Bradinch*, but for how long this will so continue, God knowes, we feare not long, but suspect that a greater force will shortly environ us from *Bristol*, and so besiege all parts. Wee stand onely upon our guard, and thinke it not fit to sally out to raise the siege, for feare of being put to retreat and disorder we should not have sufficient to manage our workes; as our enemy lyeth upon advantage, so we expect aide from *Plimouth* and *Dartmouth*, till which time here can be no issue of the businesse. The Earle of *Warwicke* at his arrivall neere our Castle at *Apsom*, sent a message to the high Sheriffe, commanding him to raise the Country upon the *posse Comitatus*, that thereby he might land men and ordnance, commanding him in the name of King and Parliament to assist him to keepe the peace of the County, but the Sheriffe obstinately refused it, saying hee would not obey his command, pretending hee had a Proclamation from his Majestie to the contrary: then my Lord sent three or foure small ships which battered downe a great Fort levell to the ground where the Cavalleres harboured, but lest their freehold, as the Cavalleres terme it, with the losse of sixty or seventy of them slaine: the Malignant prisoners, both Gentlemen and Clergy now in durance, were upon the

the Cavaliers besieging our City very deboist, and mutinous, swearing they would burne and fire the houses over their heads, and although I call them prisoners, yet they had too much liberty, going and coming when and where they pleased, such ingratetull persons are worthy of restraint, and are rewarded since accordingly. At *Ratford* house, where the late Iudge *Dodderidge* lived, we have mounted 3. Peeces of Ordnance, and fifty or sixty Muskeriers, to keepe the enemy from coming over the River, yet such is their desperatenesse, that they attempt it daily, and come over robbing and stealing our horse, sheep, and cattle, and make such spoil, that neither they nor their Commanders have any feare of God, or rule of good manners. Sir *John Barkely* a great Commander of the Cavaliers, hath done very great spoil amongst us, posting to and fro with 150. horse, imposing upon the subject such heauey taxations, that the subject cannot bear; their horses and goods plundered, their persons threatened, and imprisoned, and I think it is no newes to the world, that this Countrey hath had its share of troubles. For since the siege of *Sherborn* Castle full 14. months, when first Sir *Ralph Hopton* tooke his flight in the North part of *Somerset*, and so along the Sea coast till he came to *Pendennis* Castle, we have not been free of soldiers, and no small number, but by thousands, sometimes 4 5 6 8. and 10000. still in pay of our own party, and at length came the rabble of Cornith, and they swept the Countrey clean where they went, yea, and forced men to carry Arms, but they have done them as little service as they did us at *Modbury*, when they all run before they came near the place.

(4)

This distraction amongst us wee have  
justly deserved, and indeed it was ever con-  
trary to my desire, that young *Chidley*, who  
is the chiefe cause of our troubles, should  
have such a place of authority, Serjeant Ma-  
jor Generall, a place of too much honour  
for a giddy youth; but such is the wisdom  
of many, that they thinke if a man spend a  
moneth, two or three in the wars of a for-  
raigne Nation, none like such for experi-  
ence: but give me leave, honesty is the best  
policy: wee have beene in all parts thus  
treacherously dealt withall, and I think no  
County suffered the like as we have by *Chid-  
leyes* revolt. It was not for his good condi-  
tions or experience we esteem the losse, but  
the number of brave horse, yea and most of  
the Earles owne horse, which indeed is the  
onely ruine of the Western parts. Yet God  
is all sufficient, and we doubt not but hee  
will strengthen us, as daily he doth; for since  
the surrendring of *Bristol*, where within 24.  
houres after we heard the truth thereof, how  
the matter was caried, and upon what terms

the



(5)

the souldiers and inhabitants should depart, as in the Articles of agreement is largely expressed, none of which being performed, but the City rifled, yea, and all both fr and and so, though the Malignants to be known from others stucke greene boughes at their doores, and wore them in their hats; yet being all pillaged, the Malignants amongst us knowing they shall taste of the same sauce, if the like occasion happen to us as in *Bristol*, begin to be well affected, and encourageth the rest, and at this present doe voluntarily as hard duty as a common souldier; so that those Malignants amongst us that are of strength and ability, I am perswaded, will shew themselves more forward in this wrong Cause, as they terme it, for the love of their goods, then any other man amongst us. Therefore if any assistance come to us speedily, we doubt not but to remove those ill neighbours about us, and be at liberty. I cannot certifie you with more then I have said of the proceedings amongst us, but wee have had lately intelligence from  
*Bristol*,

: *Bristol*, that there is a Regiment or two upon their march, or ready to march at *Dorchester* and *Weymouth*, I see not how, or who should resist them; neither is it expected that there can be prevention given, unlesse some considerable force be sent downe to joyne with the Country, and to resist and make head, there being no more in these parts but onely those small forces we have under the command of *Sir Walter Erle*, which are more then sufficiently matched with the Captaine of *Corfe Castle*: and certainly if there bee not a sudden course taken, the enemy will be exceedingly strengthened, and all the *Westerne* parts ruined and spoiled. *Squire Rogers of Blanford*, one of the greatest disturbers of the peace in this County, is lately dead; he died of the small pox, coming from *Oxford*. Thus praying to God to deliver us out of the hands of our oppressors, I rest,

Your affectionate friend,

*Exeter, Aug. 3.*

1643.

I. S.

AN  
ORDINANCE

*of England* OF  
The Lords and Commons

*Assembled in*

PARLIAMENT.

For the speedy Raifing and  
Impresting of Men,

FOR  
*The Defence of the Kingdom.*

---

*Die Foris, 10 August, 1643.*

IT is this day Ordered by the Commons assembled in Parliament, That this Ordinance be forthwith printed and published:

*H: Elsyng, Cler. Parl. D. Com.*

---

Printed for *Edward Husbands*, August 11.

ORDINANCE





*An Ordinance of the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, for the speedy Raising and Impresting of Men, for the Defence of the Kingdom.*

**F**Orasmuch as the true Protestant Religion, the Laws and Liberties of the Subject, and the Parliament, are in danger to be subverted, Idolatry and Tyranny like to be introduced, by the force and power of severall Armies raised by pretence of the Kings Authority, consisting of Papists, and other dangerous and ill-affected persons of this Kingdom,



and Irish Rebels, and of divers popish Souldiers, and others of forraign Kingdoms and Nations, being not under the Kings obedience, for the ruine and destruction of this Kingdom, unlesse the same be prevented by a considerable power of Forces to be suddenly raised by both Houses of Parliament, being with Gods blessing and assistance, the most probable way to preserve this Kingdom, our Religion and Liberty.

Be it therefore Ordained by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, and by Authority of the same, That the Committee of the Militia for the city of *London*, the Deputy-Lieutenants and Committees of Parliament in every county, city, or place within this Realm, or  
 any

any two or more of them within their severall limits and jurisdictions, shall, and are hereby authoris'd from time to time, untill other Order be taken by both Houses of Parliament, to raise, levie, and Imprest such number of Souldiers, Gunners, and Chyrurgions, for the defence of the King, Parliament and Kingdom, as shall be appointed by both Houses of Parliament, &c. by my Lord Generall; And to command all Constables, and other Officers, to be ayding and assisting to them in the said service of Impresting; All which persons so to be Imprested, and every of them, shall have such Imprest Money, Coat and Conduct-Money, VVages and Entertainment, and other necessary charges and allowances, as shall be

be fit and convenient, according to the discretion of the Committees and Deputy-Lieutenants, or any two or more of them respectively: And if any person or person shall wilfully refuse so to bee Imprested for the said service; That then it shall, and may be lawfull to, and for the said persons so authorised as aforesaid, to commit them to prison, untill they shall yeeld obedience, or pay the summe of ten pounds to the said Committees or Deputy Lieutenants, to be employd for the supply of the said service.

Provided alwayes, that this Ordinance shall not extend to the Pressing of any Clergy-man, Scholler, or Student, in any the Universities, Inns of Court, or Chancery, or houses of Law, or any the Trained-bands in  
any

any country, city or place, or of any person Rated in the last Subsidies granted by the Parliament, or the son of any person Rated at five Pounds Goods, or three pounds Lands, in the Subsidy Books; or of any person of the Rank or degree of an Esq; or upwards, or the son of any such person; or the son of the widow, of any such person; or to the pressing of any person under the age of eighteen, or above the Age of Fifty; or of the Members, or Officers of either *House of Parliament*, or of the Meniall servants of the Members or Officers of either of the said Houses, or any the Assistants of the Lords House, or any of their Meniall servants; or any the Inhabitants of the Isles of *Wight* or *Angl.*

*Anglesey, or Cinque Ports, or of  
any Marriner, Sea-man, or Fisher-  
man.*

FINIS.

**O**Rdered by the **COMMONS**  
Assembled in Parliament, That  
this Ordinance bee forthwith printed  
and published.

H: Elsyng, Cler. Parl. D. Com.



The Kings last Proclamation.

First, Second, and Tenth.

An Order of the Council.

The Proclamation.

Numb. 11



Mercurius Civicus.

LONDON.

INTELLIGENCER.

OR  
Truth impartially related from thence  
to the whole Kingdome, to  
prevent mis-information.

From *Thurs*day, August 3. to *Friday* August 11, 1643.

**I**N the last weekes Intelligence mention was made of a  
Proclamation issued forth from *His* Majesty  
His name, wherein he forbids any traffique with, or  
bringing of any provision into the City of London,  
since which time there hath beene forth from thence  
another Proclamation, much to the same purpose,  
though of a larger extent, in regard both of the persons intended to be

and the punishment threatned by it, for this prohibites any of his Majesties Subjects to assist the Armies raised by both Houses of Parliament, (whom it there charges with the title of Rebels) with Men, Money, Armes, Victuals or Intelligence: The summe of which Proclamation being dated *July 18.* is to this effect: His Majestie putting his Subjects in remembrance of those many warnings which he had given them in His former Proclamations and Declarations not to be aiding to the horrible Rebellion raised against him, and finding notwithstanding that many of his Subjects are so forgetfull of their duties that in stead of assisting him with their persons and estates, they have been ayding to the Rebels with their personall services or otherwise by furnishing them with Horses, Plate, Money, and Intelligence, and that many of them have beene so maliciously seditious as to endeavour to stoppe provisions comming to the reliefe of his Majesties souldiers, to murder divers of them as they have passe in small numbers, to intercept his Majesties packets, apprehend his Messengers, and thereby furnish the rebels with intelligence of His Majesties purposes, doth therupon declare and publish to his said Subjects of all conditions, that if they be from henceforth guilty of the like dissyalties, and shal either furnish the rebels with provisions, or refuse to supply His Majesties Armies, if they shal intercept His packets, disturbe His Messengers, offer any violence to His souldiers, as they passe by peaceably: or if any Constables or Tything-men shal presume to publish or execute any pretended precept or warrant by whomsoever it be sent unto them, in favour and assistance of the said rebels, that in those cases his Majesty wil proceed against them with fire and sword, as the most desperate fomenters of this odious and unnatural rebellion; being further ordered, that for the better avoyding of the threatned dangers, the proclamation shal be read in all Churches and Chappels of the Kingdome.

By which the implacable malice of those desperate Councellors who have engaged His Majesty in this unnaturall warre against His subjects is much more appirent then ever, that they are rather desirous to promulge Proclamations of this kinde against His Majesties best Subjects, then against the rebels in *Ireland*: falsely pretending that the Forces raised by both houses of Parliament are raised against the King, and that therefore every man is bound to assist those Forces which they pretend to be raised for his Defence; consisting for the most part of Papists, Atheists, and prophane persons, of divers forraigne Nations: so that by their Law (which indeed is contrary to all Law) they would force men,

if the King commands them to kill his Subjects for serving of God, obeying the Laws, defending their Liberties, and these, as Murderers, Theeves, and Out-throats, &c. come upon them; what shall they do, resist, or stand like sheep till such wolves devour them all? whereas it is apparently known, and the King himself hath formerly in expresse words declared, *That the Power which is legally placed in him, is more then sufficient to prevent and restrain the power of tyranny*, which could not be effected, had they not power to take up Armes in defence of their Laws, which are so manifestly violated, and the Delinquents against them openly protected from punishment. *Inde est committitur injustis leges ex legibus, pax discruciantibus, iustitiamque, &c.* *Marth. Paris, Hist. Angl. 371.* when the lawlesse give us Lawes, we lose all, and our lives are to the Kings Soldiers no more then Turkes.

The Earle of Newcastle (as you lately heard) is as yet quartered about *Gainsborough* and *Lincoln*, with the greatest part of his Army; and some conceive that he will shortly march towards the Easterne parts, if he be not prevented by our Forces which lie in the way for that purpose, and are now collecting themselves together in a body, to joine with *Colonell Cromwell* to hinder the Designs of that Popish Army, *Colonel Sir Miles Hobart* is now at *Newcastle*, and he and *Colonel Fairfax* are raising more Forces in that County to oppose them, if they presume to come that way. The well-affecting Citizens of *Newcastle* are strongly fortifying *Castle-Hill*, and other places of consequence near that City, for the speedier effecting whereof the inhabitants march out daily with Drums and Colours, in the same manner as was usually done in the casting up the Out-works and Fortifications about *London*. They are in that City well provided with Ordnance, Armes, and Ammunition, and it is hoped will be able to repell that Towing Popish Army, who, notwithstanding they are now puffed up with high conceits of themselves, will no doubt (through Gods blessing upon our Forces) be soon dispersed and scattered, and those railing *Rabshakehs* be turned back by the way that they came, or at least stopped from making any inrodes into any of those sixe associated Counties, or from coming any neerer unto these parts, or if none of these, yet will be met withall by the Scots. Many thousands of whom (under the command of an expert Souldier) are ready to advance into *England*, and to fall upon the rear of that Popish Army.

The Lord *Fairfax* having long since taken the Earle of Newcastle

Lady prisoner, dealt so nobly with her, as to send her backe humbly to the Earle: In requitall whereof, the said Earle having about a moneth since taken Sir Thomas Fairfax his Lady in *Bradforth*, and sent her prisoner to *Yorke*, hath (as is this week credibly informed) sent her with a safe convey to her husband Sir Thomas Fairfax. It would add much to the honour of the said Earle, if he would deale more favourably towards those of the Parliaments Forces who are prisoners in *Yorke*, and are by some of his Instruments used with much cruelty and tyranny.

The King (is by some reported) to beat *Prife*, and hath made Sir Ralph Hopton Governour of the Castle in that City, and that he hath also forbidden the Inhabitants thereof to pay any Moneys they owe to the Citizens of *London*, but onely such as he shall appoint.

The Parliaments Committee, that are gone for *Scotland*, landed on Wednesday last in the Holy Land, and it is conceived they are before this time in *Straw*, wherethey are much desired, and their Message will no doubt be soon approved of and granted by the generall Assembly there.

In the Danish Ship lately taken by the Earle of *Warwick*, near *Newcastle*, were found Armes complete for 3000. Men, and for 500. horse, 500. barrels of Gun powder, great store of Match and Lead, besides a thousand of those weapons which the Papists call Round heads, for the use of them they intended to bring the Round heads into subjection. Many such weapons were long since found in divers Papists houses in *London*, it is a weapon with an oval or round top stuck full of iron spikes. The forme whereof for better satisfaction is here set downe.



On Monday, August 7. the House of Commons received Intelligence, that *Dorchester*, *Wymond*, and *Lincoln*, were all surrendered up unto the Kings Forces, which did no wayes dishearten or disanimatethem, but they were rather encouraged to goe on with the more courage.

rage and activity in defence of their Religion, Lawes, and Liberties, as knowing, That it is a certain Maxime in Divinity, That Mans extremity is Gods opportunity. And being well assured by sacred Historie, That it hath been alwayes Gods usual course to deliver his people when their enemies are at the highest, and his own people in the lowest condition; and well remembering that he delivered the people of *Israel* out of *Egypt*, *Cum duplicentur latera*. Upon which, and divers other serious considerations, they being then in debate of some propositions of Peace to be presented to his Majestie, which were communicated unto them by the Lords in a Conference on Saturday last, much of the nature of the former Propositions sent to the King at *Oxford*: they all agreed to send Propositions, but not till their old Army be recruited, and their new Army leaved, both which the entering into these Propositions will much hinder. And therefore according to their former Resolutions, and to the desires of the Lord Major, Aldermen, and common Council of the City of *London*, who that day presented a Petition to the Honourable House of Commons concerning the premises: They resolved for to set forward the raising of the Army, remembering the solemne Vow and Covenant lately entered into by them, not to consent to the laying downe of Armes so long as there is any Popish Army on foot, which it is not doubted but both Houses will be careful of: Since we read how jealous God is against Covenant-breakers, and against those that do not their utmost endeavours to set forward his worke, *Jer. 48. 10.*

And because I may give the better satisfaction unto all that are desirous of truth, I have here set downe the aforesaid Petition of the Lord Major, &c. which was presented to the House of Commons in these words:

To the Honourable the Knights, Citizens, and Burgesses of the Commons House in Parliament assembled:  
The humble Petition of the Lord Major, Aldermen, and Commons of the City of *London* in Common Council assembled.

*Sheweth,*  
**T**Hat your Petitioners having heard that such Propositions, and Offers have been lately sent from the House of Peers to this Honourable House, which (as we greatly feare) if yielded unto, would be destructive to our Religion, Lawes, and Liberties: And finding already



by experience, that the spirits of all the well-affected party in the City and Counties adjacent, that are willing to assist the Parliament, both in person and purse, are much dejected thereat, and the brotherly assistance from Scotland as well as the raising and maintaining of Forces our selves, thereby likely to be retarded (All which the Petitioners refer to your serious Consideration) And considering our present sad condition lies upon us in a speciall manner, through the incensed patience of the Almighty, by delay and want of execution of Justice upon Traytors and Delinquents. And having an opportunity yet afforded us to speak, our humble desires are:

That you would be pleased to to persist in your former resolutions, wherein upon the people have so much depended, and wherein you have so deeply ingaged your selves (though you should perish in the work) that Justice may be done upon Offenders and Delinquents. And that since we are as willing as ever to expose what we are and have for the crowning of so good a cause, you would be pleased by speedy passing the Ordinance herunto annexed, or one to this effect, to put us into a probable way for our anyent defence, wherein your Petitioners will by the blessing of God be never wanting; But will ever pray, &c.

**T**His Petition being presented the 7. day of August 1643. by the Petitioners abovesaid, to the House of Commons, was well accepted, and thanks returned by the Speaker for their care of the Kingdom, with promise that the particulars desired should be speedily taken into consideration: and to consider of an Ordinance to the purpose in the Petition mentioned, which was referred to a Committee.

Upon the report of the carrying of which petition to the House, many Citizens of London (thinking themselves to be concerned therein) went on the said day to Westminster in great multitudes, which being disliked of by both Houses of Parliament, occasioned this ensuing order to prevent the like concourse of people thither without just occasion for the future.

**By the Major.**  
**W**Hereas I have received an Order of the Commons house of Parliament in these words, &c.

Die Lunæ 7 Augusti. 1643.

**I**T is this day ordered by the Commons in Parliament, That it be recommended to my Lord Mayor of London to take some course to prevent all Tumults.

H. Elsyng Cler. Parl. Dom. Ccm.

These are therefore to prohibite all persons within the City and the liberties thereof, from making any unlawfull assemblies, or printing any Papers to be dispersed to that end; upon paine of incurringe the utmost penalty of the Law to be inflicted upon all such offenders.

On Tuesday Aug. 8. The truly valiant Sir William Waller wrote to Butchers Hall neere New-gate-market, where divers able and industrious chiers voluntarily lifted themselves to goe forth under his command in the service of the King, Parliament and Kingdome.

On the same day in the afternoon, divers of the honourable Lords of the Upper house went downe to his Excellency the Earle of Essex then at Kingston, there to treat with him concerning some particulars for the recru all of his Army, and some other weighty affaires of the Common-wealth.

Also severall Members of the House of Commons went to Guild-hall, thereto advise with the Lord Major and Common-councell concerning the more speedy raising of the Army under the command of Sir William Waller.

From Oxford it is informed, that the Queenes Majesty is not so dangerously sicke as was lately reported; She went abroad on Saturday last, but it is most certaine that many die there daily (both souldiers and others) of the Calenture and Burning-fever.

The Proclamation which I mentioned in the beginning of this weeks Intelligence is as it seems intended to be put in execution with all manner of strictnesse and severity; for that it is certainly informed, That some Carriers comming the last weeke towards London about their ordinary occasions had their Horses and packs taken from them, and themselves stayed and detained, and it is much feared that they will suffer further violence in their persons if some who have wholly devoted themselves to cruelty might have their desires.

On Wednesday August 9. about two or three thousand Women, most of them of the inferiour sort, inhabiting about the City of London and the Suburbs thereof, gathered together at Westminster, under pretence of presenting a Petition to both Houses of Parliament for peace. The petition for better satisfaction I have here inserted.

*The humble Petition of many civilly disposed Women inhabiting in the Cities of London, Westminster, the Suburbs and parts adjacent.*

Shewing unto your Honours, that your poore Petitioners (though the weaker Sex) doe too sensibly perceive the ensuing desolation of this Kingdome, unlesse by some timely meanes your Honours provide for the speedy recovery thereof; Your Honours are the Politicians that can by Gods speciall and miraculous blessing, (which we humbly implore) restore this languishing Nation,

and

And that our bleeding Sister the Kingdome of Ireland; which hath now almost breathed her latest gaspe; we need not dictate to your Eagle-eyed judgement the way; Our onely desire is, That Gods glory in the true reformed Protestant Religion may be preserved, the just Prerogatives and Priviledges of King and Parliament maintained, the true Liberties and Properties of the Subject according to the knowne Lawes of the Land restored, and all Honourable waies and means for a speedy peace endeavoured.

May it therefore please your Honours to conceive that some speedy course may be taken for the settlement of the true reformed Protestant Religion for the glory of God, and the renovation of Trade for the benefit of the Subject, they being the soule and body of the Kingdome.

And they with many Millions of afflicted soules groaning under the burthen of these times of distresse (as bound) shall pray, &c.

Which Petition in regard of the Contents of it, I should not have much misliked, the Title being. The Petition of many civilly disposed women, who had they behaved themselves accordingly in a civil manner, their meeting had not been so distastefull; but the greatest part of them carrying themselves very uncivilly towards divers Members of the House, and others, using many horrible expressions, that they would have the blood of those (whom they in their furious Zeale conceived to be averse to peace) so that at last from words they fell to blowes, insonmuch that upon their insolent abusing of divers men of quality, the trained Band and two Troops of Horse were forced to fall amongst them for feare of further danger; but they continuing their outrageous courses in casting stones and brickbats, they occasioned the more violence to be used towards them, wherein divers of them were dangerously hurt, and two men and two women slain, and at last upon the riding of the Troopers with their Horses among them, they were totally scattered, and many of those Meddles sent to Bridewell and severall Prisons, whereof one amongst the rest, being a most deformed Meddler or Heebler with an old rusty blade by her side, had her hands tied behind her with starch, and was guarded along by the trained Bands to prison, till further examination concerning the private contrivers of this Designe.

**This is Licenced, and entered into the Register booke at Stationers Hall, according to order.**

**LONDON,** Printed for **John Wright and Thomas Swan,** and are to be sold

at their shops in the Old-baily, 1643.

# EXAMINATIONS,<sup>5</sup>

OR,

## A DISCOVERY

Of some Dangerous Positions

*delivered in*

## A SERMON

OF

## REFORMATION

Preached in the Church of the Savoy last  
fast day, July 26. by Tho. Fuller B. D.  
and since printed.

2 Tim. 3. 5.

*Having a forme of godlinesse, but denying the power thereof.*

By John Salmarsh, Master of Arts, and Pastor of  
Heslerton in Yorkshire.

*Baptism Scripta.*

Aug. 12.

LONDON,

Printed for Lawrence Blisklock, and are to bee sold at the  
Sugar loafe near Temple Barre, 1643.



*Nihil invenio in hoc libello, cui titulus ( Examinations or  
a Discovery of some dangerous Positions delivered in a  
Sermon of Reformation, preached by Tho. Fuller B. D. )  
quin utiliter imprimatur.*

*Charles Herle.*



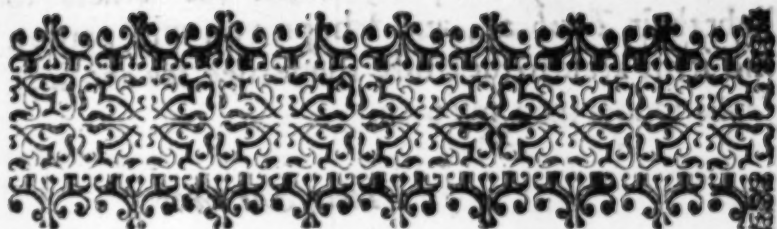
*An Advertisement returned to the Author by a Reverend  
Divine, to certifie him touching the Licensers allowance of  
Mr. Fullers late Sermon of Reformation.*

Sir,

**T**O satisfie you concerning Mr Downams approba-  
tion of Mr Fullers Sermon of Reformation, I can  
assure you I heard him complaine that hee was  
wronged by him, in that he having taken exception at some  
passages of that Sermon, Mr Fuller promised to amend them  
according to his correction, but that he did not performe  
what he promised.

Printed for Andrew Blaklock, and are to be sold at the  
Sugar-loaf near Temple-Barre, 1643.





To the Reverend Divines now convened  
by Authority of *Parliament*, for  
Consultation in matters of  
RELIGION.



Have but the thoughts of an afternoon  
to spread before you, for I examined  
the same pace that I read; that if it  
were possible, a truth might over-  
take an error ere it got too farre.  
It is not a little encouragement that I may sit like  
the *Prophetesse under the Palme-tree*, under such a shade  
as your *selves*; and what weaknesse soever may ap-  
peare in these my assertions, This ayering them un-  
der your *Patronage* will heale them, for so they  
brought forth the sick into the streets, that at least  
the shadow of Peter might touch some of them. Thus  
A 2 have

have I suddenly set up my *Candle* for others to  
light their *Torch* at; and I hope you will pardon  
me, if my zeale to the truth, made mee see anothers  
*faults* sooner than my own.

*Your Servant*

*in Christ Jesus*

JOHN SALTMARSH.

THE

# THE POLICY OF THE Sermon of Reformation.

**T**He Scope of the *Sermon*, is *Reformation*; but it so moderates, so modificares and conditionates the *Persons*, and *Times*, and *Busnesse*, that *Reformation* can advance little in this way or method: As our *Astronomers* who draw so many lines and imaginary *Circles* in the *Heavens*, that they put the *Sun* into an heavenly *Labyrinth* and a learned perplexity; Such is the *Zodiack* you would make for the light of the *Gospel*, and the *Sun* of *Reformation* to move in; it was one of the *Policies* of the *Jewes Adversaries*, that when they heard of their buildings, they would build with them; They said let us build with you, for wee seek your God as you doe: But the people of *God* would have no such helpers, there is no such *Jesuiticall* way to hinder our work as to work with us, and under such insinuations set the *Builders* at variance, when they should fall to labour; and how easie is it to reason flesh and blood back from a good way and good resolutions; I remember the old *Prophet* had soone perswaded even the man of *God* to return, when he told him, *I am a Prophet as thou art.* 1 Kings 17.  
18.

I finde there are three Principles animates the *Sermon*.

1 How imperfect a Church will be and a *Reformation*, doe the best you can.

2 That the light which the *Fathers* had formerly, was as full and glorious as the light of these ayes, or rather brighter.

3 That none, but the Supreme authority, or authority Royall and that alone ought to begin and act in this Reformation.

These are your principles, and let any judge if this bee a qualification fit for him that judges or writes of such a truth; for first hee that conceits there can bee no perfection of a Church on earth, will scarce labour to make that Church better, which he is sure will be bad at all times, nor will hee care for any new light, while the old is in best reputation with him: Nor will he seek to advance the work, but stay for a supreme authority alone; a good policie to stay the Reformation till his Majesties return, and then there is hopes it may coole in their hands.

Sermon Page 9.

withall, we flatly deny that *Queene Elizabeth* left the dust behind the doore, which she cast on the dunghill, whence this uncivill expression is raked up. The doctrine by her established, and by her successours maintained in the 39 Articles, if declared, explained, and asserted from false glosses, have all gold, no dust or drosse in them.

Examination.

I will not detract from the Religious houswifery of such a *Queen* of famous memory, but wee know her Reformation is talkt on now in a politick reverence, and we are commended back into her times, only to hinder us from going forward in our own; for I am sure till this engine was contrived, she was not such a Saint in the Prelates Calender.

For the Doctrine established from her times, though it bee not the businesse so much of our Reformation as the 39 Articles where it dwels, yet this wee know; either the light of the Doctrine was very dimme, or the eyes of our Bishops and Iesuites, for one of them would needs spee Arminianisme, and the Iesuite Popery, and some will make it a Probleme yet, whether their glosse may accuse the Article or the Article their

their glosse, such *Cassanders* found so much latitude in our Doctrine, as to attempt a reconciliation of their Articles and ours together.

Sermon page 9.

*Again we freely confesse that there may be some faults in our Church in matters of Practice and Ceremonies, and no wonder if there be, it would be a miracle if there were not, besides there be some innovations rather in the Church than of the Church, as not chargeable on the publike account.*

Examination.

These are but subtle Apologies and distinctions for the superstitions in the Church, and to take off the eyes of our Reformers, and entertain them into changeable discourses; as if they were faults, and no faults; and those that were, were irreformable, and could not be made better: and thus, while the errours of our Church should call them to reform; your difficulties and impossibilities would call them off; you say, it were a miracle to have none; this is such Sophistry as the malignity of your Clergy would cast in the way of our Reformation: and for the Innovations, they have been made by your most learned, the immediate issues of our Church; our Rubrick and Practice have been called to witness it; therefore goe not on to perswade such a fundamentall integrity, and essentiall purity; you know in what a poore case that Church was, when shee thought *her selfe rich and full and glorious*, he is no lesse an enemy to the patient, than to the Physitian that would perswade him that all is well; or at least incurable.

Sermon. page. 9.

*A through Reformation wee and all good men doe desire with as strong affections, though perhaps not with so loude a noise, as any what soever.*

Examination



*Examination.*

If your thorough Reformation in this page be compared with your 14. 15. 16. 17. pages, where you have bound it up with so many restrictions; the fallacy will soone appear: You would smoothly tax some brethren for clamor and noise in their desires after Reformation: indeed if you could perswade the Prophets of God into silence or slight endeavours; halfe your designe were finished: but they have a fire which flames into stronger expressions; if the zeale of the Prophets and Martyrs had given no further testimony to the truth then their own bosoms, we had not had at this day such a cloud of witnesses; you know the loud importunities awakens and hastens men into that holy business you would so faine retard: if you think it your vertue that you can be silent in the midst of our importunities, and loud cryes after Reformation, I am sure 'tis your policy too; for should you make too great a noise after it, you might be heard to Oxford; and perhaps you are loath to speak out till you see further.

## Sermon page 10.

*But with this qualification, That by thorough Reformation, we meane such a one whereof we are capable. pro statu viatorum, made with all due and Christian moderation.*

*Examination.*

You write of the Reformation of a Church like *Bodin*, not like *Bucer*; you make it a work of *Policy*, not of *Piety*, of *Reason* not *Divinity*: such Counsellors had *Ieroboam* and *Iehu*, and they made a Church as unhappy as a Kingdome miserable. This *moderation* and *qualification* you speak of, is not so consistent with *spirituall effences* and *operations*; if the spirit of God should not work in the soules of unregenerate, but expect an answerable compliancy first, who should be sanctified? if God had expected any such con-  
gruity

gruity in our businesse of salvation, we had yet been unredeemed. To speak closer, what *Qualification* did Queen Elizabeth expect, when she received a Kingdom warme from Popery? what *Qualification* did Henry the eighth expect, in his attempt against the Supremacy, when all his Kingdom was so universally conjured to Rome? such moderation and qualification is no other but a discreet taking so much as will serve your turne: to the Law (saith the Scripture) and to the testimony; Moses wrought according to the *Pat-terne*, so Solomon too: godly Bucer makes it his work to persuade King Edward to build up a perfect Church, and he prophesies sadly, that he was afraid Popery would succeed, because the Kingdom of England was so averse to the Kingdom of Christ, and we know the *Marian* dayes followed; me thinks we are too like his prophecy, and our *Marian* times approach too fast.

Bucerus l.  
de Regno  
Christi.

Sermon, page 10, 11.

*Such who are to be true and proper Reformers, they must have a lawfull Calling thereunto: duties which God hath impaled in for some particular persons; amongst these actions, Reformation of Churches is chiefe: Now the Supreme Power alone hath a lawfull calling to reforme a Church, as it plainly appears by the Kings of Iudah in their Kingdome.*

*Examination.*

I had not known your meaning by the lawfull Calling you name, but that you expounded it in the lines that follow to be the Calling of the *supreme Magistrate*, as if no calling were warrantable at first to premove a reformation but that; but you must take notice, there is an inward and outward Call; the inward is a speciall excitation from the spirit of God, and such a Call is warrantable to be active: I am sure it hath been sufficient alwayes to set holy men on work. Another Call is outward, and that is either of *Place* and *Magistracy*, or *publike relation*: now though *Magistracy* be

of publike relation, yet when I speak specifically of publike relation, I mean that in which every man stands bound in to God and his Countrey; now all these callings are Commission enough, either to meddle as Christianly inspired, or Christianly engaged: in ordinary transactions: I know the ordinary dispensation is to be resorted to; but the businesse of *Reformation*, as it is extraordinary, so God gives extraordinary conjunctures of times and circumstances, and extraordinary concurrences, and extraordinary incitations. In the building of the Temple you shall see in *Ezra* and *Nehemiah* such workings of God, when the people were gathered together as one man, they spake to *Ezra* the Scribe to bring the book of the law of *Moses*; here the people put one even *Ezra* to his duty.

And whereas you say, *Reformation* is of those duties that are impaled in for some particular persons; I answer, this were a grand designe, if you could beighthen *Reformation* into such a holy Prodigy, as you would of late the Church into the *Prelacy* and *Clergy*, and excluded the *Laitie*, as a prophane crew, and to be taught their distance. *Luther* will tell you this is one of the *Romish* engines to make such an holy businesse like the mountaine in the Law, not to be toucht or approached to, but by *Moses* alone; Thus you might take off many good workmen, and honest labourers in the Vineyard, whom Christ hath hired and sent in, and to whom he hath held out his Scepter, as *Abasuerus* to *Esther*.

And whereas you tell us, that the *supreme Power* alone hath the lawfull Calling, as appears in the *Kings of Judah*; I answer, that if so, the Parliament were now in a dangerous *Præmunire*, for you know that is suspended from us, and yet our state goes on in their work, enabled (as they say) by their *fundamentall* power, and constitution; I shall not here dispute the emanations of this power in ordinances,

nances, votes, and orders, they have made it appeare in their owne Declarations; only this, I read of an ordinance made by the Nobles and Elders of Israel, those Lords and Commons, *That whosoever would not come, according to the Counsell* Ezra 10, 3, *which was taken for Reformation, all his substance should bee forfeited,* here is no King of *Indahs* hand, nor a *Cyrus* King of *Persia's*, but an ordinance of their own to their own people, only they have King *Cyrus's* writ for their first assembling and consulting. Had Christ and his Apostles waited in their Reformation for the consent of the *Roman Magistrate*, the supreme power, they had not made that holy expedition they did. Had *Luther* and *Zuinglius* and *Oecolampadius* staid for the *Emperours* Reformation, they had not shed halfe that light in the German Hemisphere. There was a time when God took part of the spirit of *Moses* and put it upon the *Elders*.

Sermon, page 12.

*Meane time meere private men must not be idle, but move in their sphere till the supreme power doth reforme; they must pray to inspire those that have power: secondly they must reforme themselves and their families.*

*Examination.*

Still you drive on your design through many plausible insinuations; you would keep *private men* doing, but still doing in their own circle: I confesse I would not improve their interest too high, nor too soon, for the early settings forth of *private men* is apt to exceed into a tumultuary motion; yet I would not put them so far behind, as they should lie like the lame and the diseased at the *Pool of Bethesda*, wayting till a superream power came down amongst them: there are many publick engagements which they are capable on, and which providence will often guide them to, as in finding out wayes of facilitation, and advancement for the businesse: besides some other *arcana* and secret preparations, we see every thing

naturally is spirited with an instinct of ayding the whole; water and ayre will part with their own interests to serve the universall, in the danger of a vacuity; the very *Romans* by a morall principle would contend to be first in the service of their Country; and it remaines as a crime upon record, that *Gilead* abode beyond *Jordan*, and that *Dan* remained in ships, and *Asbur* abode in his breaches, that is, that they would sit downe encircled with their own interests and affaires.

And though you would put private men upon such duties here as are godly and commendable, the policy is to keep them exercised in one good duty, that they should not advance another; and thus you would cunningly make one piece of Divinity betray another, and make the friends of the Reformation do it a discourtesie in ignorance.

Sermon, pag. 19.

*Lastly, with carefulnesse not to give any just offence to the Papists.*

*Examination.*

I wonder you should here expresse an indulgence which is not allowable, and the memory of the *Parliament* will be honourable for that; they knew so much Divinity as taught them not to value their offence, and to proclaime to them both in *Ireland* and *England* an irreconcilable war; this carefulnesse and tendernesse you plead for, was the first principle which embased our Church so farre as to take up their Altars and Ceremonies to avoid offence, *Saint Paul* was of another spirit, who forbore not a Disciple and Apople, *when I saw*, sayes he, *that they walked not uprightly, according to the truth of the Gospel.*

You doe much mistake the Divinity of *Christ* in matter of offence, who never forbore to preach or publish any necessary truth; nay, when his Disciples were scandalized and said this is an hard saying, doth this offend you? sayes he, what and if, &c. he goes on and pursues the offence, till they left him,



him, and his Doctrine too, and for the *Papists*, they are much of the relation and constitution that the *Scribes* and *Pharisees* were; *not without*, as you say, *nor within*; and yet see if you can finde our Saviour or his Apostles lettring out themselves into your restrictions and moderations and cautions; those truths which are essentially, universally, alwayes, and at all times holy, ought not to be measured by the umbrage and scandall of the *Adversary*, indeed in things meerly civill or indifferent, our use and liberty may appeare more, but for such truths as our Reformation brings, they will be alwayes an offence to the *Adversary*; *We preach Christ*, sayes the *Apostle* *unto the Jewes a stumbling block, and to the Greeks foolishnesse*; and yet the *Apostle* preaches, and layes these blocks and this rock of offence in the way too.

Sermon page 24.

*That it is to be desired, not hoped for, a Plato's Common-wealth, and Moores Vtopia, these phansies are pleasing but unfeizable.*

*Examination.*

He that looks abroad, shall soone have his sight terminated. but the more he goes on, the more hee sees, and that which closed his prospect, opens then into new discoveries; if you see no perfect Reformation as you stand, doe not therefore say there is none, they that stand higher, and on a holier Mountaine perhaps see further, you that stand in the *Horizon of Prelacy* cannot see much beyond it; corruption is deceitfull, and makes us like *Adam*, see all generations in our selves; because we will not be perfectly reformed, let us not argue our Judgements into a believe that we cannot, let us think it as possible to be the best, as easie to be the worst; let us not think that a *Plato's Common-wealth*, or a *Moores Vtopia*, which for ought wee know, is reall and existent; There is *under the Gospel*, a *Royal Priesthood*, a *holy Nation* a *peculiar People*; and certainly had former Ages lived to see but the discoveries of later times, they would have ad-



mired their owne ignorance and our happinesse.

Sermon page. 24.

*There are some now adayes that talk of a great light manifested in this age more than before, indeed we Modernes have a mighty advantage of the Antients, whatsoever was theirs by industry, may be ours, all contribute themselves to us, who live in this latter age.*

*Examination.*

If wee had no more light than what you insinuate were seen from the Fathers, why doe we see more and more clearly and further? hee that sees farre must either have a good sight or a cleere light, and sure in this age we have both, those errors which our Fathers saw for dimme truths, we see for heresies; so surely both our eyes and our light are better; for the light which our Fathers have in their lamps can discover but so much to us, as it did to them; and we know our discoveries are such, as we are able to see the shadow which followed them, even that mystery which was working in their dayes, both in Prelacy and Ceremony, who will deny but that the cloud of *Antichristianisme* was thick in their times, and then the light could not be so glorious as now, when these clouds grow thinner, and more attenuated by the Preaching of the Gospel, the Gospel doth work and wind its beames into the world according to the Prophetical seasons for Revelation, many Prophetical truths were sealed up and those not unsealed but successively, and as our generations after, may have a *starre* rising to them, which we have not, so we may have *beames* and *radiations* and *shootings* which our Fathers had not. The Apostles had not all their truths and light revealed at once, some early, some late, some not till the Holy Ghost was bestowed: Revelations are graduall, and the vaile is not taken off at once, nor in one Age: wee honour the Fathers as men in their Generations famous, their light was glorious in its degree and quality but they had not all the degrees attainable; they had a light for their own times,

*Revel.*

*Ap. 3. 36.*

times, and we for ours; and who cannot think we are rising into that Age, wherein God shall poure his spirit upon all flesh; and wherein the light of the Moone shall be as the light of the Sun, and the light of the Sun as the light of seven dayes.

But we see the policy of commending the *Fathers* light to our Generation for could you prevaile with us to set our *Dials* by that, you then might reform our Church by the *Canterburian* *gnomen*, and so set us back to a falsly-reputed *Primitive* Reformation.

Sermon, page 13, 14, 15, 16.

*The Qualification for Reformers, the decent buriall of such Ceremonies as are taken from the Fathers, the honourable Reservation to our first Reformers.* Examination.

That it may appear I look not onely at the worst of the Sermon, there are excellent truths in it, and it is pitie they are not better situated, I could alwayes wish to see a *Diamond* set in *Gold*.

These are good Positions, and in their Pages not without their enamill of wit, yet there is a Policy to write faire in one leafe, though you make a blot in another, but I cannot let these passe without some observation;

First for the *Qualification*, I dare say never age afforded more eminent in this Kingdom, their *Calling* lawfull, their *Pietie* exemplary, their *knowledge* radiant, their *courage* experienced thorow a legion of difficulties; their *prudence* in the conduct of a businesse, though opposed with the *Policy* and *Malignity* of a grand and potent Enemy;

And for the *decent buriall of Ceremonies, and superstitions of the fathers*, they shall have a *Parliament* of *Senators*, and an *Assembly* of *Divines* to lay them in their *Grave*, and I dare say, a godly *Congregation* in the Kingdom to sing a *Psalm* at their *Funeralls*; and will not this be a very decent buriall?

And for the *honourable reservation to the Reformers and their memories*, our *Divines* and *Reformers* now have ever made re-  
 forts

forts and appeals to the truths they delivered; and in those times when *Beza*, and *Calvin*, and *P. Martyr* were set lowest; till the *Master of the feast* came lately and bid them sit up higher; a *Caietan* and *Bellarmino*, and a *Councell of Trent*, I am sure, had more honour from the Divinitie of the other year, or your times, so farre we admire the *Reformers*, as to love their *Truths*, and to pittie their *errors*.

But I will not say much, <sup>a</sup> errors may be more provoked than remedied with overhandling; let us be wise in the Colours of good and evill, <sup>b</sup> though it be an honest, yet it is a dangerous mistake to think too many our Friends, and too few our Enemies.

### Conclusion.

If I be now examined what *Reformation* I aime at, I answer, my endeavour here was only to take out of the way such rubbish as others would bring in; if we can but clear the passage we go far in the work, and in the meantime let us like *Ioshuas* spies, bring no evill report upon the land we are going to.

But suppose this perfect *Reformation* or *Church* were among the *ἡρώδια* the *ἡρώδια πολιτικῶν σοφισμάτων*, the *Ragione di sacro dominio*, he were no wise nor faithfull *Divine*, who would not preserve that secret for holy advantages; 'tis *Gods* own design and his *Apostles* to hold out a perfection to us, be perfect as your heavenly father, - and some *Pastors* - for the perfecting of the *Saints*, I commend *Bodin* & *Tacitus* for their politicall faithfulness, they write far, yet would not <sup>c</sup> sun the *Imperiall ἡρώδια*, nor make them popular.

### Apology.

I have now done (I will not say) refusing, but committing errors, I am afraid my haste at this time hath made me mend one fault only with another.

FINIS.

57

New Quæres  
OF  
CONSCIENCE,

*Touching the late OATH;  
Desiring Resolution.*

1. The threefold conditions of an Oath in generall of *Truth, Judgement, Righteousnes* Jer. 4. 2.
2. The threefold Oath taken in particular *viz. of*
  1. Allegiance.
  2. Supremacy.
  3. Protestation.
3. Their own introduction, Limitation in speciall, in order to the security and preservation of the True, Reformed, Protestant Religion.

*Q. How it  
consists with*

I. Quære.

*How it consists with the three Conditions of  
an OATH.*

1. **O**F *Truth*, which excludes falshood, doublings, fictions, mentall evasions, equivocations, and reservations, and requires simplicity and sincerity, according to the sense and purpose of the imposer.

1 *Liquide jurare,*

2. *Of judgement*, not unadvisedly, lightly or wantonly, to falsifie the times, to comply with great persons, for advantage,

*Aug: 12. 1643*

A

or

*Conscience Resolved*  
or carnall securitie, not upon a Popish implicite faith, but to let every man be perswaded in his own minde, that it be grounded upon a necessary Cause, and taken soberly, advisedly, discreetly, reverently and in the fear of God.

3. *Of Righteousnesse*, That it be not to the prejudice of my Neighbour.

Hee that takes it with his private Reservation inconsistent with the Sense and purpose of the Oath, offends against the first. He that takes it for favour of men, offends against the second. He that takes it out of emulation and rage, to the damage of his Brother, offends against the third.

For these Causes, *D. Augustine* concludes; *Falsa juratio exitiosa est, vera juratio periculosa, nulla juratio secuta*. False swearing is pernicious; True swearing is dangerous; no swearing is secure. *Ser. 28. de verb. Apost.*

By an ancient Law of the Church, No man was to be sworn but fasting.

#### Quære I I.

*How can it consist with the Oath?*

1 *OF Supremacy*. For if he be once supreme over all persons, in all causes Ecclesiasticall and Temporall, how can I swear to subject him, or bring him under any person, in any Cause whatsoever? and though the chief occasion of that Oath was upon the Popes pretending jurisdiction, yet the intention and extention was to shut all his Subjects under the same condition of Obedience.

2 *Of Allegiance*, For I am bound First, To defend the King and his Successours to the uttermost of my power against all Treasons, & Conspiracies against his Person, Crown and dignity. Secondly, To doe my best endeavour to reveal all Conspiracies I know or hear against him or any of them, and Third, That no person whatsoever hath power to absolve me of the Oath, and All which seem to be endangered by taking up Armes against him, or his life-guard, or the forces raised by him.



*Concerning the late OATH.*

3. *Of the late Protestation*, in regard of a double seeming Contradiction. For I promise, vow and protest, to maintain the Protestant Religion, expressed in the Doctrine of the Church of England. But this assertion (That in my Conscience I do beleve that the Forces raised by the two Houses of Parliament, are raised and continued for their just defence, and for the defence of the true Protestant Religion) seems to contradict the Protestant Religion & Doctrin of our Church. For though there be many strange Fancies, and doctrines in the Church of England, yet there is but One expresse Doctrine of the Church of England, and that is contained in the 39 Articles, and Book of Common Prayer (to which all the regular Clergy must subscribe) and are confirmed by an Act of Parliament. Now one Protestant point of our Religion, expressed in the Doctrine of this Church, is in the 37 Article, Viz.

1. *The Kings Majesty hath the Chief power (id est, supremacy) in this Realme of England, unto whom the Chiefe government of All Estates of this Realme, whether Ecclesiasticall or Civill, in all Causes doth appertaine, To Rule All estates and degrees committed to his charge, and to restrain with the sword the Stubborne and evill doers, which hee cannot doe if the Sword or Militia bee taken from him.*

2. *That a man may take up Armes when the Magistrate (id est, Supream power) commandeth.*

3. *That a man may sweare when the Magistrate requires in a cause of Faith and Charity. Implying that no man ought to sweare, save solemn Oathes, or Beare Armes without the injunction of the supream Magistrate.*

4. *That the two Books of Homilies containes a godly and wholsome Doctrine and are to be read in Churches by the Ministers (not only reading Ministers) diligently and distinctly, that they may be understood of the people.*

5. *Homil. 21. Against Rebellion, That it is not lawfull for Subjects to raise up Armes against their Sovereigne, under colour of Religion.*

## Conscience Resolved

*Eccles. 4. 12.*

A threefold cord is not easily broken, except by such as furiously rage together, and lightly imagine a vain thing. By Rulers that take Counsell together against the Lord, and against his Anointed, saying, I let us break their bonds asunder, and cast away their Cords from us. But he that sits in Heaven, laughs them to scorne, the Lord shall have them in derision.

And yet will I set my King upon his holy hill of Sion: Hee will bruise them with a rod of iron, and, Be wise therefore, and kisse the Son, lest he be angry. *Psal. 2. 1, 2, 3.*

### Quære III.

*How can it consist with the Protestation in the second particular, Against all Popish Innovations within the Realm, &c. For to tak up Armes in Case of Religion, against the supreme Power, is a plain Popish Jesuiticall Innovation taught and maintained by them in this last age.*

And in the third particular.

*For I vow and protest to maintain with my life, power and estate, according to the duty of my Allegiance, his Majesties*

- § 1. Power.
- § 2. Honour.
- § 3. Estate.

*Now the Quære is, How can I maintain?*

**H**is Person, with my life, power and estate, if I swear, To assist an army of men, which he declares (as is thought, by many pious and judicious men) to be utter enemies to his life, honour and estate.

*Or how can I maintain?*

2. His Honour, when by the Oath I professe not onely in my heart and thought to curse him, contrary to the word of God. *Eccles. 10. 20. Exod. 22. 28.* but openly with my mouth to blasphemise him, and in effect say, (which is *Nesandum*) He is an utter enemy of Gods true Religion, a violator of all sacred Vowes, Oaths, Bonds and Covenants. And shall I yet say, I maintain his honour? Am I thus presumptuous to judge him, and not afraid to speak evill of Dignities. and yet maintain his Honour, or the Protestant Religion? Did *Cham* honour his father, when he discovered his nakednesse? And doe

### Concerning the late OATH.

doe they honor their father that cover and extinguish his vertues and glory, and cast aspersions of disgrace and calumny upon him? Would such Honour be taken of the Father from his children? of the servant from his master? *Go and offer that honour to thy Father, thy Master, thy Governour, and see if hee will take it at thy hands.* Mal. 1. 6. 8.

*Or how can I maintain?*

3. His *Estate*, when I take part with them that withhold, and withdraw it from him. 2. That put him to such an exhausting and consuming charge by maintaining an Army to guard and protect his Person and his Subjects.

Nor will the after Limitation serve to heal the breach of the Oath, by saying, It was not to be extended to the maintenance of any Form or Worship, Discipline or Government of the Church (of England) for first all the ordained Ministers have subscribed and sworn to all the Doctrine of the Church, &c. and cannot be absolved from any lawfull Oath by any power whatsoever.

4. Though it should not be extended to Church government, yet it will reach to the Civill Supremacy and power of the sword, which it avoucheth to be only in the King, and not in any Subjects whatsoever.

### Quære III.

*How can it consist with its own*

Introduction, *id est.* That there hath been and now is a Popish and Traiterous Plot for the subversion of the true Religion.

First. *How can I believe it, and beleve the Kings Protestation to the contrary.* Secondly, *And how can I honour the King, and not beleve him?* Thirdly, *How can I call it a Popish Army, when the better and greater part by far are Protestants, and against all Popish Plots.*

And Expression,

I N declaring my sorrow for my sins past, and purpose to amend, if in the very Oath I commit greater sins of Disobedience, perjury. and blasphemy then I repented of; if the Repentance it self be a mockery, a sin, and a Transgression, its

a Re-

## Conscience Resolved

*Ecclef. 4. 12.*

A threefold cord is not easily broken, except by such as furiously rage together, and lightly imagine a vain thing. By Rulers that take Counsel together against the Lord, and against his Anointed, saying, Let us break their bonds asunder, and cast away their Cords from us. But he that sits in Heaven, laughs them to scorn, the Lord shall have them in derision.

And yet will I set my King upon his holy hill of Sion: Hee will bruise them with a rod of iron, and, Be wise therefore, and kille the Son, lest he be angry. *Psal. 2. 1, 2, 3.*

### Quære III.

*How can it consist with the Protestation in the second particular, Against all Popish Innovations within the Realm, &c. For to take up Armes in Case of Religion, against the supreme Power, is a plain Popish Jesuiticall Innovation taught and maintained by them in this last age.*

And in the third particular.

*For I vow and protest to maintain with my life, power and estate, according to the duty of my Allegiance, his Maiesties.*

1. Power.

2. Honour.

3. Estate.

*Now the Quære is, How can I maintain?*

**H**is Person, with my life, power and estate, if I swear, To assist an army of men, which he declares (as is thought, by many pious and judicious men) to be utter enemies to his life, honour and estate.

*Or how can I maintain?*

2. His Honour, when by the Oath I professe not onely in my heart and thought to curse him, contrary to the word of God. *Ecclef. 10. 20. Exod. 22. 28.* but openly with my mouth to blaspheme him, and in effect say, (which is *Nesandum*) He is an utter enemy of Gods true Religion, a violator of all sacred Vowes, Oaths, Bonds and Covenants. And shall I yet say, I maintain his honour? Am I thus presumptuous to judge him, and not afraid to speak evill of Dignities, and yet maintain his Honour, or the Protestant Religion? Did *Cham* honour his father, when he discovered his nakednesse? And doe

### Concerning the late OATH.

doe they honor their father that cover and extinguish his vertues and glory, and cast aspersions of disgrace and calumny upon him? Would such Honour be taken of the Father from his children? of the servant from his master? Go and offer that honour to thy Father, thy Master, thy Governour, and see if hee will take it at thy hands. Mal. 1. 6. 8.

*Or how can I maintain?*

3. His *Estate*, when I take part with them that withhold, and withdraw it from him: 2. That put him to such an exhauling and consuming charge by maintaining an Army to guard and protect his Person and his Subjects.

Nor will the after Limitation serve to heal the breach of the Oath, by saying, It was not to be extended to the maintenance of any Form or Worship, Discipline or Government of the Church of England) for first all the ordained Ministers have subscribed and sworn to all the Doctrine of the Church, &c. and cannot be absolved from any lawfull Oath by any power whatsoever.

4. Though it should not be extended to Church government, yet it will reach to the Civill Supremacy and power of the sword, which it avoucheth to be only in the King, and not in any Subjects whatsoever.

### Quære III.

*How can it consist with its own*

Introduction, *id est*. That there hath been and now is a Popish and Traiterous Plot for the subversion of the true Religion.

First. *How can I believe it, and beleve the Kings Protestation to the contrary.* Secondly, *And how can I honour the King, and not beleve him?* Thirdly, *How can I call it a Popish Army, when the better and greater part by far are Protestants, and against all Popish Plots.*

*And Expression,*

I N declaring my sorrow for my sins past, and purpose to amend, if in the very Oath I commit greater sins of Disobedience, perjury, and blasphemy then I repented of; if the Repentance it self be a mockery, a sin, and a Transgression, its  
a Re-



## Conscience Resolved

2. Repentance to be repented of; and if the light which is in me be darknesse, how great is that darknesse? if the Repentance it self include a Transgression, how great is that Transgression?

2. How is it in order to the securing of our Protestant Religion? When as it is clear by that which is above said, it is directly contrary to the Doctrine of our Church? which clearly assents the Kings Supremacy over all persons, in all Causes, and plainly denies any power of Armes to be used by Subjects against the King under colour of Religion. Besides, what our Lord answered for himself, *Luk, 12.* we his servants may follow him to the like offers. *Quis constituit me divisorem super vos?* when one desired him to speak to his Brother to divide the inheritance, he answered, *Man, who hath made me a divider or judge over you?* if any speak to us to take up Armes. *Quare,* Who hath made me a Judge over my Sovereigne? When he hath protested by all that is sacred, *That he will defend the true Protestant Religion, and Liberty of the Subject, &c.* Who hath made me a judge over his heart? to sit in Gods Tribunal? or who hath made me a divider betwixt the King and his two Houses of Parliament? or who hath made me a Defender of the faith? by any power coercive, or force of Sword? Am I not rather excluded from it by our Saviour? *He that taketh the sword, shall perish by the sword.*

¶ How can it consist with former Oaths, Viz.

To maintain the Kings Person, honor and estate, and all and every person (in order to the Protestation) in whatsoever they shall doe in pursuance of the same. And yet assist to the utmost of my power, First, Those that hazard his Person, honor and Estates, 2. those that go contrary to the Doctrine of the Church of England (in taking up Armes against the King, under colour of Religion) in all that they shall doe in pursuance of the same. What if I should be required to kill my own father naturall, civill, or spirituall, my Sovereigne, my Parents, my Pastours, if they shall oppose their force by word or deed, and maintain the Kings Cause against them; and all this may be encluded (in pursuance of the same) and we have cause to fear

Concerning the late OATH.

it is so intended, or may be on occasion extended, when it is taken by some (I fear) for good doctrine, *That every man may consecrate his hand, and fall upon his brother, if he judge him an Idolater.* And that the tribe of Levi by that severe execution, did expiate their stain of the Fathers Transgression, in their bloody excision of the *Sechemites* circumcision. Perhaps the comparison holds in part in their furious zeal, of *Simeon and Levi*, who under an hypocritical pretext of Religion, and Circumcision, wrought the utter destruction and excision of the *Sechemites*. Which made *Jacob* complain, *You have troubled me, and made me to stink among, &c.* Gen. 49. 5. *Simon and Levi*, Brethren in evill. *O my Soul, come not thou into their (Conn-sell) id est Secret, and into their Assembly, my honour, be not united.* Cursed be their anger, for it was fierce, and their wrath, for it was cruell. *I will divide them in Jacob, and scatter them in Israel.*

*Woe to them that draw iniquity with Cords of Vanity, and Sin, as it were with Cart-ropes.* Iai. 5. 18, 28.

*Chrysostome.* As children pulling a rotten Rope at both ends, contrary-ways, at last it breakes, and both fall and break their heads and legges. So in a doubtfull Twisted Oath, rotten and unsound, when contrary parts pull severall wayes, or when Conscience holds one way, and worldly affection pulls another way; The Cord or Oath breaks, and both sides fall into a Gulf of perdition. The one by provoking the Oath, the other by breaking the Oath.

Conscience falls one way, and breakes his peace. World pulls and falls another way, and breaks his credit.

*The Spirit of a man would sustain his infirmities, but a wounded Spirit who can bear.* Prov. 18. 14.

Hear Saint *Chrysostomes* suit and request to his flock. *This I now ask, and will never leave asking, That whensoever any is about to swear, Let's take John Baptists head, and with loud cries shew it, and cry out against Oaths, and imagine you heard that tongue yet speaking as the voice of a Cryer. Hate and abhor an Oath my Murderer; For what my reproof could not effect,*

### Conscience Resolved, &c.

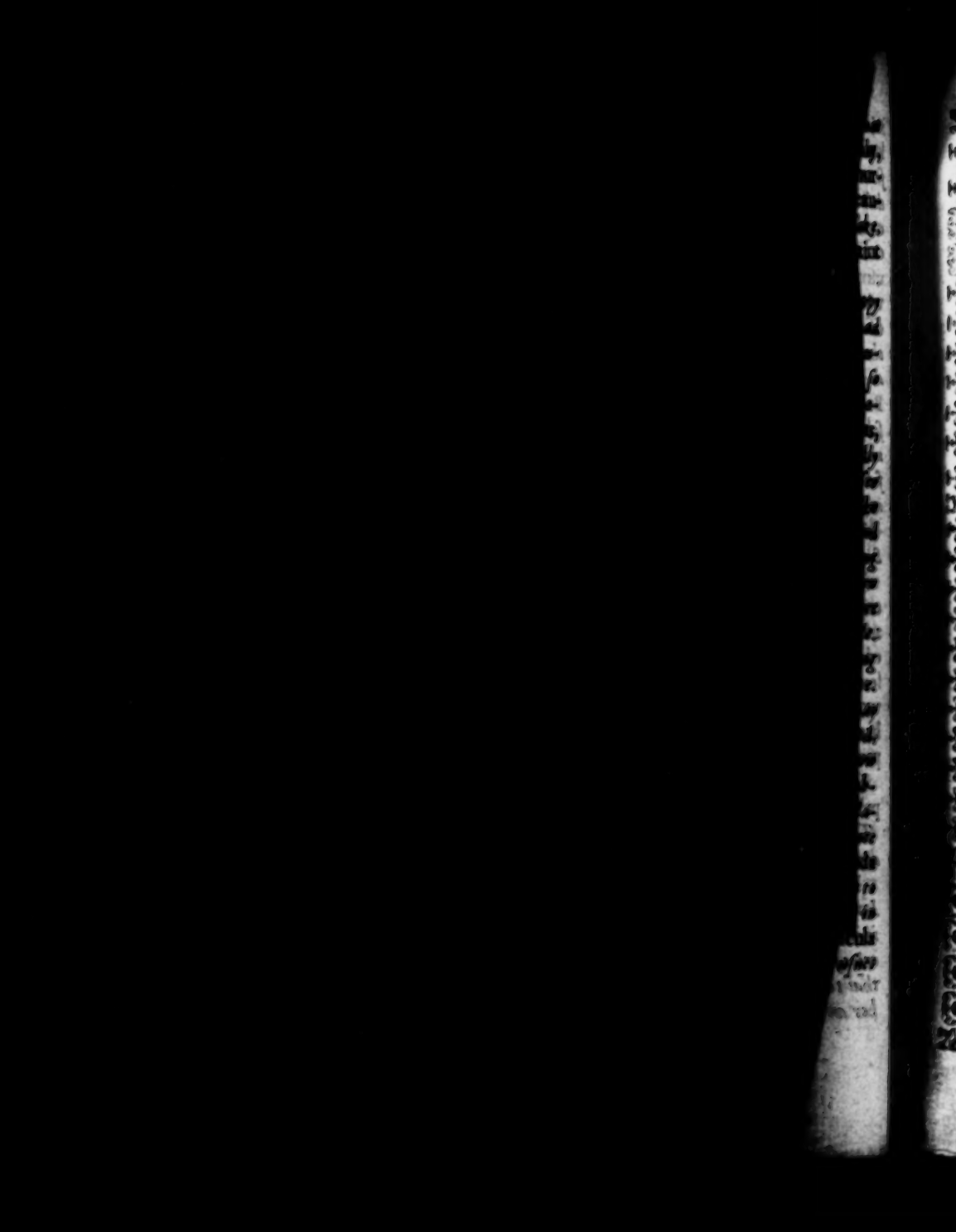
felt an Oath did, And what a Tyrants fury could not doe, this necessity of Perjury effected. Hee that once heard him gladly, and did many things, and revered his Sanctity, now murdered him cruelly, and that by vertue of an Oath, for two causes, First For his Oaths sake. Secondly, For Companies sake. And est, in pursuance of his Oath, he cuts off the head of a Saint worth the whole world.

**N**ow let those who are already intangled with this unhappy Covenant, judge rightly of Herods Case, Whether it had not been much better to have violated his rash Oath, and confessed his folly in making it, before all that were present, then so bloodily to have kept it. Let them remember the Schoole Doctrine, No man can be so immur'd or inclosed betwixt two sins, but he may find the way out without a third. If it be a deadly crime to keep such an Oath, it can be no sin to break it. We see the Israelites found a way to evade their severe vow against the Benjamites, not to give them their daughters. Judg. 21. 21. and it is not laid to their charge. We read of the peoples delivering Jonathan out of Sauls hand, notwithstanding his fathers vow to put him to death. 1. Sam. 14. 45. And neither the people are blamed for so doing, nor Saul taxed for yeelding to the people. What need more be said, when we finde David himselfe repenting of his rash Oath, to destroy the household of Nabal the Carmelite. 1. Sam. 25. 34. How many Christians in the Primitive time may we read of, that having once abjured their Saviour, repented, and turned again and were crowned with Martyrdom. How many of later dayes, that notwithstanding they have once subscribed and sworn against the Protestant Doctrine, yet have lamented their inconstancy, and suffered death valiantly in defence of it! It is a most certain Rule, that in rash Oaths, poenitenda promissio, non perficienda præsumpcio: The promise ought to be repented of, presumption ought not to be executed. And in unjust and wicked ones, such as this Covenant, Injusta vincula rumpat iustitia. Unjust and unrighteous fetters, let Righteousnesse burst asunder.

F I N I S.

Oxford Printed for William Web. 1643.

the  
dly.  
nur-  
can-  
dy.  
aint  
phy  
bad  
con-  
a fo.  
Do-  
ins)  
dly.  
fo  
rto  
and  
ing  
row  
here  
de:  
ing  
ten  
way  
ed.  
ow  
b-  
la-  
we  
ide  
to  
so  
nla  
ore  
ar  
nd





6.

# V E R S E S

ON THE DEATH OF  
the Right Valiant

S<sup>r</sup> BEVILL GRENVILL,  
K N I G H T.

Who was flaine by the Rebells, on  
LANDSDOWN-hill neare Bath,  
July. 5. 1 6 4 3.

---

*Ant Spoliis ego jam raptis laudabor opimis,  
Aut Letho insigni. Virg. Æneid.*

---

Aug. 12 Printed, 1 6 4 3.





# TO THE MEMORY

of Sir BEVILL GRENVILL.

**I**T is not He. I'll not beleev mine Eye.  
 He that could never Feare, can never Dye.  
 Dust, Sweat, and Blood, mixt in that Face, conspire  
 To say 'tis GRENVILL. Trust 'em not. The Fire,  
 That warm'd his Brest, was Vestall, Star-born Light,  
 Flame, that no Ocean, Day that fear'd no Night.  
 It is not He. But weeping Truth say's, 'Tis:  
 That Corps of Glory can be None's but His,  
 So hovers Valour o're that Brow; so yet  
 (As, after Tempests, empty'd Clouds still Threat)  
 Terror leaps from those Eyes, and Rebels Run.  
 The Souldier lives still, though the Man be gone.  
 The Man! Courage said, More, But Honour, sitting  
 With Fame in Counsell, found it farre more fitting  
 The World should know him Mortall; that he Fought  
 On equall termes; that to the Field He brought

A 2

Nothing

Nothing Impenetrable, but his Mind;  
 Knew Danger and despis'd it: Since, we find,  
 Cowards, Secur'd, Act Valour. All else than  
 Speaking Him more, Death was to prove Him Man.

Then, when, as a Destroying Angell, sent  
 To Mow a Guilty Nation downe, He lent (Stand  
 Blow's like to Whirl-winds. LANDS-DOWN saw Him  
 Not with a Pike, but Thunder-bolt in's hand.  
 GRENVILL against an Army. He being one.  
 Cannon, Horse, Foot Himself. So Fixt, and grown  
 Vnto the Hill H' had Gain'd, and now made-good,  
 That like another Hill, or Rock He stood;  
 Fort to Himselfe and Vs; Stronger then all (Wall.  
 Cow'ids Love and Loose, Steep Mountaine, Wood, and  
 Whence His Sword Chas'd them once; His Blood do's  
 Sprinkling the Ground, and Hallowing the Hill; (Still,  
 Where, since Drops shed from such a Loyall Vein,  
 Rebellion ne're shall dare set Foot again.

T. M.

**I**S GRENVILL dead, or Valour? is it He  
 Hath left this World, or is it Loyalty?  
 Alas! both Dye with Him, both leave us; how?  
 Shall none survive but Traiterous Cowards now?

Good

Good Heav'ns forbid, by <sup>high</sup> them the knot's unt'y'd:  
Both by his Patterne Live, in his Person Dy'd.

R. G.

Could I report, Great GRENVILLE, or repeat  
Thy famous A&ions in thine owne stout Heate,  
Could I write as Thou fought'st, the World might see  
Perhaps some Picture of thy Deeds, and Thee.  
And, thus inspir'd from thy bold flame, my Verse  
At once would come forth rapture, and reherse.

But as those ravish't Prophets, who of old  
Sick of their God, and much too fraile to hold  
Their strong Inspirer, first felt trance, then spoke,  
And utterd Answers, which from Labours broke,  
Some meeting Things too high to be exprest,  
I find my selfe, whilest I describe, oppress'd.  
Thou dost at once possesse, and hinder; still  
Rise'st, and multipli'st betweene my Quill.  
Still bring'st new, various, Matter to my Dresse,  
Which still begins, and still shewes Endlesnesse.  
So *Homer* strove with his *Achilles*, who  
Should bravelier write, or who should bravelier doe.  
So what at first He meant an Ode, and Song,  
Swell'd to a Worke, and story ten yeares long.



And what at first was destin'd to one Shade,  
 Spred in the Writing, and prov'd *Iliade*.

Had'st Thou, like Others, fought by Rule, and Line,  
 Who call it valour Wisely to decline  
 Assaults, and Dangers, and maintaine that there  
 Can be no Fortitude, where is no Feare;  
 Had'st thou beleev'd that They, who doe ingage  
 Themselves beyond reliefe, fight not, but rage;  
 Or that, when men beyond a meane doe stray,  
 Their Furye's only valiant, nor They;  
 We on thy Temples now had planted Bayes,  
 And Thou had'st liv'd to heare and seele thy Prayse.  
 But Thou did'st scorne such Rules, and call'd'st such  
 Arts how to blemish, and desert a Cause. (Lawes,  
 Countedst those false, whom Others doe count wise,  
 And their discreet Feare, order'd Cowardice.  
 Farre above all cold precepts, which doe preach  
 Escapes, retreates, and fallings-back, and teach  
 Advantages of Time, and place, and thus  
 Learnedly make Men Pusillanimous,  
 Or at most valiant to a poynt, and all  
 Their Courage meerly Philosophicall,  
 Thou though'st it still Ignobler to retire  
 With flegme, and coldnesse, then to fall with fire.  
 Still call'd'st retreating, loosing of the Day,  
 Still thought'st that to be safe was to betray.

And

And where the Cause requir'd it, not to dye,  
 That 'twas as great a basenesse, as to flye.  
 Thus meeting Dangers in their sternest shape,  
 Thy Arts were still t' encounter, not to scape.  
 Still reckoned't it a Souldiers Staine, and blot,  
 To be secure, not by his sword, but Plot.

Methinkes I see Thee shaking thy bold speare  
 Against a numerous Host, without their feare  
 Who did beset Thee, and the spacious plaine  
 Before Thee strow'd with Slaine falne on thy slaine.  
 Whil't all our other Troopes, discharg'd from fight,  
 Wonder'd to see the Warre turn'd to a sight,  
 Where one encounter'd many, and delcrid  
 A Siege on theirs, a Duell on our Side.

Great Soule! who didst contract the Ba ttle to  
 Thy Solitary selfe; and there did't doe  
 Things, which made all our other Forces be  
 Idle spectators of their Victory,  
 While't safer by thy Side, then at their home,  
 Their businesse was to see, and overcome.

O what a Terrour issued from thy Lookes,  
 Which fought as well as Thou, and Prisoners tooke  
 By th' eye, as by the Hand; which but beheld  
 Made the first Skirmish, and at distance quell'd;  
 Thy unarm'd face shew'd dreadfull as our Lances,  
 The foe felt new Artilleries from thy Glances,

Which

Which still, like Native Engines, from Thee flew,  
And at once routed, chas'd, and overthrew.

Thus, then, secur'd by thy Great selfe, at once  
To us a Bulwarke, to thy selfe a Sconce,  
As in a Circle 'bout Thee drawne by the charmes  
Of thine owne Courage, which did arme thy Armes,  
How didst thou dare the numerous Foe? still mock  
Their furious Onsets with a shock for shock?  
Still 'gainst their Iron Men, and men of Steele,  
Like One enchanted all parts but the Heele,  
( If We may credit what some doe report )  
Did'st hold fight from thy selfe, as from a Fort;  
Impregnable, untoucht? still did'st repaire  
The Faintings of those who about Thee were?  
Still did'st recruite our Losses? We did see  
New Squadrons, as some sell, still raised from Thee;  
Whose Valour ran supplies, and We from thence  
Saw Thee new Troopes, new Regiments dispence,  
Still unexhausted. We can now unfold  
Th' ambiguous rumour, and report, which told,  
And spoke of our Increase it'h West, that there,  
Two Campes, two Armies for us did appeare.  
The *Cornishmen* made One, the Other Fame,  
Which reckon'd Thee Stout *Grenville*, and thy Name,  
Still as our other Campe, from whence We drew  
Fresh Legions still, and thus from handfulls grew.

Here,

Here, some would chide thy Valour, whose bold Heate  
 Ioyne'd thine owne to the Enemies defeat;  
 And say 'twas rashnesse in Thee to expose  
 Thy selfe a Pikeman against Horsemen Foes;  
 As if to fall had beene thy plor, and ayme,  
 And Thou had'st some Ambition to be slaine.

'Tis true, indeed, our Conquest had been more,  
 Had'st Thou live'd to behold it, with the Store  
 Of Worthies who escap'd; Since, loosing Thee,  
 We did not Winne, but change a Victory.  
 Yet if to Dye with Honour be a Grace,  
 If to fall, and to consecrate the place  
 On which Thou felle'st, and make it sacred Ground  
 To all those who survive'd Thee, and stood round,  
 Be Nobler then to live; Those Bookes, which tell  
 Of ancient *Hero's*, who devoted fell,  
 And yeelding up their stout, and Warlike Ghosts,  
 With their brave ruine did preserve their Hosts,  
 Will alwayes be thy Chronicle; whom Death  
 Snatcht like a *Decius* hence; whose hallowed breath  
 Flew from Thee like an Offering; who dyed'st twice,  
 Our Souldier once, and once our Sacrifice.

I. M.

B

Not

**N**ot to be wrought by Malice, Gaine, or Pride,  
 To a Compliance with the Thriving Side;  
 Not to take Armes for love of Change, or Spight,  
 But only to maintaine Afflicted Right;  
 Not to dye vainely in pursuit of Fame,  
 Perversely seeking after Voyce and Name;  
 Is to Resolve, Fight, Dye, as Martyrs doe:  
 And thus did He, Souldier, and Martyr too.

He might (like some Reserved Men of State,  
 Who looke not to the Cause, but to its Fate)  
 Have stood aloof, engag'd on Neither Side,  
 Prepar'd at last to strike-in with the Tyde.  
 But well-weighd Reason told him, that when Law  
 Either is Renounc'd, or Misapply'd by th' awe  
 Of false-nam'd Common-wealths men; when the Right  
 Of King, and Subject, is suppress'd by Might;  
 When all Religion either is Refus'd  
 As meere Pretence, or meerly, as That, us'd;  
 When thus the Fury of Ambition swells,  
 Who is not Active, Modestly Rebells.  
 Whence, in a just esteeme, to Church and Crowne  
 He offred All, and nothing thought His owne.  
 This thrust Him into Action, Whole, and Free;  
 Knowing no Interest, but Loyalty;  
 Not loving Arms as Arms, or Strife for Strife;  
 Nor Wastfull, nor yet Sparing of his Life;



A great Exa<sup>ct</sup>or of Himselfe, and then  
 By faire Commands no lesse of Other men;  
 Courage, and Iudgement had their equall part,  
 Counsell was added to a Generous Heart;  
 Affaires were justly tim'd, nor did He catch  
 At an Affected Fame of Quick Dispatch;  
 Things were Prepar'd, Debated, and then Done,  
 Nor rashly Brooke, nor vainely Over-spunne;  
 False Periods no where by Designe were made,  
 As are by those, who make the Warre their Trade;  
 The Building still was suited to the Ground,  
 Whence every Action issu'd Full and Round.  
 We know who blind their Men with specious Lyes,  
 With Revelations, and with Prophecyes,  
 Who promise Two things to obtaine a Third,  
 And are themselves by the like Motives stirr'd:  
 By no such Engines He His Souldiers drawes;  
 He knew no Arts, but Courage and the Cause;  
 With these he brought them on, as well train'd men,  
 And with these too he brought them off again.

I should, I know, track Him through all the Course  
 Of his great Actions, shew their Worth and Force:  
 But, although all are Handsome, yet we cast  
 A more intentive Eye still on the last.

When now th' Incens'd Rebell proudly came  
 Downe, like a Torrent without Bank, or Damm;

When Underserv'd Successeurg'd on their force,  
 That Thunder must come downe to stop their Course,  
 Or *Grenville* must step in; Then *Grenville* stood,  
 And with Himselfe oppos'd, and checkt the Flood.  
 Conquest, or Death, was all His Thought. So fire  
 Either Ocomes, or doth it selfe expire.  
 His Courage work't like Flames, cast heate about,  
 Here, there, on this, on that side; None gave out;  
 Not any Pike in that Renowned Stand  
 But tooke new force from His Inspired Hand;  
 Souldier encourag'd Souldier, Man urg'd Man,  
 And Heurg'd All: so much Example can.  
 Hurt upon Hurt, Wound upon Wound did call,  
 He was the But, the Mark, the Ayme of All:  
 His Soule this while retir'd from Cell to Cell,  
 At last flew up from all, and then He fell.  
 But the Devoted Stand, enraged more  
 From that his Fate, ply'd hotter then before,  
 And Proud to fall with Him, sworn not to yield;  
 Each sought an Honour'd Grave, and gain'd the Field.  
 Thus, He being fall'n, his Action fought anew;  
 And the Dead conquer'd, whiles the Living flew.  
 This was not Natures Courage; nor that thing  
 We Valour call, which Time and Reason bring;  
 But a Diviner Fury, Eierce, and High,  
 Valour transported into Ecstasie,.

Which

Which Angells, looking on Vs from above,  
 Vse to conveigh into the Soules they love.  
 You now that boast the Spirit, and its sway,  
 Shew Vs his Second, and wee'll give the Day.  
 We know your Politique Axiom --- Lurk, or Fly.  
 Ye cannot Conquer, cause ye dare not Dye.  
 And though you thanke God, that you lost none there,  
 Because Th' were such, who Liv'd not when they were;  
 Yet your great Generall (who doth Rise and Fall,  
 As his Successes doe; whom you dare call,  
 As fame unto you doth Reports dispense,  
 Either a Traitor, or His Excellence)  
 How e'r he raignes now by unheard of Lawes,  
 Could wish His Fate together with His Cause. (Fame,  
 And Thou (Blest Soule) whose Cleare Compacted  
 As Amber Bodies Keeps, preserves thy Name,  
 Whose Life affords what doth content Both Eyes,  
 Glory for People, Substance for the Wife;  
 Goe laden up with Spoyles, possesse That Seate  
 To which the Valiant, when th' have Done, retreat:  
 And when Thou seest an happy Period sent  
 To these Distractions, and the Storme quite spent,  
 Look downe, and say: I have my share in All,  
 Much Good grew from my Life, Much from my Fall.

W. C.

B 3.

What

**W**Hat We have Lost in Thee, We need not write,  
 Thine Enemies will doo't; and in meere Spite  
 Commend Thy Valour, that the World may know,  
 In *Grenvill's* Fall, the Greatnesse of Our Blow:  
 Let them alone to give Thee thy whole Due;  
 We only need Beleeve They can speake True.  
 Nor is it fit we should with Teares lament  
 That Blood thy Selfe thought' it honourably spent,  
 And scorned' it at their Almest to draw a Breath,  
 From whose Guilt nothing's Noble but a Death;  
 Lets rather Weep for them, by whom 'twas Spilt,  
 Whose Best of Courage was but worst of Guilt;  
 Who had been Cowards had they Got the Day,  
 And shew'd Best Spirits when they Ran away:  
 Those pittied things yeild matter for a Teare:  
 But Thy great Worth moves in a higher Spheare.  
 He only Mournes That right, that Fights like Thee,  
 And a fierce Charge is a good Elegie.  
 Brave Soule! me thinks I see how thou did'st stand  
 Directing Victory to the Right Hand,  
 How Thou did'st set Her in againe, that Day,  
 Who, but for Thee, had almost lost her Way.  
 That little spark (dropt from Eternity)  
 Dilated by its selfe, and Loyalty.  
 How it Forgat its Bounds, the narrow Span  
 Of Flesh and Blood that measures out a man;

And

And stoutly durst adventure to oppose  
 Thy Equall Selfe against whole Troops of Foes !  
 May Honour Dwell upon thy Tomb, and keep  
 Thy Glories waking, while thy Dust doth sleepe  
 And may that fatt'ned Turfe, whence Pregnant Fame  
 Yet Brooding Hovers to keep warme the same,  
 Grow fruitfull from thy Blood, untill it bring  
 A Flower, from whence a second ~~Star~~ may Spring.

W. B.

**T**HOU Name of Valour! Heire of all that Worth,  
 Which Fates with constant Bounty have pow'r'd  
 On Grenvill's honour'd Race! In whom did dye (forth  
 More then their Army, more then Victory!  
 Could recompence, which to that gallant Stand  
 We owe, from mine hatchet by thy brave Hands  
 O I could curse the villaines odds! For when  
 We hazard, Gold, They, but the drosse of men.  
 Bate me the price of sinne, the Citty-pay,  
 And what they steale, in order to obey  
 The Houses Vote, more then one Regiment  
 Ple name, wherein notten are worth what's spent  
 Barely in feeding muskets, wee've oft lost  
 Powder, to kill such Rogues doth not quit cost.  
 And



And yet 'tis nobly fought, since conscience  
 Alone begets those flames, not any sense  
 Of Triumph; for what honour i't to tell  
 That here a Sergeant-Major-Cobler fell,  
 There a Mechanick-Colonell dropt downe,  
 Not fit to serve in any honest Towne.  
 Our Conquest is unpleasant, we must grieve;  
 And with the punish'd Rebels did still live,  
 Reserv'd for more ignoble fall, Since here  
 Iustice (though sacred name) was bought too deare.  
 Sad Victory! the Frontlesse faction now  
 Thanke, yet not mock God for their overthrow.  
 Since gladly they would sacrifice a flood  
 Out of the Commons veines, for this one blood.  
 A thousand lives, and thousand Soules to boot  
 They'l give; it costs them nought, let th' fooles looke  
 Guilty and wretched Commons! tell me, why (too't.  
 Only in order to your misery  
 You will be perjur'd Rebels? whence doth flow  
 This frantick pleasure, from your sinne, or woe?  
 Did you improve your safety, did your ground,  
 Like your deceivers malice, being drown'd  
 In blood; more fruitfull grow, you then did sell  
 Your Soules for something, but to purchase Hell  
 With poverty, and dangers, that you may  
 Be sooner dead, yet whil'st you live, a prey,

Is so rare Phrensic, that you only can  
 Be thought to differ in the shape of man  
 From wildest beasts. But you are forc't to fight,  
 You love your King, and wish He had His Right;  
 Yet aw'd take armes against him, money still  
 Contribute, Traitors are against your will.  
 Unworthy, vaine excuse! why should you feare  
 Those few seducers? Terrible they were  
 By your abused Strength, if you withdraw  
 Your Aydes, they fall, to the long injur'd Law  
 Iust Sacrifices, should they carry hence  
 Your wealth, they'd leave behind your innocence,  
 Leave you, return'd to Duty, and to Peace;  
 Hating these certaine Pledges of increase.

D. D.

**T**He Villaines now are ripe, let's pay our Vow,  
 See *Grenvills* blood stands texted on their brow!  
 If their course Veynes an Ocean should disburse  
 'T would not appease, because the more the worse;  
 Behold great *Bartue*, *Stuart*, *Compton*, now,  
 Sage *Pierpont*, and fresh bleeding *Cavendish* too!  
 Names that e're long shall strike this perjur'd Crowd,  
 And shoot down Vengeance from that Bow ith' Clowd,  
 Which shall consume these weeds that Truth may grow,  
*Grenvill* hath pawnd his blood it shall be so.

C 2

Great

Great valiant Saint! Loving and lov'd agen,  
 ( For he that conquers Feare may conquer Men )  
 Thy choyce was just and early, not adjourn'd  
 'Till the great scale at *Keinton* field was turn'd:  
 See, *GRENVILL's* up ( the mighty *Cornish* cries )  
 Which ( like a Beacon fir'd ) made them All rife,  
 Thus rouz'd, thou arm'd their infide day by day,  
 Dealt flame and spirit to them as their pay,  
 Clear'd and advanc'd their blood, cast them a new,  
 'Till in an instant they stout Gyants grew,  
 Then led by Thee, they made vast *Devon* quake,  
 So as loose *Stamford* frighted left the stake,  
 Whose Fort, Ditch, Bulwarke, did but raise thy heart,  
 Valour no more is broke then made by Art;  
 Nay when ( thy Powder gone, compell'd to cease )  
 That thou must bleed, or yeeld to what should please  
 The two new families of *Parliament*;  
 Though Ammunition, Courage was not spent,  
 Then, then thy Steele made them out-run their wheelles,  
 Leave All, and take nought with them but their heeles;  
 Thus *Bodmin*, *Stratton* felt thy influence,  
 Great *BEVILL's* Sword return'd not empty thence.  
 But when the Rowt ( as th'hill it selfe ) came down  
 He grasp'd a speare and underpropt the Crowne,  
 Plac'd like the flaming *Cherubim*, laid about,  
 Stood Guardian there to keep th' Apostates out,  
 Rear'd up like *Sampson*, took firm hold o'th' Beame,  
 Then pull'd all downe, Himselfe, the *House* and Them;  
 His bleeding corps then on the Mount He hurl'd,  
 And fought it out with them in th' other World,  
 Till they gave off; letting their Matches burne  
 To light his conquering Ashes to his Urne.

Had

Had thy *Goaulphin* staid to help us here,  
 His Pen had now took measure of thy speare,  
 'T had made thee Emperour of the *West* and All,  
 We blind with teares, see nothing but thy fall,  
 Which now doth bleed again, and doubly pierce,  
 To loose both *Grenvills* sword, and *Sydneys* verse.

*Cornwall* (that glorious Dukedome) hence shall be  
 Ador'd, Eternall by Prince CHARLES and Thee,  
 Let their cheap Legions live (unfit to dye)  
 Who like their weapons strike they know not why,  
 Give our just Swords more satisfying dust,  
 Thread all the bold Committee at one thrust,  
 Scatter the Plor, till all the ill-built frame  
 Fall downe as tribute to Great *Bavill's* Name,  
 That Name (which shames Their malice and our wit)  
 Shall last as long as They conspir'd to sit.

I. B.

THEy, that give Thanks for Overthrowes, had ne're  
 Fairer Pretence to God, then they had here.  
 Mark't you not 'midst our latter Triumphs one  
 Intruding Sigh? Heard you not one sad Groane?  
 'Twas for the valiant *Grenville*: which one Crosse  
 Allayd our Victory, 'and made it Losse.  
*Grenville*, whose very Name the Rebells found  
 Dealing Revenge, and Death in every wound.

C 3

While

While in the fierce Assault, they did not know,  
 Whether they should wish Thee alive, or no,  
 How many trembling Ghosts did we enlarge  
 To cry Thee mercy in the second Charge?  
 When the enraged *Cornish*, fierce upon  
 Revenge of Thee, cry'd *Grenville*, and kill'd on,  
 Treasure of Valour! in thy bold Designs  
 That Country glories more, then in her Mines.

Thus fell the mighty *Scava*, while the *Foe*  
 Trembled, and fear'd the very Overthrow.  
 Thus in the North our brave *New-castle* stood,  
 With more Success, with Honour no man cou'd.  
 Henceforth the Pike we doubly honour'd call,  
 From that One Triumph Fam'd, from this one Fall.

R. M.

**H** Allow my temples, let my thoughts be dress'd  
 In such attire as fits a Poet-Priest.  
 That no rude accent may profane thy name,  
 But all things be as spotless as thy Fame;  
 That Fame so great, that none but *Grenvilles* can  
 In the next age beleeve it of a Man.  
*Grenvill!* the Cornish *Peon* it shall be,  
 And only heard in Songs of Victory!

Th' Ezernall Theame of Poets! which shall give  
 Strength to their Lines, and make their Verses live.  
 Thou that in those black times dard'st to be good,  
 When Treason was best Virtue, when none coo'd  
 Be safe and honest; that almost alone  
 Dard'st love the King, when a whole Nation  
 Was growing one great Rebell; hast firme stood;  
 And gave the first great stop to th' growing flood;  
 Thou Destiny of our new-moulded State,  
 That first did'st make it's greatnesse shrink; whom Fate  
 Prepar'd to save a Kingdome; and did give  
 Thee Virtue great enough to make it live;  
 How will the Ghosts of those slaine Rebells shake  
 To see thy Shade? How *Brooke* and *Hampden* quake:  
 To find themselves not safe, and that to dye  
 Ha's only chang'd the Scene of Victory?  
 How will their Guilt grow double, when they see  
 Thy Shine; twice frighted by themselves and Thee:  
 That glorious Shine, that shewes the difference  
 Of dying truly in the *KINGS* defence;  
 That though both fall together, and the blood  
 Of Traitors and a Patriots make one flood,  
 They in the Shambles, He at the Altar dyes,  
 They fall as Beasts, and He a Sacrifice.  
 Now may those Rebells one Thankesgiving make:  
 And not Blaspheme, nor faire Truth Scandall take.

Thy



Thy death makes honest all their thick-skin'd Lyes,  
 From which alone all their feigned Victories  
 Grow truths. How had We lost in that one stroke  
 A Kingdome, had not such brave Vertue broke  
 From thy Example, as did strike a flame  
 Into thy Followers, great as was thy Name.  
 Yet, let them boast their Conquest if they can,  
 Wee' have gained an Army, and have lost a Man.  
 And let them preach Thee slaine, since from thy Death  
 A Thousand almost-*Grenvilles* gather breath.  
 So when the Sun's forc'd hence by Sable Night,  
*Myriads* of Starres spring from his falling light.

W. C.

**Y**et boast not Senate: know He could not Dy  
 Untill He had obtain'd the Victory.  
 Death waited for that minute, that her state  
 Might rise more glorious through his nobler Fate.  
 Me thinks I now behold Him as He stood  
 (Vndanted Spirit!) when that stately wood  
 Of Pikes march'd up: when like a Captaine Oake  
 He led that underwood, and tooke that stroke  
 Which should have feld the Grove: I see him stand  
 Dispensing Valour by his brave Command,

And

And braver Actions, the Souldiers swords  
 Being whetted both by's example and his words.  
 Would this were reall; but our fancies move  
 Nor guided by our knowledge, but our Love.

I could lament His Death, but that I know  
 All accents of our griefe are farre below  
 His vaster merit: rather let my Steele  
 Revenge his Death, and make their Conqueror feele  
 The anger of his Ghost; who slyly fledd  
 From *Grenville* but a Ghost, from *Grenville* dead.  
 Goe weep for Cowards; he who bravely Dyes  
 Ought to have Musique at His Obsequies.

You happy Soules who have the sacred trust  
 Of his dead ashes; see no Coward dust  
 Come nere his Vrne; 'tis fit his ashes lye  
 Where there is none but Valiant Company.  
 Neere *Lindsey's*, *Denby's*, or *Northampton's* side  
 (Who Conquer'd dying) raise his *Pyramide*:  
 Which may restore him to the World agen,  
 A Conqueror of Time as well as Men.

P. M.

**W**isdom directs, when Iustice dictates right,  
 And Courage (if provok't) then bids mee  
 Wisdome to *Grenville* said, thy *Cornish* friends (fight  
 Are mates enough to worke thy noble ends;  
 'Tis fit (spake Iustice) to defend a Crowne:  
 Then fight (said Courage) gaine thee brave renowne.  
 And Fame said to him, if thou die'st, then I  
 Will keep thy Everlasting memory;  
 Fate only frown'd, *Grenville* obeyes commands  
 While Fate contriv'd his Death by Rebels hands;  
 Yet Friends, and Country doe conserve his Name,  
 With Wisdome, Iustice, Fortitude, and Fame.

H. L.

**H**erick Martyr, whose immortall death  
 Inliven'd here, giving our State new breath;  
 (For when the Sun sets bloody in the West  
 The day still rises brighter in the East)  
 Who then stood'st Loyall, when the Generall ring  
 Was heard, *No Bishops*, while they meant no KING;  
 And only to wrong CHARLES, was to be true,  
 As to rob th' Church; is to pay God his due:  
 When Rebell Members' gainst their Head aym'd Darts,  
 Counting Him none, by Whom they all are Parts:

And

And rais'd a strange *Militia* for His ayd,  
 To make Him Great, when *Publick* ~~Kind~~ is payd.  
 How Constant wert Thou then, how Valiant still,  
 Dying as freely, as thy Foes could kill.  
 And did'st in Actions *Pompeys* words retrace,  
*We needs must stand, we must not needs survive.*  
 Who like a Bullwarke, stopt the full Carreer  
 Of Men more Iron, then those Armes they wear;  
 And Bankt the Breaches of those Sons of Steele,  
*Achilles* like All-Proöfe, but in the Heele:  
 Offering Thy selfe a Resolv'd Sacrifice,  
 As sure to fall, as by thy Fall to Rise:  
 Seeming some Martiall Deity to thy Foe,  
 'Cause they had feare enough to make Thee so.  
 They that fled stronger then Thou took'st the Field,  
 Worse Cowards when they Fight, then when they Yeild:  
 Like the *French* Hare-Knights at each shot they start;  
 Or *Cesars* ominous Ramme, which had no Heart.  
 But this State-Champion, Triumph't in his Fall,  
 And when he was most Conquerd, Conquerd All:  
 As lofty Castles, when they sinke, dilate  
 The Ruine round about, and scatter Fate.

H. B.

The



## THE CLOSE.

**T**HUS slaine thy Valiant Ancestor did lye,  
 When His One Barke a Navy did defie;  
 When now encompass'd round, He Victor stood,  
 And bath'd His Pinnacle in his Conquering Blood;  
 Till all His Purple Current dry'd, and spent,  
 He fell, and made the Waves his Monument.

Where shall th' next famous *Grenvills* Ashes stand?  
 Thy Grandfiere fills the Seas, and Thou the Land.

M. LL.

---

**FINIS.**


---

AN  
EXAMINATION 7  
OF THE  
OBSERVATIONS  
Upon His M A J E S T I E S  
A N S W E R S.

Wherein the absurdities of the OBSERVATORS  
Positions, and Inferences are discovered.

---

-----*Nunquámne reponam  
Vexatus toties rauci Theseide Codri?*

Juvenal. Sat. I.

---



---

*Aug: 14 Oxon. 1643*

Printed in the Yeare of our LORD. M. DC. XLIII.







AN  
EXAMINATION  
OF THE  
OBSERVATIONS  
*Upon his MAJESTIES*  
ANSWERS.



WE shall for methods sake, first take a generall examination of the Observators chiefest Positions, and their supposed properties: then fall to a stricter examination of them, upon a particular survey of the whole discourse: not omitting the least argument materially urged by him; which we purpose to discusse in that order, the nature of the thing examined and examination doth prompt us to; not limiting our selfe to any particular government, but looking upon all in their efficientes and ends: descending to particulars only and as often as the Observer goeth before us: The principall subject of his discourse is, *That power is originally inherent in the people, pag. 1. and transferred by them alwayes upon certaine limitations and conditions of reentry, pag. 4, 5.* he taketh this admitted and then urgeth the following properties incident to the people.

*The people more noble than the King, pag. 3.*

He proveth this by two reasons.

1. From the end. *The King is for the people instituted, not the people for the King. pag. 3.*

2. From the cause. *Quod facit tale est magis tale, pag. 1.*

*The King is singulis major, universis minor, pag. 2, 44.*

*What Parliaments be, and the prayes of them, pag. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10.*

*Hothams resisting the Kings entrance into Hull is justified, pag. 25, 26, 27, 28, 29, 30, 31.*

These opinions are maintained, saving that of the Parliament and *Hothams* act by Cardinall Bellarmine, with all the reasons used by the Observator. *L. 1. de pont. c. 7. et de Clericis c. 28.* and Theologically answered by our late Brittish Solomon of happy memory; the first that I observed of English Protestants that seemeth to favour this opinion, is the Gentleman who delivered upon the Earle of *Straffords* tryal these words, *If a King by the right of a Conquerour gives laws to the people, shall not the people by the same reason be restored to the right of the conquered, to recover their liberty if they can*: if indefinitely meant for all people; if by conquered is meant the people, it seemeth to me that he supposeth the originall of all governments to proceed from the people.

The Observators arguments pretend to be drawne from the fundamentals of nature, which shall be discussed in their proper places, a Christian Writer in a businesse of this weight, should haue had his recourse to Scripture, and measured nature by it, which is the true Lydian stone, to distinguish spurious from genuine principles of nature, the sacred booke is copious and evident in this matter, but because not urged by the Observator, I shall content my selfe to passe by the great advantage Scripture giveth me, and touch it only with that caution I limited my selfe in the ensuing Treatise.

*Power you say is originally inherent in the people.*

2.  
4.  
6, 7,  
aged,  
Parlia-  
the  
is c  
mon  
Pro-  
man  
ards,  
ball  
con-  
cant  
fee-  
ne-  
om  
their  
this  
ea-  
in-  
red  
not  
by  
only  
e.  
You

2.  
4.  
6, 7,  
aged,  
Parlia-  
the  
is c  
mon  
Pro-  
man  
ards,  
ball  
con-  
cant  
fee-  
ne-  
om  
their  
this  
ea-  
in-  
red  
not  
by  
only  
e.  
You

2.  
4.  
6, 7,  
aged,  
Parlia-  
the  
is c  
mon  
Pro-  
man  
ards,  
ball  
con-  
cant  
fee-  
ne-  
om  
their  
this  
ea-  
in-  
red  
not  
by  
only  
e.  
You

of nature probably in morall actions, grew more corrupted in proceſſe of ages; witneſſeth the increaſe of lawes, occaſioned by the encreaſe of vice: After the Deluge, *Nimrod* put up the firſt Monarchy; the People had not the chiefe hand to elect him; but you reply, he was a Hunter of men, a Tyrant, an Inverter of Natures Inſtitutions. what Nature meant, or aſſented to, ſhall be examined in one conſideration of Inherent power, *De jure naturali*: that he was a Monarch and not elected by the People, fully ſatisfieth our preſent purpoſe: he is branded with Tyranny, not ſo properly for uſurpation of Sovereignty, but for the unnaturall and inordinate exerciſe of his Dominion; for he in whom Sovereignty is lawfully veſted, be it from People, or Patrimoniall and inheritable from his Anceſtours, by the unnaturall exerciſe of his power is ordinarily and properly ſtiled a Tyrant: the World being Peopled, ſeverall Dominions aroſe of ſeverall natures, one man ſometimes, and in ſome places ingroſſing Sovereignty, and ſome times the people: the paſſions of depraved Nature ſtill breaking out for their ſeeming beſt advantage: to run upon particulars is needleſſe, nor much to the purpoſe, examples of both natures are numerous; though queſtionleſſe unequall: the foure Monarchs, and the praſtice of the firſt age owne not their births to popular elections: examples parallell to theſe for antiquity, and ſame the continued voyce of Hiſtory aſſureth me cannot be found in any election made by the people: hence it is evident, that it cannot without much Immodesty or Ignorance be alleadged, that Power is originally inherent in the People, *de facto*, in reſpect of praſtice in the People, to make all Kings, and at all times.

Whether this power is originally inherent in the People *de jure* of right, falleth next to be examined: if this power is originally inherent in the people *de jure*, it is then ſo inherent in them *jure Divino*, by Divine right, naturally by the law

law of Nature, or *jure Gentium*, by the law of Nations; to averre the people intituled to this power by any Civill law; that is, by the law of any particular Nation, commeth not to the purpose: for your tenent is indefinite, not limited to any particular government, and endeavoured to be maintained by indefinite arguments: therefore if the people hath any right to this power we must finde it out in one of the three rights proposed by us, and we will here first enquire after this power in the Divine law.

God is donour of all Dominions witnesseth your selfe, *page 1.* therefore not the people. but you will say God and the people: to prove this, I finde not one argument drawne from Scripture in all your Observations, and if any text had the least colour of advantage for you, without doubt it had beene urged: and sacred History is most energeticall and too frequent in the mouth of conscious Heterodoxy, we shall to keepe closer to you, decline to examine your Observations according to the rule of Scripture, and keep our discourse to runne within the Channels of naturall Reason, touching only Divinity as we passe along, so far as it descendeth to communicate it selfe with reason: if you must needs therefore justle in man to share with God in the constitution of Royall esse, reason (reason and nature being the Idols of your discourse) forceth you to confesse, that God is either the mediate, people immediate; or the people mediate, God the immediate, or both immediately concur as immediate efficientes of principalities: no other sort of operation or influx can be assigned to efficient Causes, and reducible to the Observations advantage: if God is made to be mediate, people immediate efficientes, it followeth of necessity, that the people must either be a meer instrument, or a free Agent enabled by the first cause, to settle this power in whom they please; and that in an absolute or conditionall estate: a meere instrumentall Cause, I am assured you will deny the  
pro-



people to bee, for *Instrumentum non movet nisi motum*: and the effects of it, are properly and usually called the effect of the mover, I meane by mover, not the finall cause, but efficient or Agent, which indeed hath the most influence upon the effect, and whose quality still specificates and denominates accordingly this efficient, and not the instrument: he that killeth a man with a Sword, is called the man-slayer, not the Sword: a virtuous or vicious exploit is attributed to the man, not the sword wherewith he did it: to take God and people in this state, is to allow God to be the Well from whence doth flow principality, and the people the Conduit-pipe: and he that hath the least drop of Reason, will not averre the water to have its being from the Conduit-pipe, that conveyeth it: people in this notion have not the powers dreamed of by the Observations, either originall or inherent in them; nor can your *quod fecit tale, est magis tale* be applyed to them, that have not sufficiency fit to denominate them *tale*; we shall looke then upon the people as free Agents, enabled by God, the mediate or remoter Cause, with power by them grantable and transferrable upon whomsoever their publike voyce and consent electeth; this power is by them grantable absolutely, or conditionally; or both, if they may doe it both wayes; wee will for methods sake looke upon them in their first capacity; if they make an absolute grant, they are irrevocably concluded; neither is it of any purpose to urge, that the nature of the thing granted is incompatible with an absolute conveyance of it, this is to deny our supposition; neither doth the nature of the thing granted, gain-say an absoluteness of grant; for power ever lives and estates, is at most the thing conveyed, which was and may be absolutely and irrevocably given; a free man by the law of this Land, may by confessing himselfe a villaine in a Court of Record, bind himselfe and his heires to servitude and estate to the disposall of their Lord: a man *in jure* in the

the Romane Law, usually called the 'Civill law,' may subject himselfe and posterity to another man, over whom and fortunes he hath an absolute Dominion, *Gell. l. 11. c. 8.* and *Iustinian. Institut. de servis*; the Jewish Law hath an expresse testimony for this addition in 21. Chapter of *Exodus*, *verse 6.* his Master, speaking of Servant, he shall boare his eare through with an Awle; and he shall serve him for ever; the Logicke of these examples is evident; by the same reason, that one, so many that are *sui iuris*, may convey to one or more absolute dominion over themselves and posterity. And though I would admit unto you, that it is, *pag. 20. Vn-* *naturall for any Nation to give away its owne propriety in it selfe,* and yet this gift is both naturall and necessary to the being of all Societies and States; for if every man reserveth to himselfe the power given him by nature to resist violence and injury; though offered by a Magistrate, then every man would be a law to himselfe, to the extirpation of all Societies and civill Justice.

The inconveniency arising from the supposition of such absolute grant objected by the observator saileth to the ground, for conditionall as well as absolute translation of power is obnoxious to inconveniences, neither is it insisted so much by us, whether this power is ever or more usually granted; but whether rightfully grantable irrevocably, which no reasonable judgement will deny by the examples urged by us, drawn from the Constitutions of those three most considerable Common-wealths, neither is this absolute subjection, as the Observator falsely urgeth, contrary or dissonant to the Law of Nature: by the Law of Nature hee understandeth that which right reason assenteth unto, *pag. 44.* Naturall reason many times approveth and consenteth to this irrevocable conveyance: poverty sometimes, or inability to defend themselves by the strength of their owne Lawes, compelleth the people irrevocably to subject themselves to another po-

wer; and right reason assenteth to this grant, induced thereunto by these or the like exigences of State. *Campani* (said incomparable *Grotius*) *olim necessitate subacti, populo Romano se subiecerunt in hunc modum: populum Campanum urbemque Capuam agros, delubra Deum, Divina Humanaque in vestram dittonem P. C. dedimus*; here is an absolute conveyance over lives and fortunes by the people, without reservations or conditions: neither standeth this example single in History: Learned *Grotius* in his exquisite book *De Jure Belli & pacis* fol. 49. reckoneth many Conveyances of the same nature, which for brevity we passe over, referring the scrupulous, if any can be in a matter so evident, to the foresaid cited Author to be fully satisfied, and shall further view the superstructure of your discourse upon the foundation your selfe have laid: Admit Supremacie derived from the people, hence *Quod facis tale est magis tale*, The people more noble than the King, because he is for them, not they for him instituted. *Salus populi Suprema Lex*, and the Law of prerogative is subservient to this: the King, singulis inajor universis minor; the right of conquest cannot be pleaded to acquit Princes of that which is due to the people, as the authors and ends of all power; for meere force cannot alter the course of Nature, or frustrate the tenour of Law, and if it could, there were more reason why the people might iustifie force to regaine due Liberty, then the King might subvert the same. And this is all I finde in your Observations reducible to maintaine the principall subject of your observation: the residue being either matter of fact, admonitions or reprehensions, I shall not meddle with, being Heterogeneous to our present purpose, *Quod facit tale &c.* Wine maketh a man drunk, therefore Wine it selfe is more drunke than man: the inference holdeth not you see in causes by accident. *Sol & homo generant hominem*; therefore the Sunne is more man then the man generated; this I am assured you will confesse to bee a very bad consequence; so then the Maxime is not current in partiall efficiencies

ents; and the people are at most but partiall causes; for you allow God also a sharer of this Supremacie: but I will admit further unto you; Supremacie wholly derived from the people: the maxime is not true in all totall causes: *Adam* was the author or cause of sinne; God was the totall Author or cause of *Adam*, therefore God was more Author or Cause of sinne: your Religion will not allow this Logick; the axiome therefore holdeth not in totall free agents, and though I admit you the people to be whole cause of this power, yet I know you will say they are free Agents in conferring of it; and if you allow them that freedome, your Axiome you see is ill applyed. To come yet nearer unto you, a Servant giveth the Master the title of Master: Relatives as these are, are *Causa sibi invicem* doth it follow therefore that the servant is more Master, then he that is made master by him: the passage betwene *Valentinian* and his Souldiers recorded by *Sozom.* in his Ecclesiasticall History cleareth the point, *Ut me ad imperandum vobis eligeretis, in vestra situmerat potestate o milites; at postquam me elegistis, quod petitis in meo est arbitrio, non vestro; vobis tanquam subditis competit parere, mihi qua facienda sunt cogitare:* That I was chosen your Emperour lay in your power, Souldiers, but after I am so chosen by you, what you demand of me, lyeth now in mine, not your power; it befits you as subjects to obey, and me to consider what I am to doe. Your *Quod facis tale* in point of government holdeth true in him or them, whose power continually dependeth upon the will of him or them that gave it, not in them who have it transacted by one Act, bee it absolute or with certaine limitation. that this power is transactable is allowed by your selfe, and that absolutely, some thing is already proved; the conditionall relation of it we shall referre to be further examined, in the second member of the division of immediate efficientes, and here we will list the second propertie you annex to the subject of your discourse, this sup-

posed popular Supremacie. *The People more noble than the King, because he for them, not they for him is instituted:* that univversally taken, is apparently false: some Government is onely for the Governour, not the Governed erected; as that between the Master and Servant; whom the Master taketh for his own, not his Servants profit; and though the Servant gaineth by the service, yet his gain was neither the cause nor end of this dominion; not of that gained by conquest, the end and efficient of some Government are both the Governour and Governed; as that between the Husband and the Wife, whose subjection still referreth to her and her Husbands goods. So the *Campani* subjected themselves to *Rome* for their own safetie, and the *Roman* Honour and greatnesse; both you see proved the object of this Government; the Conquerour is the efficient and end of his Government; by his contract with the people to limit his power with certain caution over them, maketh them thereby a partiall end of his Supremacie; it is false then that all Kings are erected for the people, and not the people for them; but that you may perceive the weaknesse of your inference, I shall admit unto you, that all Kings are for the people, and not the people for them; doth it follow therefore, they are more noble than the King: tutorage is instituted for pupillage, not pupillage for it; is the pupill therefore more noble than the tutour that hath power over him; the tutour upon mis-usage of his power over the pupill I confesse is removed; but by a positive Law made by those above him; where that positive Law is, & by whom made, appeareth not in any considerable Monarch of the world. some but few and inconsiderable Antiquitie make mention of *Mezentius* in *Virgil* seemed to be of such conditionall powers.

*Ergo omnis furis surrexit Etruria iustus,  
Regem ad supplicium praesenti morte reposcant.*

This pretended Nobilitie we have quitted the people of  
by



by what is already said. Next your *Salus populi, suprema lex*, commeth to be discussed: if you mean by People a Commonwealth with all the parts of it, I allow you that *Salus populi suprema lex*, but if you understand by people the Subject *contra* distinguished from the King, if you take people for the Members without the Head of a Societic, your *Salus populi* is not *Suprema lex*: if you take Members apart, the worthier Member challengeth the first respect, and consequently the King, who is the Head of the Commonwealth, claimeth in reason the preheminence of the inferior Members: Art imitateth Nature; and if the Reason of Nature giveth it so, Reason of policie being grounded upon that of Nature cannot deny this prerogative: and so much concerning that adjunct. *Rex singulis maior, universis minor*: you understand *maior & minor* in respect of Supremacie; and by *universis, singulis simul sumptis*, all the Subjects, and the representation of them the Parliaments, for they you say are essentially the same, *pag. 5.* He can command *all singly, but all joynly can command him*. This of all your opinions carrieth most absurditie with it. The people you say give a power over them to the King, and yet reserve it to themselves. In the Oath of Supremacie you confesse the King supreme next under God; but by this you introduce an interposition of the people; the representative Bodie of the Kingdom the Parliament which is the Kingdom it selfe, so you terme it, *pag. 5.* do joynly and universally in most acts preface the King, with May it please your most Excellent Majestie, if it proceedeth from an inferiour to his superiour, he cannot choose but take it as a jeare, or at least a complement of ignorance: mistakes and ignorance are incompatible with that infallibilitie you deifie the Parliament with; the King in respect of the *universis*, all the Subjects, must of necessitie be considered as Head of them, or a subordinate Member. If a Head, Supremacie must be incident to it; the Head commandeth the



parts to obey; if a Member, He must obey them, to be cut off or left according to the Head, the *universes* Judgement: this is to meet more than halfe way with the Jesuits; let not your popular Kinglineffe stoop to a dishonourable league with the children of *Belial*. I shall not more enlarge my selfe to confute this absurditie, though I conceive this enough to any unprejudicated man. Another hath gone before me upon this subiect, who did very rationally discover the sillinesse, nay contradiction of this paradox. I shall passe over that of the holy Text, *Statusam supra me Samuel*, and urge some authoritie drawn from Heathens, to shame this opinion from a Christian Head; *Marcus Aurelius, Magistratus de privatis principes de magistratibus, Deum de principibus judicare, Hor. Regum timendorum in ipsos greges, & in ipsos reges imperium est Jovis.*

Σκεπτήσας βασιλεύς ὃ τι ξυῖς κῶδες ἔδωκεν, *Horn. Il. 1. Otanes in Herodotus, ἀρεσθύνει ποιεῖν τὰ βέλετα*, to do what he will, and not bound to give an account to any, *Dion Penseensis, ἐπιπύθον αὐτοπύθονον ὄντα*, So to governe that he is not accomptable to another, *Dion lib. 5. 3. αὐτοπύθονος καὶ αὐτοκράτορος, καὶ αὐτῆς καὶ τῶν ἄλλων πάντα τὴ δια βέλοισι ποιεῖ, καὶ πᾶσι δ' ὅσα αὐτὸν βέλοισι, μὴ ὑπὸ αὐτῷ*, He is free, having power over himselfe and Law, so what he pleaseth he doth; what displeaseth him he doth not; this indefiniteness of power few Kings at this day have; time and experience upon occasionall reasons of State bring Kings to descend to limit their power to certain rules agreed upon by themselves and people: and these rules have divers degrees of latitude, which the positive Lawes of many Countries do manifest and distinguish, but to whom the King is to yeild his accompt for breach of his Covenant, we shall touch hereafter; and here fall to discusse the last remarkable property your observation attributed to this supposed Ochlo-Supremacie. *The right of Conquest cannot be pleaded to acquit Princes of that which is due to the People as the Authors and ends*

of all power, for meer force cannot alter the course of nature, or frustrate the tenor of Law, and if it could there were more reason why the People might justifie force to regain due libertie, than the Prince might to subvert the same. People are not the sole end or Authours of this power, and if they were, the nature of the thing granted may be absolutely transferred by them, without expresse or tacit condition, as is fully proved already: then it followeth, the right of Conquest may be pleaded, to acquit Princes of that which is due, you mean to acknowledge the people the end and Author of Government, to acknowledge them the Authours of it, with power to cancell the Authoritie given when they please, to acknowledge a supremacie in the Prince derived from the People, and neverthelesse still to reside in the People: how then doth meer force alter the course of nature or frustrate the tenor of Law, the Law of Nature you intend, if a Prince gaineth a Principalitie from him upon whom it was absolutely conferred, suppose from People? the Conquerours Title standeth firme against all, but the rightfull Owner: and the People if they have a Title or interest in this power, more than seldome conclude them for ever: the examples we have already urged questionlesse force any impartiall Judgement to believe it. The most considerable Monarchies, (and the greatest Governments were Monarchies) the present or past age presenteth to us were begun and settled by Conquests; and that these Monarches descended to covenant with their Subjects to regulate their power by certain limitation desired and approved by the People, hath more of the Princes bountie than obligation in it, being a free donative bestowed upon the people, and if the Covenant in part or in all is infringed or broken by the King, what advantage the people hath by it, passeth my understanding to apprehend; a Title of re-entry cannot be reserved by them, from whom no estate passed; and if it did, this reservation must be

be expressed or implied; we have no expression of it urged by you, and we are assured you cannot produce any popular Charter with this expresse reservation; and if this is implied, this impliednesse you must discover unto us either by reason or authoritie: this Supremacie is of that indifferencie, that may be transferred conditionally or absolutely: and I demand of you whether a tacit condition is ever annexed naturally, (I mean by the Law of Nature to take off the Constitutions of municipall Lawes therein) to a businesse conveyable with such indifferencie; to affirme it destroyeth the nature of all absolute grants. The Jewes claimed themselves free from all Pagan Jurisdiction, and *Cesar* was their King by that right the sword did give him, if that right was not warrantable, the edicts grounded upon that right, might iustly be disobeyed by the Jewes: Christ preached obedience to them, for he paid the generall taxation imposed by *Cesar* upon the Jewes and others in the Roman dition, exhorted those to the same actuall obedience, who came with an intent to entrap him; where then is your frequent distinction? All lawfull Powers come from God, and are to be obeyed; unlawfull are not of God, and therefore not to be obeyed; this power is unlawfull I am assured you are ready to averre in most respects, in respect of title, and in respect of the thing enioyned, for a free Nation to pay a tribute, to part with their goods to a Pagan, to a stranger in Israel; yet though the thing commanded, though the title is by your own confession unlawfull, it is enioyned not onely not to be resisted, but unfainedly obeyed by the supreme Law-giver, and the last Expositour of it our blessed Saviour. The Christians of the first age sealed this obedience with their dearest blood, here then falleth your example of the *Generalissimo*, pag. 4. to be considered, his souldiers are exempted from his subiection, if he turneth the Canons upon his own people; I grant it, his Commission is derived

rived from the King, who giveth him power over his Souldiers, to destroy or punish them onely, and as often as they do transgresse positive edicts; but they are not his Souldiers or his Subiects in so large a manner as they are to their King, and if they were, the one is entituled to them by God, at least partially, the other wholly by man. Sir *Edward Cooke* a strong Champion for the English Libertie in his Institutions, l. 1. fol. 1. sayth, that the King holdeth the Lands he hath as King immediately from God, because he hath, saith he, no superiour but the Almighty. *Bracton* is of the same language, *Omnia quidem sub eo, ipse sub nullo nisi tantum deo: Omnis not singuli*, to take off your *singulis maior universis minor: and tantum sub deo*, spoken negatively, to exclude this eclipse, this interposition of the people. But of this sufficiently already is spoken. It cannot be objected to the Martyrs of the first age, that they could not resist the torture they were at the least seemingly willing to undergo. *Tertullian* in his Apologie telleth the Emperour, the Christians were more in number, and stronger, and able to defend themselves: his Scholar *Cyprian* is of the same Language, *Quamvis nimis & copiosus noster populus, non tamen adversus violentiam se ulciscitur*. *Lactantius* confirmeth him, lib. 5. and *August.* in many places of his *De Civitate Dei*. Of all other the passage between the *Theban* Legion is most considerable, and the Emperour *Maximian* they consisted of 6666 Souldiers, the Emperour sent unto them upon pain of death to commit formall idolatrie; they refused to obey his command, they were able enough to resist him and his power, they knew and confessed it, they laid their heads to the blocke, and lifted no hand against him: his command was unjust, was impious; by natures dictates they were to conserve themselves, yet they relinquished nature, yielded to die. Let us compare *Hothams* action to this primitive passage, the King would have entred the gates of *Hull*, a Town within his Dominion, *Hotham* being within,

the Kings allegiance shut the gates against him, resisting his entrance with armed men; *Hotham* conceived his entrance would put his life in jeopardy, and the Kingdomes safetie endangered; he conceived it probably not inevitably to follow thereupon; suppose the ruine of both had inevitably ensued; yet it is not so farre prest. The *Theban* example doth not warrant the resistance, they obeyed to the losse of life: this desire to enter the Town came from the Cavaliers and ill Councillours, not from the King himselfe. *Caesars* taxation was by his ministers assessed, collected, and probably invented. *Maximians* servants brought the command to the *Theban* Legion to commit idolatrie, they brought the punishment and executed it, and it was very probable they were the authours of both: yet no resistance made against the Emperours command, though delivered by his ministers; yet our King in person, and *vivâ voce* demanded entrance, and was resisted; and resistance of the Kings authoritie is to resist the King, as was declared by this present Parliameur, upon the Earle of *Strafford*s triall: you will object, the Emperour had a more absolute Dominion, than our King hath, over his Subjects persons and estates; I confesse it, the Emperours power was in most things illimited; the Kings limited by our municipall Lawes, obliged by a solemne Oath to keep them; and if he commandeth any thing opposite to these Lawes, we are not bound to obey this command; but we are not warranted by this Law to resist the King with force of Armes, if other Christians made a conscience actually to resist their Kings command even in things contrary to the Law of Nature and the divine Law, and those that concerned salvation, and can the conscience of our Christianitie allow us to raise Armes to resist the Kings commands, supposed by inferences to prove destructive to our positive Lawes? Our Law doth not warrant us, and if it did there is no warrant for that Law given by the supreme Law-giver.

But



But this resistance is approved by Parliament; by Parliament is meant by you the representative Bodie of the Lords and Commons, assembled by the Kings Authoritie. I denie this to be Parliament by the Constitution of this Kingdom without the concurrence of the King, and if it were, I deny that the greater part is conscious of this resistance; and if the greater part were, I deny an infallibilitie tied to them; and if they were infallible, I deny that they alone without the King are competent Judges, makers and declarers of Law; if they were, then they should be both parties and Judges, and disposers of that which belongeth to the King, *jure persona*, without his consent, himselte being neither there in person, nor represented by them or any of them, an opinion dissonant to reason or conscience, and the institution of nature for the Members to raise Armies against the Head. *Aesop* giveth us an example, and the effect of such War; and hereupon we will digresse a little to examine the definition and properties given by your Observations to the Parliament, which you define, *pag. 5.* to be the essence of the Kingdom, that's false, for a thing cannot be separated from its essence; the Kingdom and Parliament can. A thing hath no being when the essence is destroyed; the Kingdom hath its being when the Parliament is suppressed, dissolved, or not *in rerum natura*, as in the vacancie of a Parliament: the same numericall qualities that inhere in the Parliament do not inhere in the Kingdom, and so *de contra*: the Parliament may be sicke at the time the Kingdom is well, the Parliament may erre, when the Kingdom doth not: in the same manner, that generall Councils the representative Bodie of the militant Church may erre when the Church generall doth not. This representative Bodie is a select number of men intrusted for a greater, with a large Commission to treat and conclude for the trusters good: the trusters are men and subject to error, unlesse a supernaturall assistant spirit of infallibilitie is necessarily



necessarily pinned to their sleeves: that they are remoter than ordinary Courts from erring I allow you, but not absolutely free from it, as you averre, pag. 8. The praises you give to Parliaments swell up most of your Observations: and much are I confesse deservedly attributed. For mine own part, as I was borne under the *English* Government, so I conceive it without affectation the exquisitest I know of: and in these the Parliament shineth above other Constitutions, *ut inter ignes Luna minores*. Let a Parliament run within its own channell, if it breake the bankes it overwhelmes, it destroyeth publique Libertie, and looseth its being, and the end for which it was instituted. I love the fundamentall Libertie of this Kingdom, as well as the Observatour doth, but without dotage, as the Oblervator professeth to love monarchicall Government, pag. 41. Parliaments have done wrong, witnesseth the depofall of *Richard* the Second, therefore it is good Logicke to say they may do wrong. But you say, they were forced by *Henry* the Fourth his victorious Armie, p. 32. I say so too, then they may be forced, and force we know are of severall nature, I pray God the present be not conscious of it; I leave to the effect of every Parliament to elogize it selfe. Parliaments are of a soveraigne good, but as in naturall so in politickes, I believe, *Corruptio optimi est pessima*: and so much for Parliaments. We shall now reflect upon the next member of our division that falleth next in order to be discussed: that this Supremacie is grantable and granted by the people upon what condition and limitation best pleaseth them, they are so enabled by expresse or tacit causalitie of the first cause mediate and remoter God: if tacitly, it is an instinct contracted with them, and then it falleth properly to be discussed in the Law of Nature, which we shall consider in its due place; if expressly, either it is committed to writing, and so in the sacred Book, or else traditionally practis'd by all ages and confessed by all or most Nations: neither of these is pressed

or can be justly by you : hence we have clearly evinced, that the people by the divine Law cannot be the immediate efficient of this Supremacie, whether you will consider them as meer instruments or free agents enabled by God the mediate Cause to settle and convey this Principallitie upon whom and in what manner they please. Next we shall enquire, whether the people is the mediate, God the immediate Cause of this power ; if you so consider God and man, it followeth that the people worketh through God as a meer instrument or free agent receiving his authoritie from man. To averr either is hardly distinguished from blasphemie ; therefore we will pitch upon the last consideration of this Supremacie in the divine Law, and see whether God concurrerth as a partiall immediate cause with the people to produce and convey this power upon one or many, I shall admit unto you as your last refuge this mutuall and immediate concurrence, the people being but a partiall cause cannot in reason devert, as they did not alone invest this power, without the concurrence of God the sociall cause: unlesse you will say, the forfeiture and power of re-entrie to be onely reserved to the people or accruing to them by Survivorship: either of these portents of opinions madnesse it selfe will not own. Again, the Creatour and Creature cannot have the same numerically influence, and if it could, the effect still denominateth the worthier cause, therefore unlesse the people be held the worthier cause they cannot properly or justly be called the authour or cause of this Supremacie. Hence is undeniably inferred, that the people are not nor cannot be stiled properly and justly the Cause mediate or immediate of Principalities. God is the Donor of Aristocracie and Monarchie, *pag. 1.* but few lines after of the same *page* you retract that opinion ; disseize him of the title of Donor, holding God well repaid with the title of a Confirmer of Principalities :

— *Quo se mutantem Protea nodo.*

First, a Donor to give a being, then rob him of that, one-ly a Confirmer to give a well being at most; the confirmation of a Charter presupposeth a Charter: God is a free Agent, suppose he suspendeth or not at all confirmeth the popular conveyance, Is the conveyance void, or voidable? if void, then either the people giveth no being at all, or this being still floweth, and not otherwise from them at that instant that God confirmeth it: and if it must alwayes flow from them at the same instant that God confirmeth it, and not before, escapeth (I believe) any mans reason, to finde out. If voidable, then they give a being before God confirmeth it, and then popular election is supposable without divine concurrence; and if it be, the people prove efficient, and fall to be considered under one of the branches of efficientes discussed before, and that they have not there the least shadow to this pretended Sovereignty is already and clearly evinced. Whether Nature entitleth them to this Royallnesse resteth next to be examined, *Ignoratis terminis ignoratur scientia*; we shall therefore explain what we mean by the Law of Nature: what dominion ariseth by this Law of Nature, and in whom this dominion is naturally resident, by the Law of Nature we understand ⲙⲓⲛⲓⲛⲓⲛⲓⲛ *ἐν τοιαῖς statutes*, but ⲙⲓⲛⲓⲛⲓⲛⲓⲛⲓⲛ *δικαιώματα*, right; and this is not in so large a sense as the Roman Lawyers use it, for that which is common to man and beast, is improperly applied to beasts, according to that of *Hesiod*.

Τὸν δὲ θεὸς ἀνθρώποισι νόμον δίδταξε κρονίων  
 Ἰχθύσι γὰρ καὶ ἀρσὶ καὶ οἰωνοῖς πεπεσὼς  
 Ἐδάμεν, ἀλλήλους ἐπεὶ οὐδέ κεν ἔστι μὲν αὐτῶν.

God gave mankinde a Law, which is  
 Dens'd to beast, wing'd fowle, and fish.  
 These when ere their nature need  
 Do one upon another feed.

But we restrain this to mankind, and this restrained we consider that which is properly the Law of Nature, which we conceived to be the dictate of right reason commanding or prohibiting an Act by the congruities or incongruities of the Act with rational nature and consequently enjoined or forbidden by the Authour of Nature: Order and Subordination is assigned by most Astronomers to celestial Bodies, the Inhabitants of Heaven, I am assured by divine Authority, the Angels, Archangels, Principalities and Dominions; the Earth and the parts of it are created with subordinate Dependence; the meaner Creatures of the Earth as Bees discover in themselves and actions Order and Subalternation in place and Authority; to deny this to Man, to whom all earthly Creatures were given; that Anarchie should only run in Mankind, cannot be imagined to be intended by Nature or the Authour of it. The Word is *κόσμος*, so called for Order and Decency, and shall this be denied to *Microcosmos* the little world, Man? whose parts are guided by the Head, from thence proceed commands to all the Members. The contemplation of these Subordinations and Offices invite us to consider the World and the things therein with respect to the Head and Monarch of it Man; and in Man the worthier to whom Nature gave a respect and priority; the Son as Son owing his being to his Father, owed him also Honour: hence *Honour thy father, &c.* is re-written in the heart the characters that Nature first impressed, being by the corruption of it blotted and defaced. Hereupon, *Basil* wittily stileth a Parent, *θεὸς ἰσχυρὸς*, a visible Deity, the Patriarchs of the first age, as we have already urged, derived from their Father *Adam* Supremacy, and left to the first-borne successively in their Generations. The contemplation thereof induceth me to believe that had *Adam* stood in the state of innocency, one had been subject and subordinate to one another, but without tyrannie or oppression on

the

the Commanders part, or reluctancie on the Subject. When rapine and violence the issue of corrupted Nature broke forth, necessitie of safeguard forced men to draw into societies, the easier to protect themselves; and from thence you say sprung all Principalities: but whether the People chose over themselves Governours or Kings, or those Governours and Kings made themselves so at first over the People, seemeth to me not so evident, as the confidence of your Observations would have me believe: to lay aside Authorities that speak of either, we will enquire after the Truth of this, especially the Principalitie of the first Age by all the meanes reason can discover to us. When oppression appeared, probably it began in one, then more, and so in multitudes, and proportionably the number of the oppressed did encrease: the oppressour in case he prevailed was Lord over his Captives lives and estates, whose encrease and number encreased his Dominion, swelling by degrees to the extent of a considerable Monarchie: the oppressed whether one or more (it began with few) being not able to resist violence fled without question for succour to him whom they thought was able to defend them: and that he made himselfe King over them seemeth to me more probable, than that he was made by them; for it will be admitted on both sides, the oppressed hath power to subject himselfe, and the protectour power to command it, for the oppressed sheltreth himselfe probably under a stronger patronage than himselfe: without question then the Patron would erect and enlarge his Dominion with more speed and will, than the oppressed would undergo perpetuall slavery, the one being dissonant to Nature, the other congruous to humane ambition: hence we gather by our consideration of the probable actions of the first oppressours, and oppressed, Principalitie forced by oppression cannot claime in any likelihood its originall from the People: and Dominion thus gained whilst it



is not accompanied with tyrannie cannot be called unnaturall, or to crosse the dictates of reason, reason embraceth that which it forserth best to prevent violence and settle quietnesse; and that which Nature delighteth most in, can no way be held unnaturall, witnesse the workes of it, all woven in subjection and dependencie, only oppression too frequent a companion of Sovereigntie in corrupted Nature is that which is contrariant to Nature, and the chiefe cause of all contracts between King and people. Lastly, let us see what footing your popular Supremacie hath in the Law of Nations which is defined to be a humane voluntary Law and obligative among all or most Nations, that Law Supremacie was acknowledged by all or most Nations to be the end and efficient of all powers is neither affirmed nor proved by you. Their constant practice as we have touched already disallowing your opinion, and if you joyne this issue with me, you will never be able to give in evidence any convincing testimonie, but we shall expect your *palinodia*, with *Tu viciisti me & ego errorem*, orthodoxally concurring with our opinion, that power is not originally inherent in the people *de facto*, or by any Law. The result of our discourse is that Monarchies and all other Governments owe their originall to God, who is the Donor efficient and ultimate end of them, the people are by him made the instrument to convey this, but not all people, nor at all times. The King and people are the subordinate end of the Government they live in. Kings contracts with their Subjects in a Government, gained by Conquest is more the Princes bounty, than a discharge of his dutie; and if otherwise, Princes so settled cannot be removed or forcibly resisted by the people without traiterous Rebellion against God and his Deputie. The residue of your discourse is either matter of fact, admonitions, or sarcasmes. for the matter of fact, as I do not disallow the truth of any of them, so I do not much credit a single testi-

D

monie,



monie, especially of him whose eyes are infected with the  
 Jandize, sees the Kings actions all of one colour. Sarcasmes  
 are disallowed by the holy Text against the sacred person of  
 a King, *Ne maledices principi in populo tuo, Deuter. 17. 18.* or  
 foment Rebellion with malicious paradoxes against Gods  
 Anointed; and if by a *Pythagorean* μαθηματικός, *Thersites* li-  
 veth in your Antipathie to Regall Government, most *English*  
 hearts will with me returne unto you the checke *Thersites*  
 had;

Ὅτι ἀγαθὸν πολυμαρτυρίη ἐς κύριον ὅτι οὐκ ἔστιν ἄλλο β.

---

*FINIS.*

---

London, Patente.  
Coventries Resolutions.  
An Army of 40000. raising.

(227)

8  
Numb. 30.

CERTAIN E. PP London  
INFORMATIONS

From severall parts of the Kingdome, and  
from other places beyond the Seas, for the better  
satisfaction of all such who desire to be truly  
Informed of every weekes Passage.

from the 7. of August, to the 14. of August, 1643.

Monday, Aug. 7.

INformations have of late beene very rare and Scarce out of the West-  
Country, partly because the Roades thither are obstructed since Sir Wil-  
liam Wallers returne to this City, and the unhappy Surrender of Bristol;  
and partly because the wind hath beene long Easterly to hinder the coming  
of Barques and Shippes from thence, so that no Postes nor Carriers being suf-  
fered to come out of those parts, ( to the infinite hindrance of trade and com-  
merce, and so by consequence to the utter impoverishing of thousands of  
poore people, who live onely by Cloathing and other manuell Occupations,  
having nothing but a weekly maintenance from hand to mouth, ) we have  
been forced to be silent, through want of Intelligence from thence, Yet now  
at length, by meanes of a Messenger that got covertly out of Excester and is  
safely arrived here, we are Informed, that that City, (though it be still besieged  
at a distance by some of the trayned bandes of that county as is said, & some  
Cornish Cavaliers, who gape for the spoile of it) is still in good state & plight,  
well fortified and manned, and hath provisions to hold out for a moneth or  
two longer, & desire the Parliament to send them some reliefe before that time  
be expired, else they shall be forced to compound with their enemies, and  
Surrender up their City to them; which may prove the totall losse of all the  
Westerne parts, and discourage Dartmouth, Plymouth, and the North parts  
of Devonshire, which yet stand constant to the Parliament, to hold out any  
longer.

H h

longer. And the said Messenger also relateth, that such disaffected persons in *Exeter*, as heretofore have testified much rancor and malice against the Parliament, and forborne their contributions towards the maintenance of the common cause of Religion & Liberty, have now their eyes & understandings so clearly opened, since they heare that the Malevolents in *Bristol* upon their Surrender of that City, have by their supposed good friends the Cavaliers, beene so excremely pillaged and plundered that they have scarce any thing left to maintaine them, that they readily comply both with their persons and purges to defend themselves and the common cause of the Kingdome, against the now common Enemies thereof.

From *Chichester* in *Sussex* they write that Colonell *Stapley*, who is a member of the Honorable House of Commons, & Governour of that City, finding by long experience, that the Malevolents there, by no faire means nor persuasions, will be brought to compliance for the defence of the Parliament and Kingdome, but still grow more refractory and obdurately insensible of their owne propinque calamities, by adhering to the Cavaliers and their partie, (who still bereave their friends and well-willers of all they have, wheresoever they come, under the name of Round-heads;) hath expelled about three-score of the most potent of that faction out of that City, together with their whole families, and will not permit them any resort thither againe, lest they should betray the City, or rise up against it at the Cavaliers approach thither, Which may serve as a Patterne to *London*, who hath beene Sundry times admonished to take the like course with their Malevolents, to prevent impending mischiefe, and if they doe not speedily follow the same Example they are like shortly (through the numbers and potency of Malevolents in this City) to runne the same course (if not a worse) as *Bristol* hath done.

From *Livorno* in *Italy* they write, that the Duke of *Florence*, hath received one *Robert Saintbitt* a Merchant of *London*, as an Agent for the King of *England* there, who hath sent to Doctor *Holdsworth* and another, to send him a Minister of their election thither, and that he hath conveyed his wife and family to that place also, and as it is most probable all his estate likewise. This man, before his departure from hence, was observed to be a strong and malicious Malevolent against the Parliament and their proceedings, and therefore men of understanding conceive, that he is gone thither for no good designe, because he hath now power to do mischiefe there, either in seizing upon such Merchants estates as have contributed moneys for the defence of the Parliament and Kingdome, or else to borrow Moneys to be made over hither by bills of exchange, to maintaine the Cavaliers in this unnaturall

Warre against us, for none of the Traffiquers into those parts, have ever knowne any English Agent there before, neither is there any necessity for this State of having correspondency with that remote Prince, and his present Wars with the Pope, will not now permit him to send either Ships or men to aide the Cavaliers. Therefore it is conceived not impertinent, to peruse all Letters that come out of *Italy* and *Spaine*, to see whether they have any Bills of Exchange inclosed for the purpose aforesaid.

About the latter end of the last weeke, the Noble Peers having considered of some Propositions for an Accomodation, between the King and Parliament, delivered them to the Honourable Commons at a Conference between both the Houses, who presently by the Major Vote, resolved that they should be debated, but referred it untill this day; but in the morning, a Petition with an Ordinance annexed was presented unto them by the Common Councell of *London*, whose chiefe pointes in briebe were first, to desire the Honourable Commons to hold firme to their former Resolutions which they had taken. Secondly, that an Army of thirty thousand foot, and ten thousand horse might be presently raised in *London* and the adjacent Counties. Thirdly, that Justice might be done upon Conspirators and Delinquents. Fourthly, that it might be referred to the discretion of the Common Councell of the City of *London*, to have the Shops shut up when, and for what time they should think fit and expedient, &c. Which Petition being read, the said Honourable House kindly accepted it, and gave the Common Councell thanks for it, assuring them that they would be constant to the Covenant, that Justice should be done with all conveniency, and that they would send a Committee into the City to Treat with them about raising of the aforementioned Army, and so they were dismissed.

After their departure, the said Honourable House entred into debate of the Lords Propositions, and finding them not safe for the Kingdome, as matters now stand, they resolved not to condescend unto them.

*Tuesday, August 8.*

The Parliaments Committee for the Navy, fearing now lest the Cavaliers, who having gotten much strong shipping at *Bristol*, might send them forth either for Pyrats, or else to waite the Rebels out of *Ireland* thither, to the endangering of the Kingdome; have written to their Lord Admirall the Earle of *Warwicke*, speedily to send a Squadron of his best ships, to lie in the mouth of *Severne*, to stop all ships from coming in, or going forth of *Bristol*, which will hinder the designs of the Cavaliers, and totally absconde their trading by Sea, by which meanes, (together with the late plundering of all sorts of people

ple in that City, as well Malevolents as well-affected, by the perfidious Covenant breaking Cavaliers contrary to composition and agreement) the Inhabitants of that City will be brought into such a miserable Predicament, that they will have double cause to bewail, as well their own effeminate cowardise, as the Cavaliers Lordly Tiranny over them.

The Parliament being informed, that many men, as well English, as Dutch and French, have made over their estates, and are departing into *Holland*, and other places beyond the Seas, have put a stop upon the Ports, and Ordered, that no manner of persons shall depart the Realme, without their especial Licence first obtained; because they hold it most unreasonable, that such as have gotten great estates here, should now in time of necessity desert the Land, and withdraw their contributions for the maintenance of the Common Cause of Religion and Liberty: And surely, such kinde of People, in such desertion testifie more selfe love to themselves, then affection to this Place, from whence they have sucked so much sweetnesse and opulency. Besides, it is as well contrary to the Law of Nations, as to the obligations of gratitude & Religion, to leave us now in this time of distresse. And it is also an unfaithfull Remuneration, for all the good & charitable beneficences, which both themselves and their Progenitors have heretofore received from the English Nation.

The Parliaments Committee for the Irish affaires, have sent Master *Maurice Thompson* and Master *Corsellis* Merchants of *London*, into the united Provinces as Agents for them, to desire all the Protestants in those parts, to subscribe for the Loane of Moneys for Ireland, and they carry with them letters both to the States Generall and Provinciaall, and an Ordinance of Parliament, to assure all such subscribers, that they shall have such proportionable parcells of Land in that Kingdome for their moneys, as the former subscribers in this Kingdome are to have for the like subscriptions.

Sir *Walter Erle* by his Letters hath certified the Parliament, that while he was besieging of *Corse Castle* in the Ile of *Parbecke*, the Cavaliers with a great strength came against *Dorchester*, which Towne, (having hardly three hundred Souldiers to defend it, because he had twelve hundred of them in his Army at the siege) was forced to yeild to the enemy, and now possessed by them. From whence some of the Cavaliers went against *Weymouth* and *Melcombe Regis* and have taken it also with the Ile of *Portland*; and that he was forced to give over the Siege, and retire with a hundred horse to *Southampton*, the rest of his Army being disperfed.

Wednesday, August 9.

Out of *Lincolnshire* it is informed, that the Lord *Willoughbie* of *Parham* finding



finding the City of *Lincolne* not tenable with his small forces, because the Fortifications about it, are of wide compasse and extent, and but slightly made, hath left it, and is retired with all his Forces to *Boston*, which is a Towne of greater strength, more fidelity, and better manned and Fortified, and where if necessity require, by the cutting of a Ditch, he can drowne all that part of the County for six or seven miles about it, besides, he hath there the benefit of the Sea, to have provisions brought to him when he wanteth, and can make better defence if he should be invaded by a danger.

His Excellency the Parliaments Lord Generall and his whole Army, are come to Quarter at *Kingston upon Thames*, for the safeguard of the South parts of the Kingdome, and to repell the Cavaliers, if they should make any attempt upon *Surrey*, *Sussex*, or *Kent*; as also to awe the Malevolents, wherewith those three Counties are too much replenished.

From *Coventry* they write, that their Garrison hath raised all the Suburbs, to hinder the Cavaliers from shelter there, if they should come to besiege it, and they have plained all the Countrey about it, that the shot of their Ordnance may have free passage, and besides the Parliaments Vow and Covenant, they have taken another Covenant firmly and sincerely to defend one another untill death, and that whosoever shall motion yeilding, or composition, shall be deemed a disaffected Malignant, and have his person and goods seized on.

It is informed out of *Glocestershire*, that on *Sunday* last, the Cavaliers began to besiege the City of *Glocester*, with an Army of six thousand men, but the inhabitants thereof are so well provided with men, food, Armes, & Ammunition, if God please, they can hold out this three moneths, if they may be relieved before that time be expired, and they have raised their Suburbs, taken downe Sir *Robert Cookes* house halfe a mile from it, and plained all the Countrey about it, the better to keep off their enemies approach.

Yesterday in the afternoon, two or three hundred Oyster wives, and other dirty and tattered sluts, tooke upon them the impudency to come to the Honourable House of Commons, and cried for Peace and Propositions, and they so filled the staires, that no man could passe up or downe, whereupon a man upon the top of the staires, drew his sword, and with the flat side stroak some of them upon the heads, which so affrighted them, that they presently made way and ran downe, and thereupon the Trained band that then waited, came and made a Court of guard upon the staires and so kept them off from further troubling the House.



*Thursday, August 10:*

All the Newes from Derby this weeke is, that Captaine *Swetnam* with his Troope of horse, went from thence to *Leicester*, to guard their Carrier, that brought three packs of match from *London* for them, but the Carrier for his safety went another way, whereupon the Troope missing him, in their returne homewards, met with six of Colonell *Hastings* Rob-carriers, took both men and horses, and have carried them to *Derby*, to pay for their former Robberies.

Yesterday there was such a fearfull Tumult and uprore raised by women about the Parliament House; as was never recorded by any Histories either ancient or moderne, which by eye witnesses is thus related. After the Trained band (which was that day to guard the Houses) was come into the old Palace yard, and had set their Sentinell at the usuall places according to the custome, about an hundred women with white Ribbands in their hats pressed to make way through them, which the Sentinells opposing, more women came to second them, fell upon them and beate them away, and by violence made their way into the yard; then more women striving to land at the Parliament Staires, were kept of there by Sentinells, but they landing a little higher, came in upon the West side of the yard, and then all of them cried out mainely, we will have Peace presently and our King, and this was their constant cry to all the Peers as they came to their House, and when the Earle of *Holland* came, they began their cry afresh, and presented a Petition unto him, whereupon his Lordship wished them to be quiet and he would do his best to procure Peace, then a Minister passing through the yard, they laid hands upon him, cried out a Roundhead, and tore his cloak and band, whereupon the Trained Band having rallied themselves, as well as the straitnes of the place would permit, fired their Muskets, only charged with powder, upon them, at which they being nothing daunted scoffed and geered them, but the number of women together with their tumult increasing, they got some unlucky boyes to mount a wall, and to breake them down brick-bats, which with a violent fury they threw at the Trained band, whereupon they were enforced to shoot bullets against them; wherewith one woman and two men were slaine, and then some other men coming in to help the Trained band, laid about them with their swords, and wounded many of this feminine unruly rout, who continued still throwing of brick-bats, nor could this tumult be appeased, untill two Troopes of horse came in upon them, at whose sight they presently dispersed and vanished, but before they departed, they threatned to teare Master *Pym* in pieces, and to pull the House of Commons downe about their ears, reviling them most abominably.

abominably. Many of them are taken and committed, to be examined who were their prime movers, and instigators.

Friday August, 11.

Since *Dorchester* was yielded up to the Cavaliers, the Reports are come that *Lyons* and *Poole* are also rendred and have submitted themselves to the Yoke of slavish bondage. And the reason why *Dorchester* yielded upon the first summons, was, because it was destitute of the souldiers the inhabitants had rayled for the defence thereof, for the Earle of *Warwicke* had 600 of them for the *Excester* expedition: and Sir *Walter Erle* had 1200 more of them against *Corfe* Castle, and what could the residue being about 200, doe against 5. or 6000. Cavaliers, especially when they could hope for no relief or aid. As for Sir *Walter Erle*, he was forced to raise his siege from before *Corfe* Castle and he is since arrived at *London*, with about 120. horse, which are now quartered at *Fulham* in the County of *Middlesex*.

There are no letters come this Week from *Manchester*, because the Roades are stopd, so that no Post can passe: but it is said, that come out of *Lancashire* affirme, that they are well there, and that for the present the Countrey is in repose and quiet, since they beate the *Newcastle* Lians from *Cotne*, *Clethor* and *Thornton*, and this wee accompt good newes, wishing that the whole Kingdome enjoyed the like Peace and Tranquillity.

From *Smyrna* in *Asia* Admirallies write, that this last spring about  *Aleppo* in *Syria*, there were such infinite numbers of Grasshoppers, that all the Countrey thereabouts was overspread with them, and all the People there were wont to gather them, lest they should devoure and consume all the corne and other fruites of the Earth, insomuch that they brought every day into *Aleppo*, 1000 Asses laden with them, and they feared, that if God by a strong wind did not take them away, that they would make a totall devastation of whatsoever sustaineth either man or beast, and introduce a miserable and pynning famine in those parts which superabundance of noxious creatures, hath proved a bad Omen to the most eminent person there, for they since write from *Smyrna*, that the *Bascha* of *Aleppo*, being much discontented with the imperious and tyrannicall Government of the *Vizier Bascha* at *Constantinople*, who had the sole rule of the *Turkish* Empire, rayled an Army of 15000. men, and marched from thence within 20. miles of *Scutari* neere *Constantinople*, where the grand *Vizier* encountered him, was defeated and lost 300. men in that fight, but since the said *Bascha* of *Aleppo* was betrayed by his owne men for want of their pay, so that he was taken, and had his head struck off, by which meanes that Insurrection is suppressed and quieted.

Saturday

Saturday, August 13.

Out of *Norfolke* they write, that some of their forces lately searched one of the Lord *Maltravers* houses, where they found Jewels and Plate to the value of four or five thousand pound, which seizure they have acquainted the Honourable House of Commons with, and desired that they may be made use of for the Publique service, without any exemption, as some of his former seized goods did finde such priviledge.

Out of *Italy* they write, that the Confederate Princes still continue their wars against the Pope and his Nephew Cardinall *Barbarini*, who would swallow up all *Romania*, if those Princes did not resist their greedy covetousnesse. And that the Pope to keepe his ill gotten gaine, under the colour of Saint *Peters* Patrimony, hath gotten together an Army of fourscore thousand men, and the Confederates Army amounzeth to as great a number, whereof the Duke of *Florence* for his part hath furnished 20000. and that he hath sent his Generall *Piscolomini* to *Florence*, to raise more forces there and in the rest of his Dominions, and that he and his Colleagues the Dukes of *Venice*, *Parmia*, and *Modenia*, are resolved not to be baffled and deprived of their Territories by the avaricious Clergy, whose late incroachments have put all the Christian world into Wars and combustions.

There hath been rumours of late, that the Lord *Fairfax* should have done some notable exploit in *Yorke-shire*, but all the certainty that we can informe our selves of is, that Sir *Hugh Cholmeley* was setting of the Commission of Array in a Towne, between *Kingston upon Hull* and *Setby*, whither his Lordship sent Sir *Thomas Fairfax* his son with some forces both of horse and foot, who comming upon the Array men, routed them and tooke about 300. of their horse, which good successe, as some say, hath made the Earle of *Northampton* to retire againe out of *Lincolnes-shire* into *Yorke-shire* to aide his party there. And others report, that he is retreated to oppose the *Scotts*, whom they feare will march towards the borders of *England* in a body of 10000. and are said to be raised in the Countrey of *Fife*, which lieth neere *Barwicke*. But the truth thereof will without doubt appeare very shortly.

According to the Order of Parliament, many of the Cavaliers who have been brought Prisoners hither, are carried downe to *Waldwich*, and put aboard some great ships provided for them, to be kept there untill they can be transported into the *English* Plantations in *America*.

Out of *France* they write, that the *French* Army which lay before *Thionville*, hath at length gained that Towne, which was yeilded unto them upon the 31. of *July* last.

This is Licens'd and Entred into the Hall Book.

Printed by G. Bishop, and R. White.

2

AN  
ORDINANCE

OF  
The Lords and Commons assembled in PARLIAMENT,

Concerning the Names of the Committee for the Associated Counties of *Norfolk, Suffolk, Essex, Cambridge, Hertford and Huntingdon:*

Together with  
*Instructions for the said Committee.*

Also, Three speciall Orders; *viz.*

1. That the Divines of the Assembly that are Resiants of the Associated Counties, and now attending the Assembly, be desired to go down into their severall Counties, to stir up the people to rise for their defence.
2. That the Lord Generall the Earl of *Essex*, be desired to grant a Commission to the Earl of *Manchester*, to be Sergeant Major Generall of all the Forces of the six Associated Counties.
3. That the said six Associated Counties shall forthwith raise a Body of Ten thousand Foot and Dragoons to withstand the Enemy.

Ordered by the Commons in Parliament, That this Ordinance, Instructions, and Orders, be forthwith printed and published:

*H: Elsynge, Cler. Parl. D. Com.*

Printed for *Edward Husbonds*, August 14.

16

ORDINARY

3





Die Martis 8. Augusti, 1643.

*An Ordinance of the Lords and Commons  
assembled in Parliament, for naming a  
Committee for the Associated Counties, of  
Norfolk, Suffolk, Essex, Cambridge,  
Hertford, and Huntingdon.*

**T**He Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, taking into their serious consideration the great danger of the Protestant Religion, and the advancement of Popery by a Popish Army, and the daily Rapines, Pillagings, Burnings, and spoylings of His Majesties good Subjects in many parts of this Kingdom, by severall Armies of Horse and Foot raised, consisting for the most part of bloody minded Papists, Irish Rebels, Atheists, Forreigners, and of the Prelaticall party; And especially seeing that the Earl of *Newcastle*, with his whole Army, since the late surrendring of *Gainsborough* unto him, is marching towards, and ready to fall upon the Associated counties of *Norfolk, Suffolk, Essex, Cambridge, Hertford* and *Huntingdon*: Therefore the said Lords and Commons have thought it most necessary, and do hereby Ordain, Nominate, and Appoint, Sir *John Hobart* Knight and Baronet, Sir *John Palgrave* Knight and Baronet, Sir *Miles Hobart*, Sir *Thomas Hoogan*, Sir *Thomas Gaudy*, Sir *Isaac Ashley*, Sir *Edward*



ward Asbley, Knights; Thomas Windham, John Spylman, John Cook, Gregory Goulfull, Francis Iermay, Robert Woods, Robert Wilton, William Cook, Thomas Weight, Martin Staley, Thomas Sorberton, John Brevster, and Thomas Russell of Basham, Esquires, for the said county of Norfolk. Sir Edmund Bacon, Sir William Spring, Knights and Baronets, Sir Thomas Barnardiston Knight, Sir William Soame, Theophilus Vaughan, Maurice Barrow, Thomas Baker, Nathaniel Bacon of Friston, Nathaniel Bacon of Ipswich, Robert Brewster, Francis Bacon, Edmund Harvey, Isaac Appleton, Thomas Tirrill of Gipping, James Hobart, Gibson Lucas, Thomas Cole of Haverill, William Bloyse and William Laurence, Esquires; For the said county of Suffolk. Sir Thomas Honeywood, Sir William Roe, Sir Henry Holcroft, Sir Richard Everard, Knights, John Sayer, Arthur Barnardiston, John Weight, Richard Harlarkinden, Edward Palmer, Timothy Middleton, Deane Tindall, William Humphreile, John Eldred, John Eliston of Gesthorp, Robert Galthorp, William Atwood of Weightbridge, John Atwood of Muthwaltham, Esquires, Read, Doctor of Physick, John Young and John Sorrell, Gent. For the said county of Essex. Sir John Cus, Sir Thomas Martin, Knights, Oliver Cromwell, Francis Russell, Thomas Coke, William March, James Tompson, Thomas Duckett, Robert Castle, Robert Clarke, Edward Clench, Dudley Pope, Thomas Bandish, John Welbore, Richard Foxton, Esquires, and Samuel Spaulding Gent. For the said county of Cambridge. Sir John Garrat Baronet, Sir John Witteroun Knight, Sir John Read Baronet, John Haydes, Ralph Freeman, William Leaman, William Priestly, Gabriel Barber of Hertford, John Robotham, Henry Mewsis, Ralph Pemberton, Captain Richard Porter, Adam Wainston, John Scrogs, Alexander Wilde, Thomas Tooke, John King, Esq. For the said county of Hertford. Sir Miles Sandys junior, Knight, John Habar, Humberston March, Esquires, and Thomas Castle Gent. For the said Isle of Ely. John Thacker Major, Adrian Parmiter, John Tooley, Edmund Burnam, Matthew Peskover, Henry Warr, Matthew Lindsey, William Symonds, Aldermen of the city of Norwich, John Greenwood Sheriff of the same, Samuel Smith Esquire; For the said county of the city of Norwich. Onslow Wincke, Torrell Locelyne, Oliver Cromwell, Thomas Temple, John Castle, Abraham Burwell and Edward Mountague, Esquires.

Esquires, *Robert Vinter, Robert Harvey, and Garvall Fulwood*, Gent. For the said county of Huntington; or any seven or more of them, three whereof to be Deputy-Lieutenants, and the whole seven to consist of one out of every the said counties respectively, and one out of the city of *Norwich*, to be a standing and constant Committee, who shall have power to order the Affairs of the said Associated counties, according to their Instructions hereafter specified.

And for the better effecting of the premises, the said Committee, or any seven or more of them as aforesaid, shall be resident at *Cambridge*; or at some other of the Frontier Towns of the Association; or some other convenient place within the said counties; and shall have power to adjourn themselves, from time to time; and from place to place, as they shall think fitting. And the said Lords and Commons in Parliament, do hereby nominate and command, *Thomas Sotherton* and *Martin Sidley*, Esquires for the countie of Norfolk; *Edmund Harvey* and *Thomas Cole*, Esquires for the county of Suffolk; *Sir William Roe* Knight, and *Timothy Middleton* Esq; for the county of Essex; *Thomas Ducker* and *Thomas Castle*, Esquires for the county of Cambridge; *Henry Mewtis* and *Ralph Freeman*, Esquires for the countie of Hertford; *Onslow Winche* and *Abraham Burwell*, Esquires for the county of Huntington; and *Samuel Smith*, Esquire for the county of the city of Norwich, presently to attend this service. And after they (or more of the said Commissioners) shall have sate Fourteen dayes, then the Minor half of the said Committee to be free, and they to send for so many others in their stead, out of every the said respective counties and city of Norwich, and the major half there still to remain other Fourteen dayes, and then they also are free; and they then to send for seven others, one out of every the said counties and city of Norwich as aforesaid; and to change the Committee by half at once successively during these Troubles, or till further order be taken, giving notice from time to time, to them which are to succeed, the six dayes before they are to make their appearance at the appointed place; also if seven or more of the Commissioners before named, shall be present in this service, three whereof or more to be Deputy-Lieutenants of the severall and respective counties, the whole number shall have power to Vote, and the major part to rule the Vote.

*Die*



Die Martii 8 Augusti, 1643.

## Instructions for the Committee of the Associated Counties.

**I**nprimis, that the said first Committee so appointed as aforesaid, and all other the said Commissioners before named, are hereby strictly required to make their appearance according to the manner of the appointment by this present Ordinance & in these times of eminent danger, to use all diligence to promote the service they are intrusted withall.

2. That they have a speciall care that all the Frontiers, and the Isle of Ely be supplied with firing Forces to resist all sudden surprises, or invasions; and shall from time to time send out Scouts to discover how, and in what manner, any enemy approacheth neerer to the Frontiers, that thereby they may have, and give timely notice of any approaching danger; and this to be done at the generall charge of the Association.

3. That the said Committee shall order and dispose of all the Associated Forces sent to them by the said Counties in such sort and manner as they shall thinke fit, and best for the safety of the said Associated Counties; And if at any time they shall find occasion of more Forces fit to be raised by the Associated Counties, they shall give notice thereof to the Deputy Lieutenants that firing supplies may be made thereof, and that every County may see their Forces paid.

4. That all Forces raised before this ordinance in the Associated Counties, shall be paid their Arrears if any be unpaid, by money raised out of the six Associated Counties, and City of *Newwich*, according to their proportions.

5. That

5. That the said Committee shall take a speciall care that an accomptant be appointed to Register all the Warrants and directions of the said Committee, and that they require the said Accomptant or Register to make and keep a perfect Accompt how all monies are paid in there by any of the associated Counties, and how the same be issued out, and shall give them such reasonable allowance for their pains.

6. That they have a speciall care, that no stranger shall come in, or inhabit within the Town of *Cambridge*, or the Isle of *Ely*, without the Approbation of the said Committee, upon Certificate of his or their good affections to the King and Parliament; and also that they bring a Certificate under four of the Deputy-Lieutenants hands of the county from whence they come.

7. That all Squalliers that run away, shall be remanded back to the Colours, or sent to the Goale, and all those that harbour, are to be fined and imprisoned, they knowing them to be run away, and to be further punished, as my Lord Generall, and the Deputy-Lieutenants of their respective counties, or any two of them shall think fit, the Fine not exceeding Five pounds every offence.

8. That the Commissioners for Sequestration in the aforesaid counties respectively, do presently execute the Ordinances of Parliament for Sequestrations, or else to be certified by the said Committee to the Houses of Parliament, to be proceeded against for their neglect; And the said Committee shall have power to put in execution all Ordinances of Parliament where there is any neglect.

9. That every Member of the House of Commons, and the Governours of *Cambridge* that are Inhabitants of the Six counties of *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, *Essex*, *Hertford*, *Huntingdon* and *Cambridge*, and of the city of *Norwich*, shall be of the said Committee.

*Die Fovis 10 Augusti, 1643.*

**O**Rdered by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, That the Divines of the Assembly that are Reliants of the Associated counties, and now attending the Assembly, are hereby desired to go down into their severall counties, to stir up the people in those severall counties, to rise for their defence.

*H: Elsyng, Cler. Parl. D. Com.*

*Die Fovis 10 Augusti, 1643.*

**O**Rdered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, That the Lord Generall the Earl of *Essex* is hereby desired, to grant a Commission to the Earl of *Manchester*, to be Sergeant Major Generall of all the Forces of the six Associated counties.

*H: Elsyng, Cler. Parl. D. Com.*

*Die Fovis 10 Augusti, 1643.*

**O**Rdered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled, That the six Associated counties shall forthwith raise a Body of Ten thousand Foot, and Dragoons, to withstand the Enemy. And that four thousand Foot formerly Ordered to be raised in these six Associated counties, or which are already raised, shall be accounted part of these Ten thousand.

*H: Elsyng, Cler. Parl. D. Com.*

**FINIS.**

10  
AN  
ORDINANCE

OF  
The Lords and Commons assembled  
in PARLIAMENT,

For the speedy raising of One thousand Dra-  
goons, to be levyed according to ability in  
the severall Hundreds of the County of

Essex,

*For the safety of the Kingdom.*

And the said County of *ESSEX* is hereby  
charged with the sum of Thirteen thousand  
Five hundred pounds, to be rated and levied  
after the manner and proportion of the  
Weekly Assessments, for the payment of  
my Lord Generalls Army.

Ordered by the Commons assembled in Parliament,  
That this *Ordinance* be forthwith printed and pub-  
lished:

*H: Elsynge, Cler. Parl. D. Com.*

Printed for *Edward Husbands*, August 15.







Die Veneris, 11 Aug. 1643.

*An Ordinance of the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, for the spe dy raising of One thousand Dragoons, and the sum of Thirteen thousand Five hundred pounds in Money, in the county of Essex.*

**V**Hereas by an Ordinance of the Lords and Commons, Five hundred Horse are charged upon the county of Essex, to make up a Body of Horse, with other counties, for the preservation, peace and safety of the people of this Kingdom, and securing their persons

A 2 and

and Estates from the Rapine and fury of the Souldiers : And whereas by an Order of the Committee for the safety of the Kingdom, one Thousand Dragoons are charged upon the said county for the Defence of the Kingdom ; and that in pursuance thereof the Deputy-Lieutenants and Committees of Parliament of the said county have set an equall proportion of the said Thousand Dragoons, upon the severall Hundreds of the said county, to be levyed according to ability, and have charged the same county with the sum of Thirteen thousand and Five hundred pounds, for the Raising and Arming of the said Five hundred Horse, and for a Moneths pay for them ; and also for the Arming of the said Thousand Dragoons, and for a Moneths pay for them ; and that the same sum of Money shall be rated and levyed, after the manner and proportion of the Weekly Assessments, for the payment of my Lord Generalls Army : It is Ordained by the said Lords and Commons, That the said levie of One thousand  
 Dra-

Dragoons, and charge of Thirteen thousand Five hundred pounds, set by the said Deputy-Lieutenants and Committees upon the said county of *Essex*, and the rates and levies made thereupon, according to the manner and proportion of the said Weekly Assessments, shall be ratified and confirmed by the Authority of the said Lords and Commons. And it is Ordained by the said Lords and Commons, That if any person which shall be rated towards the raising of the said Thousand Dragoons, shall refuse, or neglect to pay his rate, the said Deputy-Lieutenants and Committees; or any two or more of them, shall and may set a reasonable Fine upon the person so refusing, or neglecting, and the same Fine to levie by Imprisonment of his body, and Sequestration of his Estate, untill the same shall be fully satisfied. And also it is ordained, That if any person which shall be assessed as aforesaid, towards the payment of the said sum of Money, shall refuse or neglect to pay his rate or assessment to the col-

Collector appointed, the said Deputy-Lieutenants and Committees, or any two or more of them, shall charge the said person so refusing or neglecting, with as much more Money as the said person shall be rated at; and if the said person shall refuse or neglect to pay the said sum so doubled upon him, then it shall and may be lawfull for the said Deputy-Lieutenants and Committees, or any two or more of them, to commit the said person so refusing or neglecting to prison, and also to Sequester his Estate, till the same be satisfied. And it is ordained by the said Lords and Commons, That if any Assessor or Collector appointed by the said Deputy-Lieutenants and Committees, or any two or more of them shall be negligent or faulty in the said service, the said Deputy-Lieutenants and Committees, or any two or more of them, shall and may commit such Assessor or Collector to prison, and set such Fine upon him as they shall think fit, not exceeding the sum of one hundred pounds, the same

same to be levied by Distresse, and sale of the offenders goods to the uses aforesaid. And it is ordained by the said Lords and Commons, That *Edward Berkhead* of Rumford Esq; shall be Treasurer for receiving of the said sum of Thirteen thousand Five hundred pounds, and shall not issue out any of the same, but by Warrant from the Deputy-Lieutenants of the said county, or any two or more of them. And it is ordained by the said Lords and Commons, That the Committees for the Weekly Assessment, or any two or more of the severall Divisions of the said county, shall forthwith certifie to the said Treasurer under their hands, a copy of the Weekly Assessment of their severall Divisions. And it is further ordained by the said Lords and Commons, That the Captains, Officers, and Souldiers of the Trained-Bands, Volunteers, or other Forces, shall be assistant to the Collectors of these Monies, if need be. Lastly, it is ordained, That all those that do any thing in the performance of this service,



vice, or in the execution of this Ordinance, or the said Ordinance for raising a Body of Horse as aforesaid, shall be saved harmlesse, and Indempnified by the power and Authority of the said Lords and Commons in Parliament.

FINIS.

---

**O***R*dered by the **COMMONS**  
*Assembled in Parliament, That*  
*this Ordinance bee forthwith printed*  
*and published.*

H: Elsyng, Cler. Parl. D. Com.

---

THE

*Kpp London*

## KINGDOMES

## VVeekly Intelligencer:

SENT ABROAD

To prevent mis-information.

---

 From *Tuesday* the 8. of *August*; to *Tuesday* the 15. of *August*. 1643.
 

---

**I**N regard that various reports doe goe abroad, concerning the womens coming to Westminster to the Parliament House, on *Wednesday* last, to Petition for Peace, and that they were some wounded and some slaine (only Petitioning for Peace, as the Malignants report and give out, and disperse their letters into all parts to that purpose, to incence the people against the Parliament) I shall relate the whole matter as neere as I can (which is like to be the last intelligence will be given, in regard we shall (by the next weeke be drawne into the field to attend Martiall affairs) On Monday the Lord Major, Aldermen and Common Councell came with a Petition to the Parliament, shewing their great feares, that if the Propositions sent downe from the Lords (wherin no one Clause was to bring to Justice any one Papist or Dylinquent, that have stirred the King up to this unnaturall Warre against the Parliament) should be yeilded unto, it would be destructive to our Religion, Lawes and Liberties (for indeed neither Religion, Lawes, nor Liberties, were secured by those Propositions; otherwise then by the approbation of his Majestie; who (to his Kingdomes misery) acts, as he is advised (for

most part) by those who are Popishly affected) and in the said Petition they desired the Parliament, that Justice may be done on offenders and Delinquents, though they should perish in the worke: This Petition was likewise accompanied (contrary to the desire of the Lord Maior, Aldermen, and Common Councell, the Representative body of the City) with at least a thousand of the meaner sort of Citizens, who came in a civill manner, without any weapons, and departed assoone as the Parliament declared a dislike of their coming; it is true some of them (or rather some Malignants that intruded themselves, amongst the Company) said to some of the Lords, as they passed to the house; your Lordships, will do the Common wealth lesse hurt by being at Oxford, then here, there you can act but as one man, and you can well but kill one of us in fight: but here you destroy millions, by giving away at a clap (that which is more dear then life it selfe) Religion, Liberty, and future safety: To other Lords it is true they said, my Lords remember your great promises at Guild-Hall at the entrance into this Warre, that you would live and die with us, and eat your meat on wooden trenchers, rather then keepe backe any part of your estate from jorneying with the City in this Cause, especially to bring Delinquents to Justice; and it is said by some, that some of the people, cried no Peace, if they did, surely it was meant, not without a future safety to our selves and Religion.

The Malignants upon this consulted what to doe, to worke their ends, by possessing the people, the Parliament was against Peace (a thing then which nothing is more likely in the world, if the generality were possessed with it) to operate with them, to act violence, upon *The Notion*, the Parliament, is against Peace, to bring their ends to passe: They that Monday night (though the Plot was laid before in *Tompkins* designs) put on those women that were Ring-leaders of the crew, to get such women in and about the City of *London* and Suburbs, as were desirous of Peace (as they pretended) to come to the Parliament house to cry for Peace, which was to the women (may to all Christians ought to be) a pleasing thing, and therupon some out of an earnest desire of Peace, others out of the designe, came on Tuesday to Westminster, with white silke Ribbands in their hats, and cryed for Peace, Committed no great disorder, but when they saw their own time, went home againe: The next day they came againe, neither the Parliament, nor City giving any order to the Trained bands to hinder them, least it should be reported they would hinder any for coming to Petition for Peace; and some in name of the rest came & delivered their Petition, entituled, the humble Petition of *Many* *Irreligiously disposed Women*, (though their actions were quite contrary) which Petition

tion the House of Commons received and read the same (there being little exception to be taken unto it) and sent them out Sir John Hepsley, and four or five more, to returne them an answer, satisfactory enough, if they had beene reasonable Creatures; but they were so farre from being satisfied with it, that Sir John Hepsley and the rest received such course usage from them, that they desired no more of such employment: By twelve a clocke these women increased to the number of five or six thousand at least, besides the men Malignants that were amongst them, who clapt them on their backs and bid them not to be afraid, but to go on (notwithstanding their Petition) to the House of Commons doore, and cry for Peace: And accordingly they came againe to the doore of the House at the upper staires head, and assoone as they were past a part of the Trained Band that usually stood Centinell there, they thrust them downe by the head and shoulders, and would suffer none to come in or out of the Parliament house for two hours together, the trayned Band, advised them to come downe, and pulled them, but yet they would not goe, they then shot powder at them, for this they cared not, crying, nothing but powder, and having Brickbats in the yards, threw them very fast at the trained Bands, and disarmed some of them, which some beggarly fellows whom the Malignants had caused to come to assist the women, seeing their courage, threw stones also at the trained Souldiers, whereupon they were forced to shoot bullets in their owne defence, and killed a Ballad-singer with one arme, for you must know (except some few women) these women were for the most part, Whores, Bawdes, Oyster-women, Kitchen-stuffe women, Beggar women, and the very scum of the Suburbs, besides a-bundance of Irish women: There was likewise a poore man slaine who came accidentally; notwithstanding this example, these women were not any whit scared or ashamed of their incivilities, but cryed out so much the more, even at the doore of the house of Commons, Give us these Traytors that are against peace, that we may teare them in pieces, Give us *Pym* in the first place, they were perswaded to forbear to use such language of the Parliament, and so depart, but they cryed out so much the more; all this while the Parliament was in a manner Prisoners, the guard could not in two houres make way to the House, to bring them downe, being loath to offer violence to women, at last ten Troopers (some of them Cornets) came to passe by the women, who had their Colours in their hats, which the women seeing, made 2. of them take their Ribbands out of their hats, not contented with that, they offered to do the like to the rest &c laid violent hands upon them, whereupon they drew their Swords, and laid on some of them with their Swords flac-

wayes for a good space, which they regarded not, but enclōsed them; upon this they then cut them off the face and hands, and one woman lost her nose, whom they say is since dead, as soon as the rest of the women saw blood once drawne, they ran away from the Parliament House, and dispersed themselves in smaller numbers, into the Church-yards, Pallace, and other places; and about an houre after the House was up, a Troope of horse came, and cudgelled such as staid, with their Kanes, and dispersed them, and unhappily a maid servant, that had nothing to doe with the Tumult, but passing through the Church-yard (which may be a warning to people to keep out of unlawfull Assemblies) was shot; the Malignants say, it was done by a Trooper that rid up to her, and shot her purposely, others say it went of by mischance, which way soever it was done, it was unfortunate, but the man was immediately sent to prison to the Gatehouse, and is to be tryed for the fact; Divers people going amongst the women, asked them who put them on to this businesse, they said they were at such a Lords House, and he bid them go to the house of Commons, for they were against Peace, others said, they had those to countenance them, in this businesse, that would not desert them; being asked where they got so many hundred yards of silke Ribbin as were in their hats, some said at the Lady *Brunchbards* house in Westminster, others that came from the otherside of the water, had some at a Ladies house in Southwarke, and so others at other Ladies houses in other parts of the Suburbs: The parties that appeared openly to countenance them: were Sergeant *Francis*; who is sent to the Lord Generall to be tried by a Counsell of War, another was one Master *Pulford* whom the Parliament hath likewise committed; upon Information of his countenancing these women, at the house of Commons doore: this is the true Relation of the whole businesse in effect, which no Malignant can deny; and let the world judge if there were any possibility (all faire means taking no effect) to appease these Tumults without mischeife.

Now whereas the Malignants here (that All the designes laid at Oxford, to breed a division and distraction in this City, of which this (under pretence of Peace) was the Master piece, to the end the Cavaliers may the more easily enter the City) had thought by this beginning (by women) to get an opportunity to rise in Armes, and to sacrifice the Parliament; that (under God) hath (against the Plots and devices of our enemies) preserved our Religion, and Liberty; yet their evil intentions are turned hereby to their disadvantages, and most or all of the Malignants about the Cities of London and Westminster and Suburbs, are disarmed of all manner of Armes and Weapons of defence



of offence, and their Armes brought into the City to be put into the hands of such as are faithfull to the Parliament, nor must they thinke their disarming will be satisfaction: but I meane only these within the Works and line of Circumvolation) must take an oath to be true to the Parliament and City, in the defence thereof, against the Forces raised by the King: And to contribute to the defence thereof within the lines of Circumvolation, and to discover any Plot if they know of it, and not to give any intelligence to the Kings Army: and such as shall refuse to take this oath, are to be imprisoned; others more inconsiderable to be sent out of the City and out-workes, and the estates of all refusers not to be removed, but to be ly-able to the Taxes and payments of the Souldiers that defend the Works, or shall be drawn forth to bring in provision to the City, in case the Cavaliers shall attempt to besiege it, if they should come with fifty thousand men (though hitherto they never made twenty) this City would not regard them for a yeares Seige at least: And in the meantime, Scotland will not be unactive to make diversion, whose aide is expected to come into England by the last of this present August: And then its hoped conditions will be granted from his Majesty more for our security then was lately propounded to the Commons.

There came forth this weeke in print by order of Parliament, a Book entitled *Romes Master-piece*, or the grand conspiracy of the Pope, and his Jesuited Instruments to extirpate the Protestant Religion, re-establishe Popery, &c. by kindling a civill war in *Scotland*, and all his Majesties Realmes, and to poyson the King himselfe in case he comply not with them, in these their execrable designes, first discovered to Sir *William Boswell* his Majesties Agent at the Hague, Sept. 6. 1640. upon an oath of secrecy, and he discovered it under the like oath to the Archbishop of Canterbury (amongst whose papers in the tower it was found upon an unexpected search, May 31. 1643.) who communicated it to his Majesty, Sept. 13. 1640. then at Yorke, going against the Scots: Amongst the discoveries which are mentioned in this Booke, (revealed by a Papist that was ioyned to the assistance of Mr. *Cun* the Popes Nuncio then in England, and so privy to the whole Plot) there are these particulars, Page 14. 15. That the Kingdome of England nourisheth a society of foure sorts of Jesuits which conspire to effect an univerfall Reformation in both Kingdomes: Of the first order are Ecclesiasticks, whose office is to take care of things promoting Religion: Of the second order are Politicians, whose office is by any meanes to shake, trouble, reforme the State of Kingdomes and Republicques: Of the third order are Seculars, whose property is to obtrude themselves into offices with Kings and Princes, to insinuate and intermix themselves in Court busineses, bargaines and sales,



and to be busied in Civill affairs. Of the fourth Order are intelligencers (or spies) men of inferiour condition, who submit themselves to the services of great men, Princes, Barons, Noblemen, Citizens, to deceive (or corrupt) the mindes of their Masters : That the chiefe Patron of the Popes Society in London was the Popes Legate, into whose bosome these dregs of Traytors, weekly deposited all their Intelligence (21) In the house of Captaine Read, in Longacre, a secular Jesuite, the businesse of the whole Plot was concluded, where they met every day (except Post dayes for dispatch) all the Intelligencers assembled there, and imparted in common what things every of them had fished out, and sent their secrets by *Toby Mathew* or Captaine Read to the Popes Legate, he transmits the compacted Pacquet to Rome : That all the Papists in England did contribute to this assembly, to promote the designe (and it is well knowne how freely they lent on the Queens Instructions to maintaine the Warre against Scotland (22) That the Countesse of *Arundell* discovers to these men whatsoever she heares at the Kings Court that is done secretly or openly : That Master Porter of the Kings Bed-chamber reveals all the Kings greatest secrets to the Popes Legate (23) That Secretary *Windebancke* not onely betrayed and revealed even the Kings greatest secrets, but likewise communicated Counsell by which the designe may be best advanced : That Sir *Kenelm Digby*, Sir *John Winter*, *Wat Mountague*, &c. Were sworne in this Conspiracy (24) The President of the aforesaid Society was my Lord *Guge*, a Jesuite Priest, dead above three years since; he had a Palace adorned with lascivious Pictures, which counterfeited prophane-nesse in the house, but with them was palliated a Monestary, wherein fourty Nunnes were maintained, hid in so great a Pallace; it is scituated in Queens-street, which the statue of a golden Queene adorne. The secular Jesuits have bought all this street, and have reduced it into a Quadrangle, where a Jesuiticall Colledge is tacitly built with this hope that it might be openly finished as soone as the universall Reformation was begun : the Arch-bishop of Canterbury was offered by the Legate a Cardinalls Cap (this appears by the Arch-bishops own hand, in the journall of his life, found at the same time with this discovery) but notwithstanding he interpose himselfe as a most hard Rocke. To perpetrate the Treason undertaken, a Book of Common Prayer (the alterations whereof from the English, were found in the originall Copy under the Arch-bishops *owne hand*, when his chamber was searched) was imposed upon the Scots, which was with much earnestnesse put on by the Arch-bishop of Canterbury, but out of an avernes to the government of the Church of Scotland, though in that he acted as much for the designe

signe discovered to him, to kindle a War in Scotland, as the Conspirators could wish, and yet by his letters to the King he seames to hate the Treason; upon the sending of this Booke into Scotland, the said Society page (18) dispatched two Scottish Earles into Scotland to stirre up the people to Commotion and enflame their mindes, and stirre them up to Armes, and in the same Page 18. it is thus expresse; There, *by our labour* (scas are prepared for the King; for this purpose the present businells was so ordered, that very many English should adheare to the Scots (*Rex Armis minor inferior, qui ab Papistis auxilia petere cogeretur*) That the King should remaine inferiour in Armes, who (thereupon) should be compelled to crave assistance from the Papists; which yet he should not obtaine, unless he would descend into conditions, by which he should permit universall liberty of the exercise of the Popish Religion; for so the affaires of the Papists would succeed according to their desire. To which consent, if he should shew himself more difficult, there should be a present remedy at hand: for the Kings Son growing now very soft to his youthfull age, (who is educated from his tender age, that he might accustom himselfe to the Popish partie) the King is to be dispatched: *Nax quippe Indica acerrissimo veneno referta in societate servatur, quo Regi exemplo Patris parabitur pharmacum*: And *When* the Popes Nuncio, did often shew to the partie that discovered the Plot, the Nur, with which (as King James) his Majesty should be poisoned.

The Archbishop sends the whole discovery to the King then at Yorke, going betwixt the Scots, Sept. 1. 1640. and his Majesty returns an answer writt in with his own hand, in the margin of the Archbishops Letter, subscribed C. R. which Letter, together with the kings answer is printed together in the said Booke, and the originalls thereof, together with Sir William Bofors Letter, and the original of the discovery, and a fourth of the Archbishop of Cantuaries life, are all safely kept, that any man may reade and see them for their satisfaction. And he that doth not now believe that the *Wars against the Scots*, the Rebellion in Ireland, and this war against the Parliament, is forced to see by the Jesuits, I thinke that no man will say but God hath given him over to blindness of minde and hardness of heart. It was mighty unhappy, his Majesty (whose life was so much endangered by the Plot) would not so much as leise upon the persons of the Conspirators, but at this houre suffer some of them to be of the Bed-chamber; Let all the world judge, and every Malignant lay his hand on his heart, between God and his owne soule, and see, if his conscience tell him not, That the Parliament hath cause not to trust this Religion Liberry, and the strength of the kingdome solely in the kings disposal (as the late Propositions sent downe to the Commons did in effect doe) considering by whom the king is invironed, and all the Papists in Armes. And that though a Treason hath been discovered to his Majesty, tending to the utter subversion of the Protestant Religion in England and Scotland; yet so prevalent are the Popish party with the king (as by this discovery is apparant) that no one man of them hath been punished that was privy to the Conspiracy, but every man of them countenanced since at Court, till the Parliament caused some of them flie beyond Sea: And since *War Mountague* one of the Conspirators

went over, what letters of familiarity (besides the secrets in figures) hath been intercepted, going to him, and from whom, it is well knowne. Page 29. Is expressed at large the particulars concerning the Scottish common prayer Booke, found also in the Archbishopps chamber in the Tower, with these alterations, wherein it differs from the English, written with his *owne hand*, and amongst others, this particular is one, his blotting out their words, at the delivery of bread and wine in the Sacrament, *Viz. Take and eate this in remembrance that Christ dyed for thee, and feed on him in thy heart by faith with thanksgiving*; and so for the wine, and leaving only this following clause (the better to imply and make a corporall presence of Christ in the Sacrament) *Viz. The body of our Lord Iesus Christ, which was given for thee, preserve thy body and soule into everlasting life*, and so of the wine, leaving out the precedent clause, of taking it in remembrance, and feeding on him by faith; No marvell his Grace had a *Cardinals* Cap proffered him, neither was it any marvell he refused it (though his Majesty told him *something dwelt within him that would not suffer this*) for his ambition was, to be pope Regent over the clergy of these two kingdomes, a dignity to him of a higher esteem then to be a *Cardinall*.

The newes from the West is, that Excester hath most manfully defended the siege, layd out upon the enemy, made a great slaughter of them, taken many prisoners, six pieces of Ordnance, and burnt their workes, and houses they had built for their shelter and defence; they have provision enough in the Towne, and care not for the popish Cavaliers.

For Gloucester, it was summoned, but refused to surrender; then his Majesty sent word to the Governour Colonell *Masy* he should expect no Quarter, nor the Towne any preservation, for he would burne it to the ground if they would not immediately yeild: The Governour answered that so long as his Majesty came without consent of the great Councell of the Kingdome the Parliament, and came attended with Papists and Irish Rebels, he would burne the Towne to the ground before such Papists, Irish Rebels, and other Delinquents about his Majesty should have it, and for Quarter he desired it not, nor to live longer then to see such men to rule this Kingdome, whereupon the King commanded a fierce assault to be made, but the enemy was beaten off with great losse: That night the Governour lets a Souldier or two escape out of the Towne, out of pretence of Friendship to the Cavaliers, and informes them of the weakest place in the Towne, which concurred with former Information, the Governour causing divers pieces of Ordnance to be brought thither planting them with most advantage, layes an Ambuscado, and reserve behinde them, the enemy falls violently on, our men give backe, upon this the enemy advanced with more men, declares the Towne their own, the Souldiers enters the breach, but such a slaughter of the enemy was made by the Ordnance and Ambuscado, that few escaped, leaving many hundreds dead in the Place, which enraged the Cavaliers that they caused his Majesty to send for most of his Forces from Oxford to make a second assault, God send them the like successe as the first had. It would be great pitty this gallant pensive man should be lost for want of timely supply, who if he had been Governour of Bristol had saved it, and by consequence the West; yet there cannot be a further expectation of him then during his men, victuals, and Ammunition doth last, *una posse, nanq̃ esse*.

*This is Licensed, and Entered into the Hall Booke according to Order.*

Printed by G. Bishop. and R. White.

12  
A  
CASE OF  
CONSCIENCE,

CONCERNING  
Flying in Times of Trouble.

Resolved  
According to the Scriptures, and the Ex-  
amples of Holy men.

*Applied to the present times and occasions.*

---

*Imprimatur.*

Edm. Calamy.

---



Aug: 16<sup>th</sup>

LONDON,

Printed for John Bellamie and Ralph Smith, and are to be sold at their  
shop, at the three golden Lions in Cornhill neare the  
royall Exchange. 1643.





To the Reader.



*Bout foure moneths since, upon an occasion that offered it selfe, I then drew up this Case, so as it is. It was communicated to divers private hands and had the Testimony of some Divines both Learned and Conscientious, yet I laid it by mee, being not desirous to expose it (among the many Impertinencies and unnecessary and raw Scriblings now a-dayes) to the publicke view. But now the opinion and request of some who judge it usefull hath obtained it to the presse: for they say the condition of the times doth challenge it, wherein many seeme to be ashamed of their former acquaintance with the great cause in hand; The truth is, many that came up to the Parliaments sense in the head of the Tyde, are willing to shrink away in the Ebbe of things. There is a poore and low and narrow Spirit in very many who thought well of the Parliament onely so long as no body spake ill of it, or durst speake out, if they thought otherwise, and*



loved it while they might be safe, and enjoy the worlds  
friendship, God will not honour himselfe by such self-  
seekers; wee must bid a better price, before God will  
part with the rich commodity of Reformation; If  
we love the publicke cause, wee must not onely keepe it  
company in its health, but stand by it and comfort it in  
its faintings. And this is the purpose of the following  
discourte, which I commend unto the blessing of the  
Almighty.

S. T.

A



A

# Case of Conscience,

concerning

## Flying in times of Trouble.

**T**HE Scriptures are so cleare, and the consent of Divines so full, that it had not needed to have beene put to the Question, *Whether flight be lawfull in times of trouble and persecution*; but that some have beene too rigid, and others contrarily have challenged this liberty without all caution, or respect to any circumstances. I shall therefore so examine the case, that conscience may be settled, when to take the liberty which God hath allowed, and how to know when God hath shut up the way against us.

There is a flight which ariseth; First, from the shame of sinne, and from feare of publicke justice. Secondly, from an inward terror and trembling, caused also by guilt, and laid upon men as a punishment, as it was in the case of *Cain*. Thirdly, from weakness, irresolution, and unbelieve, which prevailed upon the Disciples who forsooke *Jesus* and fled. Fourthly, from meere humane prudence and foresight, in which the Prophet *Jonah* offended. But

*A Case of Conscience concerning*

*Mutatio loci,  
mali presentis  
evitand, alibique  
melius deendi  
gratia, suscepta  
cum timore Do-  
mini. Bened. A-  
ret. problem.*

none of these are spoken unto, in the present question, but that which *Aretius* defines, to be, *A changing of place, to shun some present evil, and more comfortably to live elsewhere, undertaken in the fear of the Lord*: Which distinguisheth it from all those former kinds of either rash or sinfull flight.

'Tis a question that exercised the *primitive Divines*, for those times being very terrible till *Constantine* settled peace in the Church, made the search very necessary; as the sad and violent and unseled time that weare fallen upon, make it now.

I finde the *Antients* divided, according to the different sense they entertained of the Scriptures, whether lawfull to flye and leave or change ones station, and if lawfull, whether *permitted onely*, and so lawfull onely and no more, or a duty commanded, and *some* necessary also as a binding law.

First, *Tertullian*, in a tract that he wrote professedly of this argument, altogether denies it to be lawfull to flye, or seems to deny it.

Matth. 10. 23.

He contends, that when our Lord bid his Disciples *when they were persecuted in one City to flye into another*; He onely gave them a speciall allowance (or dispensation rather) then for a particular reason, that the progresse of the Gospell might not be hindered, but preached and spread abroad in all Cities. But that now the Gospell is already propagated, wee are to stand unto the profession of the faith received, and to keepe our station. And that because nothing comes to passe without Gods order, and we are all in Gods hand; it were unbeleefe, treachery, cowardise, rebellion against God to goe out of our place; and that we must dye in our standing, and (if God will have it so) perish in the ruines of our Country.

*Hieron. lib. de  
Script. Illust.*

To this purpose he wrote; yet I expresse my selfe thus favourably of him, that he altogether denies flight to be lawfull, or *seemes to deny it*; because though most conceive that to be his very opinion, and the *Antients* condemned him for it, and *Jerome* in particular censures him, that when he wrote that booke hee had forsaken the sound faith, and was gone over to the part of *Montanus* the *H. retique*, and therefore wrote that booke in hatred, and disgrace of the Christians whose usuall practise many of them was to decline the fury of the times where they might conveniently, though otherwise ambitious enough of *martyrdome*: yet I am not wholly

wholly convinced to the contrary, but that perhaps writing to *Fabius* who was a *presbyter* and a *pastor* of a Church, he might use that severe and rigid language to keepe and hold him upon his charge, in that dangerous and uncomfortable condition of things. But if it were truly his opinion, I consent to the judgement of *Jerome* and *Augustine* against him, and to the answers they directed to his arguments: That 'tis true, all things are ordered by God, and all are in his hand; yet *David* knew all this, but he fled notwithstanding from the violence of *Saul*. And that God calls some to give testimony to the truth by death, others hee reserves, and whom he saves from the rage of cruell ones he saves by meanes. If he shut up any man, it is his will and order hee should stand the trial couragiously; but if hee offer an opportunitie and open the dore of escape, it is his will and ordering to escape. And to this very effect, *Origen* had formerly resolved; "That a man must maintaine Christs cause by death when he is taken, but before hee be taken, he may escape if honourably he can do it. And this was it for which *Nazienzen* commended *Cesarus* that excellent Christian; "That hee honorably yeilded to the times, and neither betrayed the truth nor provoked danger.

*Origen in John.*

*Naz. in Orat. 10*

I shall not need to insit upon this, the lawfulnessse of declining danger; It is a dictate of nature, which grace also cheritheth, and God hath planted a naturall love of life in every man, which teacheth him to shun what may bee harmefull. *Tertullian* (for ought I know) stands alone, against the lawfulnessse; all the doubt among others is, whether it be a permission onely or a precept.

Secondly, *Augustine* and some others that goe in the middle and moderate way; doe say, that God would have no man presume of his strength, for let him that stands take heed lest hee fall; & therefore as wel knowing our infirmitie, he gives us the same and as large allowance and liberty as he granted to his Disciples, whom he permitted to flee from one Citie to another. There are some also of late that have held it but a permission, and therefore say, that when our Saviour had given the immediate signe of the ruine of *Hierusalem*, and thereupon warned them to flee, when yee see the Abomination of desolation, then let them that are in *Judea* flee unto the *mountaines*: He meant not to injoyne it as duety, but onely would thereby manifest the greatnesse of the calamitie upon their Citie, and shew what they might doe in that case, and what they would be constrained to doe.

*1 Cor. 10. 12.*

Thirdly,

## A Case of Conscience concerning

Clem. Strom.

4. 67.

Thirdly, but *Athanasius* and others are expresse for it as a dutie; and that men must flie, when God calls them to flie. *Athanasius* wrote two bookes of *Apologie* upon this argument, in both which he goes that way. And agreeable to this was the resolution of *Clement of Alexandria*, that they are guiltie of their owne death that doe not avoid danger where they may. And accordingly *Cyprian* (who yet was afterwards himselfe a *Martyr*) perswades flight, and tells them of *Carthage*, that it shall be reckoned as a martyr-dome, if any lawfully and worthily flying, doe miscarry by wild beaſts, famine, or theeves. I confesse I encline to this, that it is a duety to provide for safetie by flight where it may be; but I will not interpose, because the difference is not much materiall, for if it be lawfull, it is not much to me, whether onely permitted, or commanded.

Having said thus much, more generally, I shall consider the difficultie in particular, as it concernes; first, other people; secondly, Ministers and Pastors.

1 Sam 21. 1.

22. 1. 27. 1.

First, concerning people that are of a private condition, 'tis out of all doubt that they may lawfully flie. We have many warranted examples of it in holy *Scripture*, among such as were godly and conscientious. *David* oft times layd hold upon this remedy, as appears all along in his story, while he was in or belonging to the Court of *Saul*. So the faithfull were scattered upon the persecution of *Steven*, *Act. 8. 1.* and the *Aposle* in that Catalogue of eminent men in the faith, *Heb. 11.* reckons up many that in hard times forsooke their habitations, and exposed themselves to wants and extreame povertie, *They wandred about in Sheepes-skins and Goat-skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented, ver. 37.* and unto solitary wandrings in voluntary exile; *They wandred in deserts, and in mountaines, and in dens and caves of the earth, ver. 38.* and all this to avoyd the fury of the times, as appears, *ver. 36. 37.* Others had tryall of cruell mockings and scourgings, of bonds and imprisonments, they were stoned, they were sawen asunder, they were slaine with the Sword. These evils overtaking others, the men whom the *Aposle* commends, provided to scape them by their wandring away into Deserts. It were easie to bee large in instances in the ten primitive persecutions. And of later times, we have fresher examples of our owne in *Queene Maries* time, that fled into other parts, and since of such as from those parts of *France*, the *Netherlands*, the *Palatinate*, have fled to us. It were to trifle,

trifle, to spend more words for the prooffe of this; but there are two things more necessary here to be done. First to put in caution lest some may haply presume too farre upon this libertie, so lawfull. Secondly, to make application of the question to this present time and condition of things, whether now bee the time to flie, whether now it be lawfull.

First the *caution* I would put in is this, that all *Lay-people* (for so I must call them for distinction, that I may be understood, not that I will justifie the word of difference) are not at libertie, if they bee bound up by office, relation, publique ingagement, &c.

First, *No man may flie till the doore be set open unto him*, that is, not till all others doores of remedy be shut up: not till all hath beene done for maintenance of publique safetie and libertie, and for the opposing of evill and corruption: But when as water that hath broken downe the damme, there is no resistance, then the dutie is to doe what may be to escape drowning. It lyeth upon all in some measure or other, to see to the state of others safetie, especially the publique. So that that which at all times else is lawfull, to remove ones station for better accommodating his trade and merchandising, yet is not so, if any notable discouragement arise thence to the publique. This is grounded upon that common bond of duty which lies mutually upon one and other in regard of vicinitie or neighbourhood of place. As from hence also it is, that rich men may not remove to their Country houses in time of a publique pestilence, till provision bee made and due care had of the poore, lest they perish for want of reliefe by their withdrawing.

A man therefore may not slip away at a posterne, hee must goe out that way which God sets open, and he must have his passe. The Jewes had a direct open warrant, when they got away from *Pharaoh*, *Exod. 13. 21.* And so had *Joseph* when with *Jesum* and *Mary* he escaped into *Egypt*, *Matth. 2. 13.* they were warned from heaven. But how shall we know we have a warrant? I can onely satisfie this, by considering some particular cases recorded in Scripture, wherein flight was warranted, that so we may make the better judgement upon our owne exigences.

First, I conceive it may be gathered from the story in *2 Sam. 4. 3. 4.* That *Abner* may flie when the side it selfe is lost. The *Beerabites* had assisted the side and cause of *Sauls* house, to which they



*A Case of Conscience, concerning*

were joyned in some relations, during all the warre, till it was utterly weakned and lost, by the death of *Abner*, and then they fled to *Gittaim*. I know the instance doth not suite in all things, for they adhered to the *worser partie*; yet howsoever it serves to my purpose, that they would have continued firme to the part if there had continued a *head and considerable strength* to it; and left not the side, till they were left alone, and then they warrantably escaped, and not till then. The application is easie and ready to the present occasions.

Secondly, when a mans Relations and his calling are not prejudiced by going out of the way, he may lawfully doe it; when his relations and present service are not higher and more tender then his safetie. What was there in *Jacobs family-relation*, when as yet affaires did not depend upon him, that might be a blocke in his way of escape, when his mother sent him farre off to *Laban* out of the reach of *Esaus* bloody attempts? *Gen. 27. 43. 44.*

Thirdly, when the cause in which a man is inbarked is no way bettered by his stay, he may doe the same right to himselfe, which he indeavoured to doe to it. Hence, when *Jotham* the youngest sonne of *Gideon*, who had hardly escaped the conspiracie of *Abimelech*, and understood the outrages of the new court and government, thought it his dutie to make *protestation* against those courses and to undeceive the people so farre as he might, when he had published his thoughts, he ran away, and fled to *Beer*, *Judg. 9. 21.* for what advantage would it have beene to the cause, if he had unadvisedly verified his owne *parable*, and had been caught and torne by that *Bramble*?

Fourthly, so that a man be ready to appeare when the houre of standing requires, he may reserve himselfe till that houre of action come. Thus *Moses* went aside, *Exod. 2. 15.* till businesse were ripened. And *Rutilius*, in the ecclesiasticall story, often fled, but afterwards became a Martyr, which was also the famous case of Saint *Cyprian*.

5. Lastly, if a man be singly hunted after for his estate and libertie, and no way be left him to keep himselfe from injurious dealing, he may accommodate himselfe elsewhere. For this reason *Jacob* conveyed himselfe, and family, and estate, from under the hard and evill eye of *Laban*, *Gen. 31. 21.* And it seemes by the story, *Judg. 11. 2. 3.* that *Jephthah* was thus necessitated to seeke an habitation

habitation in the Land *Tob.* But when (for instance) a *Parliamentary State* is engaged for the repressing of injuries, and maintenance of publick liberties and mens estates, this alters the case and calls in all private thoughts of escape, to contribute them to the publick defence.

More particulars might happily be observed of the Scripture, but because they doe not occurre to my present meditations, this shall suffice for the first Caution.

First, As every one must have regard to some circumstances, so if any one have beene more appearing, more forward, more encouraging in his speeches and advices, and be a man look't at, he is to be more cautious. This I suppose was that which was meant by that speech of *Nehemiah*, *Neh. 6. 11.* *Should such a man as I flee?* Yet I doubt not but if the flood had broken in upon him violently, so that the fury of the Waters could not have beene kept back, he would have runne to avoid drowning; but it would have been in the Reere of the people. The Captaines place in a retreat is hindmost. Such as have gone before the people in a publicke undertaking, and have beene leading men, must see the people safe before him, before he give his ground.

Secondly, But now for application to the present condition of things: What may wee say of this present time? *Is the doore now open or not?* I answer. Wee may not presume to judge precisely of the issue of things. But there are two things I have here to say.

First, That it is true, wee have many sad omens of the ruine of our nation. As our Lord *Jesus* after all other warnings, and various Calamities, foretold the destruction of *Jerusalem*, that they might know that desolation was neere at hand, when they should see the *Abomination of Desolation* set up, or as *S. Luke* expresses it, *Jerusalem compassed with Armies:* So hath God taken all the courses, and given all the warnings to us, which have beene usuall before a Nation comes to destruction. All the finnes which are noted by *Divines* or *Politicall writers* to be the generall, Internall causes of ruine, doe notoriously shew themselves among us; *Variety of enormous finnes*, of the deepest staine and the highest provocation; *The multitude of Sinners*; and the *impunity of sinning*. And then, what warnings have we had, nay what have wee not had? And after all, besides the dangerous distemper spread over all our body, the discord in our owne bowells, an abominable Army, *Ido-*

*Math. 24. 15.*  
*Luk. 21. 21.*

*A Case of Conscience, concerning*

*Latrous Ensignes, the Romish Banner*, doth also portend the worst of evils. If I should also touch at those *Periods*, which *wise and great Authors* doe so much discourse of, and which they will have to be finished in this age; I should reckon up enough, to make us cast about at least in case things should come to extremity. I am mistaken in the story, if the believers had not an eye to *Pella*, even before *Titus* came, and conveyed some things away. I observe this from that passage in *Eccles: History*, of *S. James* his *chayre*.

Jer. 18. 7. 8.

Secondly, But in the next place, I am not willing to leave these sad thoughts upon any, and doe therefore observe that there are two maine considerations, wherein the condition of *our nation* differs from that of *Jerusalem* at that time. First, one is, that they had an immediate warning of ruine by a direct signe which they might clearely take notice of. But so have not wee. Secondly, the other is, That there was an inevitable and irrevocable sentence upon *Jerusalem*; but for our nation we are to thinke, according to what the Scripture speakes, "That at what instant God speaks of a Kingdome to pluck up and destroy, if that nation against whom God hath pronounced, turne from their evill, he will repent of the evill that he thought to doe unto them. These are the things that maintaine in us some hope, besides the *spirit of courage* and the feare of the Lord, which hath beene given and continued of late to many, who have ventured themselves upon the great cause now in hand, and are constant to it.

But what then may be the Resolution? I answer, *P. Martyr* when he had escaped from *Lucas* in *Italy*, wrote back againe to his *Auditors* there, and in particular to a friend, about the *Case of flying*; wherein he seemes not to me to be determining, (for the circumstances of every mans condition doe so differ that it is very difficult to make a settled rule) but adviseth to *pray* unto God for direction, and after prayer, as they find their hearts enclined, so to *flye* or *stay*. This Counsell I doe approve, to seeke *Counsell* from God; but to take the next inclination of heart, to be the present answer, I beleeve may be unsafe. The direction is too large, too uncertaine. Besides that many cannot, haply, discern clearely, many may deceive themselves about the inclination of heart, which wee finde ordinarily to be strongly *biased* by private respects and *interestes*. Wee must looke further then our proper inclinations, yea further then our proper convenience and advantages, to observe how

how things are round about us, and whether there be any thin & in the publicke, wherein we are concerned, and that will countermand our proper inclination, and prevaile above our proper convenience. And if I may expresse my conceit, Things stand now in such posture, that God requires our deep engagement, and that wee should banish all thoughts of declining. In this great hazard that liberty, lawes, and religion run, to leave our ground, were to leave *Popery Master of the Field*. Wee may not now suffer the thoughts of safety elsewhere, to womanize our spirits: but together with our earnest and humble prayers for our *King*, that he may at length embrace the Counsell of our great Estate; wee are in case of so sad a necessity, to resolve to lay out all our strength towards the great businesse, and rather *burne our ships*, as some stories mention of some resolute Souldiers, to keep off all thoughts of returne in the cowardly and faint-hearted; that is, forget all conveniences and opportunities of being elsewhere in a whole skinne.

Secondly, Having thus farre spoken of the liberty of other people, It remaines to be examined whether Ministers the Pastors of Congregations be at the same liberty. I finde the *Antients* and others more difficult concerning them, urging that place of Christ, *Job. 10. 12, 13.* "Hee that is an hireling, seeth the Wolfe coming, and leaveth the sheepe and fleeth. The hireling fleeth because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheepe. And it is not without reason that they are straight towards them; for Ministers are to have care not so much of their owne *Bodies* as of the *Soules* of others. Their mouth is the *dig* on which they hang and feed; and many build on their example. Who shall looke to the *flocke*, if the *Shepherd* be gone? Who shall governe the *Ship* in a storme, if the *Pilot* be not at the *Sterne*? Who shall prevent the theife, if there be no *watchman*? The people doe at all times need their Pastors, but most of all when the dangers are greatest. There is use of a *Pylot* in the calme, much more when the weather is stormie. What will the *Shepherd* of the peoples soules answer to the great *Shepherd*? These considerations wrought effectually and strongly upon many of the old Pastors of the Church, many of whom sealed up their profession with their blood; and preached their doctrines over againe in *Martyrdome*. *Peter* was

1 Joh. 3 16.  
Euseb. hist. l. 6. c.  
35.

willingly crucified with his feet upward. *James* and *Paul* dyed by the sword. *Ignatius* derided all torments. *Polycarpus*, *Justin*, *Cyprian*, of old; *Cranmer*, *Latimer*, *Ridley*, *Hooper*, *Farrar*, *Bradford*, *Saunders*, *Taylor*, *Rogers*, of late, and many others, laid downe their lives for the brethren in the Testimony of *Jesus*. And contrarily it remaines as a blot upon the name of *Novatus* in the Ecclesiasticall history, who being a *Presbyter*, in a time of persecution left his flocke, and disclaimed his office.

All this is true, and true it is that such cannot be too abundantly cautelous; yet some there are that have stretched these arguments too farre, as if it were unlawfull in any case, for a Minister who is fastned to any particular congregation to flye. And they have made an observation, how true I know not, neither have I opportunity to examine or disprove it; That in *Queene Maries* dayes among all those Schollers and Divines that fled, there were none but fellowes of Colledges, and *Students* in Divinity, such as had undertaken no pastorall charge; but that all the *Bps.* and seled pastors that were good, continued upon their charge, with resolution to welcome the assault when it should come. Which whether it may be good I doubt; or if it may be, yet it will but onely disco- that that was the received resolution then, which might haply be too rigid in some cases: for though a Minister be specially bound up, if by his flight, the glory of God, the Church, the cause of Religion, the soules of the people, shal receive any prejudice: yet in some cases they may flye, according to the warrantable examples of *Eli* the Prophet, of our Lord *Jesus Christ* who often with-drew himselfe during the yeares of his publicke ministry; and left a word of direction, at least of allowance, for those whom he sent to preach, *Matth.* 10. 23. The *Disciples*, *Act.* 8. 1. and Saint *Paul*, *Act.* 9. made use of this lawfull liberty.

Gen. 16 8.

There are five doores, (if not more) through which even the Minister of a Congregation may passe in his flight, without being stayed by any such question from God, as was once put to *Hagar* by an *Angel*, *Whence comest thou? and whither wilt thou goe?*

First, when there is a *Dispersion* of the whole flocke, there is no doubt but the shepheard may also escape. There seemes to have beene such a generall dispersion of the whole Church at *Jerusalem* upon that great persecution that was raised after *Steven* was stoned. *Act.* 8. 1. This is clearly the case of many Ministers of *Ireland*



*land*, whose congregations have been wholly scattered, if not massacred. And some places in this Kingdome, have felt well neare a like violence.

Secondly, when the persecution is particular, and the Congregation not aimed at, or not so directly concerned. It was the case of *Elias*, and clearly of Saint *Paul*, newly upon his conversion which much enraged his old companions, friends, and masters, so that him they sought, the Church at *Damascus* being safe, how else could *Ananias* and the brethren stay there? *Athanasius* in his second, which is his large *Apologie*, makes it appeare by a full relation, that he lay under a private particular and extreame hatred, and therefore might safely and with a good conscience leave his charge to escape the traps and snares of the *Arrian Bishops*, his enemies, because he was so thoroughly the truths friend.

This particular danger will warrant an escape, when there is but a strong presumption of it, though no actual attempt. When *Christ* knew that there was a consultation among the *Pharisees* how to destroy him, he withdrew himselfe. At another time when he perceived that the envy was increased against him, because many came in to his *Baptisme*, and so his name being growne up would and did endanger him, he left *Judea* and departed into *Galile*. Nay when he saw by their dealing with others what himselfe must looke for, when he heard that *John* was beheaded, he departed by ship into a desert place. The reverend *Musculus* wrote after these copies. He was the Preacher at *Ausburg* in *Germany*, where his zeale against Popery caused him to be so maliced, that hee was faine to be guarded to his pulpit ordinarily. When the booke of the *Interim* a mixture of Religions was sent by the *Emperour Charles* the fifth and received by the Citie, *Musculus* who could not preach in better times without danger, knew well enough there would then be no biding for him, and therefore before further prosecution got away.

The rather instance in this case so warranted by examples, because it will come home and close to the case of many able and laborious ministers, who from severall parts of the Kingdome, have beene carried by their just and grounded feares from their houses and Congregations, whom many prophane scoffers who know how to decide but not compassionate their misery, brand for cowards and runaways, and having forced them to flie, after rayle at them

for

1 King 19. 3.

Act. 9. 23.

Athanas.  
Apol. 2.

Vide etiam  
Buxtorf. in  
Abrev. Hebr. p.  
165, 166. De  
R. Simeone.

Matth. 12. 15.

Joh. 4. 3.

Matth. 14. 13.  
13.



*A Case of Conscience concerning*

for flying. I thought fit to insert this by the way, for the comfort and the clearing of those upon whom their sufferings by the *Cavalierie* in one kind or other, hath put the name of *plundered Ministers*.

Luk 4.30.

Joh.8.59

Act.14.6.

Under this head I adde, that a minister may flie from a sudden popular attempt and fury. Thus Christ did when those of the *Synagogue of Nazareth* would have throwne him downe headlong from the brow of an hill. In such a danger one may run even out of the pulpit; so *Christ* at another time, when the people instead of giving attention fell to throw stones at him, he slipt out of the pulpit. And it appears by the story, that *Paul* and *Barnabas* were in the actuall exercise of their ministry, when they fled from *Iconium* to *Lysra*. It was even out of the *Synagogue*.

Act.9.23.

And lastly let me note this also that such a particular persecution and danger, will authorise and warrant even an uncomely escape, and plead for such actions as otherwise and at other times would be unhandsome and unworthy of the dignitie of so weightie a calling. Saint *Pauls* getting over the *turne wall*, yea his *Basket* will be justified by this. *Musculus* (of whom I spake before) when he slipt from *Auspurg*, left his wife and eight children for a while without any notice whither he was gone. But most notable is that passage of the learned *Divine, John Brentius*. He was in great danger because of the *Interim*. The *Emperour* was so exasperated that he commanded hee should be brought to him alive or dead. The *Commissary* comes to *Hale* in *Saxonie*, where *Brentius* preacht, calls the Senate and tooke an oath of them not to discover his designe. But it happened by the good providence of God, that one *Alderman* came in, after the oath was taken, undiscerned; and hearing the plot, had onely time to convey away a short note with these words; *Fuge, fuge Brentius, cito, citius, citissime. Flet, flet Brentius, in hast, hast, post-hast. Brentius* tooke the warning, disguised himselfe like a *Captaine*, with *Busse*, and a patch upon one eye: and in that habit secured himselfe. And is excused by the grave writer of his story; which I also alleadge in defence of those *Scarlet cloakt, Busse-coates, gray rockets, perukes of hayre, and coloured monero's*, which have of late hid many grave and sober Ministers from the eyes of their adversaries.

I proceed to the third particular, no Minister is bound up, when it is not for the good of the Church that he should stay, but  
haply

haply much better for it that he escape. Suppose that all the darts are aimed at one breast, and an offer be made, give up such an head and all the rest shall be quiet; or it be knowne that if one be removed, all the rest shall be secured; In this case, *Divines* have held, that greater service may be done by abience and flight, then by stay. *Cyprian* professeth he went aside, for the benefit of the Church at *Carthage*. And *Peter Martyr* satisfies his friends in *Italy* by this, after he had left *Lwen* and his dignity there. Hee writes back to them; "That he could not have stayed with them, but "he had beene silenced and ill used, and that no way to their good, "but he should have made them more obnoxious, and looked upon with a narrower and more curious eye by their adversaries. "And lest they should object; But why did you not stay till it "came to extremity? He tells them, That he found it was the "opportunity that God directed them unto. That he was usefull "where he now was, but with them he could not be so. He could "not have enjoyed liberty to doe there what he would, about their "reformation, but in striving to shew them truth, he should have "wronged them of their peace. But now they might have peace, "and his helpe too, that is, by his letters and secret directions to "them. And finally he promised to returne to them againe, if ever "the doore should be opened, and it were likely he might stay among them without hazarding of them. Thus that reverend and godly man, satisfied himselfe and them. And by this another eminent person satisfied the world. The person that I meane, was that rare man, *John Cameron*, the learned, powerfull and famous Preacher of the Protestant Church at *Burdeaux* in *France*. There was an ill spirited rotten man, one *Sanangelus* a Lawyer that dwelt there, who would be taken for a Protestant, but was closely a *Papist*, or worse, an *Atheist*, he cunningly brought it about, that the good man was forced to leave his charge, and then *Sanangelus* boasted that he was a Mercenary and fled when he saw the *Woolfe* come. *Cameron* was faine to publish an Apologie to the world, to cleare himselfe of that stain, and to shew how much the whole City was concerned in his removing. And did it so satisfiyingly and so to purpose, that all men tooke notice of the base frauds of that dissembling Lawyer, and were convinced that out of conscience he did that good service to his City, by getting away to draw aside after him the harred conceived and intended against it.

*Cameron, Student in Scotland.*

4. The fourth dore for a Ministers passage out is, when hee is endangered, and others are sufficiently left to supply the care of the peoples soules. The Church received not detriment by *Pauls* flight, for it seemes *Ananias* was a teacher there, and was safe to instruct them, and haply others besides him, and the Church flourished. We have a pregnant instance to this purpose, concerning *Uriah*; who prophesied in the name of the Lord, against the Citie and against the Land, according to all the words of *Jeremiah*; and when *Jehoiakim* the King with his mightie men and the Princes heard his words, the King sought to put him to death, but when *Uriah* heard it, he fearing fled, and went into *Egypt*. He preacht the same things that *Jeremiah* did; but it seemes at that time, the Court could better beare *Jeremy* then him, and *Jeremy* being then for that season safe, and in the exercise of his office, *Uriah* provided for his present safetie, (though afterwards he was taken and made a Martyr.)

Jer. 26. 20. 21.

5. Lastly, I will mention but one other head, that it is lawfull for a Minister to flie when he hath the consent of his Church. *Paul* besides other warrants had this; The Disciples let him downe by the wall in a Basket. And when the Jewes of *Thessalonica* came to intrap *Paul* at *Berea*, immediatly the Brethren sent him away, to goe as it were by Sea. Thus *Cyprian* went aside, by the consent, yea the entreatie of the people of *Carthage*, and by the advise of *Tertullus* who was a presbyter of prime and great authoritie. *Masculus* though hee departed from *Ausparg* in great distraction, yet came and told the *Consull* or *Major* before he went, and had (as I gather) a *dismission*. But *Philip Pareus* makes it most evident concerning his reverend father, *D. David Pareus* of *Heidleberg* in the *Palatine*, that in the late popish warres against that Country which is now made desolate, when they knew a *siege* would bee laid to *Heidleberg*, the Citizens were so tender of him, that they advised, yea intreated him to be gone.

A. 9. 21.

A. 9. 17. 13. 14.

Cyp. Epist. 6.

This is that I have to say concerning the lawfull freedoms of the ministers of the word, and concerning the whole case, when it may be lawfull for any to flie, and when not. Let me shut up this discourse with a word of Application. I hope wee have not need of this case, and that God will so farre magnifie his grace towards us of this poore sinfull nation that we shall have no need of it, and this is in all my prayers; yet because we know not unto what condition

dition we may be reserved, let us get our consciences rightly settled in so necessary, so considerable a point. Wee walke most safely, when we walke after counsell. And if we thus walke, and are obedient unto the Counsells of the Lord, we may have comfort, though we be forced to flie; and may refresh our selves with that sweet place of the psalme, *Thou tellest (or numbrest) my wanderings, put thou my teares into thy bottle; are they not in thy booke?* But what comfort can there be, if we runne away from a good cause, as if wee were ashamed to *owne*, or afraid to *assist* it, and unwilling to suffer and be lost with it. *Christ* tels us that his Disciples must (if the cause so require it) even *hate their owne lives*. And that *he that saves his life shall lose it*. And truly that man is not safe, though hee saves his skin, that is not mindfull and regardfull to save his inward peace. Let us stay or flie, as the counsell of God shall direct us; else if wee be found running from God, wee may be overtaken with *Jonah* in a tempest, and fall into the *Sea*, and be swallowed of the *Whale*. Oh how would it sinke a man when his conscience should answer him some sad questions in a strange land, *I have lost my house and habitation, have I not lost God too?* Yes, *thou hast also lost God by an unbelieving heart*. I am deprived of my land, and my goods, and my state: *Have I not lost my peace too?* Yes, *Thou hast lost thy peace, through thy wary providence to shift for thy selfe, in the neglect of the publique which ought to be dearer to thee then thy selfe*. Oh let us banish all thoughts of flying, when God calls us to another service. And if we assist him when he pleaseth to honour us in accepting our service, he will either open a dore in the greatest need, or hide us in the evill day, or turne the worst of evils to our good.

*Psal. 56. 8.*

FINIS.





# MERCVRIVS AVLICVS;

Communicating the Intelligence and  
affaires of the Court, to the  
rest of the KINGDOME.

*The one and thirtieth Vveeke.*



SUNDAY. *July 30.*



E must begin this weeke with a correction of an error in the last, occasioned by a Letter of advertisements from *London*, in which was signified that the Lord *Willoughby* of *Parham* finding himselfe unable to hold *Gainsborough* against His Majesties Forces which were then coming on, had forsooke the place. Whereas the truth was, that having sent away many of his carriages towards *Lincolne*, and put his Prisoners aboard a Pinnace which was sent from *Hull*, he did intend to quit the place, as not being able to defend it; and so much he did signifie to his friends in *London*, desiring a supply both of Men, Armes, and Money, for his future subsistence. But before those intents were put in execution, he was surrounded by a part of the Earle of *Newcastles* Forces, who sate downe before it: who though they came not time enough to save the Towne from being taken, (the surprizall of it being sudden and unexpected) yet doubted not to give a good accompt of their coming thither, as this weeke will shew.

Nnn

You



You heard before that Captaine *Forbes* a *Scot* had put himselfe with some considerable forces into *Berkeley Castle*, without the leave, and against the liking of the Lord thereof; and that when it was ordered by the Lords in the *Upper House*, that he should quit the place, and yeild up the possession of it to the proper owner; the peremptory fellow made reply, that *by the sword he had got it, and by the sword he would keepe it*. And now you may be pleased to know, that after the defeat of *Waller* neare the *Devises*, many of the *Officers* of his broken Army got thither also, as a place capable enough to receive their numbers, and strong enough as they conceived to secure their persons. In confidence whereof they and the rest (whom they found there) committed many horrible out-rages on the neighbouring Subjects, without distinction either of persons, or affections; especially on those of their owne party, who having escaped pretty well before, had now most to loose. But hearing that His Majesties Forces had taken *Bristol*, and that they were not like to finde such safety there, as before they dreamed of; they forsooke the place before the coming of an enemy (as was this day certified :) the bragging *Rebell* not daring to make good his words, of *holding by the sword what the sword had gained him*.

The Reader is to be remembred also, that a *Committee* was appointed by the prevailing faction in both Houses of Parliament to goe to *Scotland*, to sollicite their *Brethren* there to aid them in this *Rebellion* against His Majestie; and that of the two Lords which were appointed by the *Upper House*, (that which goes for the *Upper House*) the one was excused because of sicknesse, and the other imprisoned for refusing. But the faction in the *Lower House* (as much the House of *Commons* as the other the House of *Lords*) being impatient of delay, sent away their Members on Wednesday last (presuming doubtlesse that their House contained virtually all the *three Estates*) to dispatch this businesse; who tooke along with them as the *Delegates* from the *New-England* Assembly, which is now on foot, two godly Ministers, that is to say, *Stephen Marshall* (one of the great Incendiaries of this Nation) and one *Malter Nye*, the better to indcare the cause to Father *Henderson*, who is returned

med again to his former factiousnesse. A charge that might have well beene spared, if the Houses had either hearkned to good counsels at home, or met with good intelligence from abroad: it being certified this day from *Paris*, that the Earle of *Lothien* (one whom His Majestie preferred to great honours and estate, from a private Gentleman) negotiating in the *French* Court the affaires of the seditious and ill affected party in the Realme of *Scotland*, was told in plaine termes by the Queene Regent there, that *if the Scots did stirre against her Brother the King of England, she would publikely and speedily declare her selfe for him, aswell against the English Parliament, as the Kingdome of Scotland.* And how it doth concerne the *Scots* to hold faire with *France*, themselves know full well.

MONDAY. July 31.

It was advertised this day that Sir *William Waller* was received into *London* on Tuesday night last with great pompe and triumph, the Ordnance discharging from the workes as hee made his entrance; and multitudes of factious and foolish people going forth to meet him, and following him unto his house, from whence he was conveyed to their Lord Maiors to supper, and most bravely feasted: and that the next day being the day of the monethly Fast, bills were sent to the Ministers of most Churches in *London*, commanding them to use a solemne Thankes-giving for his safe returne. So thankfull are these gallant hypocrites both to God and man for being most miserably beaten in all places where they have to doe; a course it seemes which they resolve to die in.

It was also signified this day, that it was Voted upon Tuesday in the *Lower House*, that the Earle of *Essex* his Army (for they meane to waste no more of their money on such unprofitable servants) should have free Billet in all places where they were to Quarter; which is a great preservative (if you marke it) of the Subjects *propertie*. As also that having disarmed the well-affected Gentry in *Surrey*, the better to inable them to defend their *Liberties*; and yet an Ordinance was passed both

Houses upon Tuesday last for rayſing Forces in that Countie to aid the *Parliament*. And it was further certified, that his *Excellencie* is in ſuch condition, that he knoweth not either what to doe with his Forces, or where to diſpoſe of himſelfe; not daring to goe towards *London*, though many baits and invitations have beene uſed to draw him thither, for feare of being *exauſterated* and put out of office by the head-ſtrong multitude; nor to repaire to *Winſor*, as he firſt intended, for feare of being too much under the command of *Venn's* great Ordnance; nor to draw back againe towards *Oxon*, he found ſo harſh a welcome from the Kings Forces when he looked laſt that way: So that as yet he keeps at *Uxbridge*, and ſolaceth himſelfe in thinking he hath nothing to doe, becauſe he hath neither power nor will to effect any thing.

But others of the instruments whom they employ in this *Rebellion* are not ſo good-natured, the Ships which they employ at Sea under pretence of giving aid to the diſtreſſed *Proteſtants* in *Ireland*, doing all the ill Offices they can to make them more and more *diſtreſſed*. For beſides that wee have heard before how thoſe Ships hinder all ſupplies from coming to them, wee do now heare, that they do uſe all poſſible diligence to hinder that we be not made acquainted with their wants and miſeries: it being certified this day from *Cheſter*, that part of this *Piratical* Fleet tooke one of the two *Poſt Barkes* which were ſent from *Dublyn* into *England* to give intelligence of the condition of His Majesties good Subjects there, carried them into *Leverpoole*, riſed all the Letters, and ſuppreſſing what they thought would not ſerve their turnes, ſent away the reſt to the great furtherance no queſtion of the *Proteſtant* cauſe.

TUESDAY. *Auguſt 1.*

This day betimes His Maſteſty accompanied with Prince *Charles* and the Duke of *Torke*, and attended by many of His Lords and principall Officers (the Gentlemen of His Maſteſties Troope having ſet forth the day before) began His journey towards *Briſtol* to ſettle the affaires thereof, to take order for the

the setting out of Ships for command of the Seas, and for the further prosecuting of the service there. The Lord Marquess of *Herford*, Generall of the West, came to Court on Sunday, which was conceived to draw on His Majesties journey. The fruit and benefit whereof His Majesties returne will make knowne unto us, if it be not otherwise before imparted.

It was advertised from *Newarke*, that His Majesties Forces having planted themselves at the siege of *Gainsburgh*, were set upon by the united powers of *Cromwell*, *Notingham*, and *Lincolne*; the Garrisons of these Townes being almost totally drawne out to make up this Army, which consisted of twenty foure Troopes of Horse and Dragoons. Against this force, Colonell *Cavendish* having the command of thirty Troopes of Horse and Dragoons, drawes out sixteene onely, and leaving all the rest for a *reserve*, advanced towards them, and ingaged himselfe with this small Partie against all their strength. Which being observed by the *Rebels*, they got betwixt him and his *reserve*, routed his sixteene Troops being forespent with often warches, killed Lieutenant Colonell *Markham*, most valiantly fighting in defence of his King and Countrey: the most noble and gallant Colonell himselfe, whilst he omitted no part of a brave Commander, being cut most dangerously in the head was strook off his horse, and so unfortunately shot with a brace of bullets after he was on the ground, whose life was most precious to all noble and valient gentlemen. Colonell *Heron* the high Sheriffe of *Lincolneshire* resolving not to trust himselfe to the knowne malice of the *Rebels*, assaied to swim the *Trent*, and was there drowned; which hapned also unto some of the common Soldiers, and to many also of the *Rebels*, of which a *Sergeant Major* of the *Darbyshire* Troopes was most considerable. For those brave Gentlemen did not sell their lives at so cheap a rate but that he enemy paid dear for them, many being slaine, some drowned, others put to flight, and the whole body of them brought into great disorder. Which being perceived by the *reserve* who were still intire, they charged so gallantly upon them before they could reduce themselves into any military posture, that they gave them an absolute defeat, killed a

great part of them, pursued them foure or five miles at the least towards *Lincolne*, doing execution on them all the way; and made themselves masters of their Baggage, Armes, and Ammunition, which the flying *Rebels* had neither list nor leisure to carry with them. Which done, they betooke themselves to the siege againe; their Forces being much increased by the coming of the Earle of *Newcastle* who (besides his most noble zeale to the Kings cause so often and so bravely manifested) will not easily forget the yet fresh bleeding wounds of a *Cavendish*.

WEDNESDAY. Aug. 2.

His Majesty being resolved for his *Bristol* journey, and being master of some shipping by the reducing of that Town, caused a Proclamation to be drawn and signed the very day before his going, commanding Mariners and Seamen to repaire to his Majesties Fleete under the command of Sir John Pennington at *Bristol*; which came out this day. In which his Majestie repeating the effect of his Proclamation bearing date the 7 of the last Moneth (the summe whereof you had in the 29 weeke) for bringing in His Majesties ships, and other ships under the command of the Earle of *Warwick*, into His Majesties Port of *Falmouth*, and putting them under the command of Sir John Pennington whom His Majestie intended to imploy at sea for this summers service, declareth that he hath appointed the said Sir John Pennington to repaire unto His Majesties City & Port of *Bristol* and other Ports within His Majesties obedience, to fit and set forth a Fleet for His Majesties service, and to command as Admirall over the said Fleet; and then doth straightly charge and command all Vice-Admiralls, Rere-Admiralls, Capitaines and other Officers of the said ships set forth without His Majesties consent to repaire to the said Sir John Pennington, by him to be employed and disposed of in His Majesties service; not onely promising his gracious pardon unto all such persons as shall obey His Majesties Commands herein, but granting them the same employments and allowances which now they hold in the said



said ships, with other clauses of advantage and encouragement contained in the aforesaid Proclamation of the 7 of July. And on the other side declaring, that for as many of the said Captaines and other Officers and Seamen, as having places in His Majesties Navie, had traiterously served against him, and did not use the meanes aforesaid for the recovery of his grace and favour, he would speedily proceed against them in a legall way, as against Traytors and Rebels.

This day came also out in print *His Majesties Declaration* to all his loving subjects after his victories over the Lord Fairfax in the North, and Sir William Waller in the West, and the taking of Bristol by His Majesties forces, commanded to be published in all the Churches and Chappells within the Kingdome of England and dominion of Wales. In which His Majesty most graciously recalling to his Princely mind, the *Protestation* which he made in the head of his small army in September last, that if it should please God to preserve him from the *Rebellion* raised against him, he would maintaine the just priviledges and freedom of Parliaments, and govern by the knowne lawes of the land, for whose defence that army was only raised, and finding by experience that aswell the said *Protestation*, as many of his messages for peace and accommodation were scandalously given out by the prevailing faction in this Kingdome, to proceed rather from weaknesse of power then the love of his people, doth now thinke fit after so many victories and successes which God had graciously vouchsafed him to renew the aforesaid *Protestation*. And doth accordingly declare unto all the world in the presence of Almighty God that he will use his utmost endeavour to preserve and advance the true *Reformed Protestant Religion* established in the Church of England, in which he was bred, hath faithfully lived, and by the grace of God was resolved to die; if the preservation of the *liberty*, and property of the Subject in the due observation of the knowne *Lawes* of the Land, shall be as equally his care, as the maintenance of his owne rights; and that he will solemnely defend and observe the *just priviledges* of Parliament, as an essentiall part of those lawes: once more conjuring all his good Subjects by the  
memory



memory of that excellent peace wherewith it pleased God to reward their duty and loyalty unto him, by their oathes of allegiance and supremacy, by whatsoever is decreed to them in this life, or hoped for in the life to come, that they no longer suffer themselves to be misled, their King dishonoured, and their Country wasted by those *State-Imposers* who have abused them all this while under false pretences; with further overtures of grace and pardon unto all such as shall redeem their past crimes by their present loyalty, and service either in apprehending and opposing such as beare armes against him or aiding him with their utmost and best endeavours to restore this Kingdome to its wonted and desired peace.

And on the other side (that the world may see the difference betwixt the government of a gracious King over his owne naturall Subjects, & that of Tyrants over their slaves & vassals) this day there came to towne in print, (printed by authority of both houses too) an *Ordinance of the Lords and Commons for the speedy raising and levying of monies by the way of EXCISE, upon severall commodities in the Kingdome of England and dominion of Wales: that is to say, upon Tobacco, Wine, Beere, Ale, Sider, Perry (whether these last foure be bought or made at home) Rayfins, Figs, Currans, Sugars, Spices, Wrought and Raw Silkes, Furrer, Hats, Laces, Leather, Linnen of all sorts, Thread, and Wier; and in a word whatever thing almost is either necessary or convenient for the life of man. This to continue for three yeares, beginning from the 25 of the last July, and for so much longer as the two Houses shall appoint (and they we know account themselves a perpetuall and immortall body:)* and to be prosecuted with such curled rigour, that if any man refuse to pay such an unjust taxe, he shall forfeit foure times the worth of the goods for which he doth refuse to pay the imposed *excise*, and for the same shall be distrained, by the officers thereunto appointed; and on default of such distresse the person so offending to be arrested, and committed to the next common prison, there to remaine till he hath paid the utmost farthing; the *trained bands, volunteers*, and all other Forces both in the City and Country, being hereby charged to compell obedience to this

Ordinance

Ordinance, if any resistance should be made. And so farewell the *Property* and *Liberty* of the *English* Subject, so much pretended by this faction to befoole the people; in case they doe not speedily unite themselves to His sacred Majesty, and joyne with him to free this Kingdome from that insupportable slavery, which they have drawne upon themselves by their owne weakness or disloyalty. But this tyranny will er'e long be overpast.

THURSDAY. *August. 3.*

It was advertised this day that *Gainsburgh* was yeilded to the Earle of *New Castle*; on whose first coming before the Towne with the rest of his Forces, the Lord *Willoughby* and other of the Rebels in it did desire a parley. Which being granted upon Saturday night last, July 29. the Commissioners for both parts did agree in the next morning early (that is to say about two of the clocke) that the towne should be delivered by five of the clocke that morning to such as his *Excellency* the Earle of *New Castle* should appoint to receive it for His Majesty; the Lord *Willoughby* and other Officers of the *Rebels* to goe away with such Armes as they brought into the towne; no common souldier to goe forth with any Armes at all, nor with more baggage then he brought thither with him; neither the Officers nor souldiers to take with them any colours of horse or foote; no Ordinance, nor any kinde of Ammunition to be carried out of the towne, or destroyed in it, nor any part of the towne or of the goods thereof to be burnt or hurt. All prisoners belonging to the Army of the Earle of *New Castle*, or which were there when the Lord *Willoughby* first entred to be left behind; and finally no townsmen to goe out of the towne under pretence of being souldiers. According to which Articles (exceeding honourable to the Conquerour) the towne was delivered up that morning at the time appointed; and the Lord *Willoughby* with his rebellious followers permitted to goe in safety unto *Lincolne*: whither I doubt not but the divine justice will er'e long pursue them, and bring them to a reckoning for the blood of those gallant Gentlemen, who lost their lives in this action.

O o o

There

There had beene a report last weeke, that Colonell *Norton* (of whom you heard in the last save one) had threatned a visit unto *Basing*, the house and Baronie of the Lord Marquesse of *Winchester*, as being a place in which he hoped to finde much spoyle, and little opposition, (for to say truth, he is a very valiant Gentleman where he meetes with no resistance:) upon the noyse whereof the Marquesse came unto the Court, and obtained some companies of Foot out of Colonell *Rawdons* Regiment (commanded by Lieutenant Colonell *Peak*) to defend the same. But before these Foot had reached to *Basing*, the Colonell attended by Captain *Saint-Barb* with his Troop of Horse, and Capitaine *Cole* with a ragged rabble of *Dragoons* had begirt the House, and pressed the siege exceeding hotly: the newes of which being brought unto His Majesty before His going unto *Bristol*, He gave order presently that Colonell *Bard* should take some Troops of Horse with him, and joyning with the Foot which were gone before, should make what speed he could to relieve the Marquesse. But little needed so much hast, for Lieutenant Colonell *Peak* had cleared the Towne, and gained the Castle as soone almost as he appeared; and though two Regiments of Horse and Dragoons under *Harvey* and *Norton* came to the Parke pale and broke in, yet they were so bravely driven back by the Foot that they ran all quite away, *Norton* and his associates made towards *Portsmouth* (as was this day certified) plaguing and plundering all the Countrie as they passed along; for feare it should be thought that he had made so long a journey, and layen out so long, to undoe no body.

It was also certified this day, that Colonell *Fenn* intends to winter at his Castle of *Windsor*, and that in evidence thereof (and to the great dishonour and reproach of the Knights of that most noble Order) he hath caused *Saint Georges* Hall there to be filled with Straw and Hay for the use of his Horses. Yet to say truth there was some good *decorum* in it, that having before made the Church or Chappell of the Order to serve as a Stable for his Horses, to the high dishonour and contempt of Almighty God; he should employ the Hall or *Refectorie* of the Order, as a roome subservient to that Stable.

FRIDAY.

FRIDAY. Aug<sup>st</sup>. 4.

It was advertised this day, that His Majesty before His approach to *Bristol* gave order that the *Major* and his Brethren should keepe their houses till they had answered for the murder of the two *martyred* Citizens, of which the world conceives some of them to be deeply guilty; His Majesty was brought into the Towne with great joy and triumph, the Acclamations of the multitude being so lowd and generall, as if they never knew till now the happinesse of being under the command of a gracious Sovereigne; and that the Bonfires in the night were so great and many, that the Towne seemed to be on fire, and folke could hardly passe the Streets for the throngs of people. And it was also certified, that His Majesty found His affaires in such a forwardnesse at His coming thither, that on the morrow being Thursday, Sir *John Pennington* (whom His Majesty hath designed *Admirall* for this Summers service) was ready to goe to Sea with eighteene sayle of tall stout Ships, well rigged and manned, and fitted with all necessaryes for present action (one of the *Whelps* being newly come in, and submitted to His Majesty the true owner, wherein were 18 faire peeces of Ordnance) the Citizens were so desirous to give His Majesty all possible content herein, that they resolved to trim and fit as many serviceable Ships as belonged unto them, till they had raised His Majesty a Fleet of fifty sayle, and put Him once more in a way of being Lord and Sovereigne of the *Narrow Seas*.

By which provisions and Sir *John Penningtons* being ready to put to Sea it seemes, the Earle of *Warwicke* will come too late to keepe them in the Rode, and hinder them from going out to Sea, as it was intended and desired. For to this end the House of Commons had appointed Master *Greene*, one of their Rebellious Agents for the *Navie* to write unto him; which Letter being intercepted came this day to *Oxon*. The substance of which Letter (for it containes many things worth our knowledge) is briefly this: That *Bristol* was delivered upon Thursday last, (the Letter you must note was dated July 31.)

that there are divers Ships of that City, some of strength which are like to be employed against the Parliament (that is to say against the prevailing faction in the two Houses of Parliament) except his Lordship did prevent it by the timely sending of two or three Ships of strength to King-rode, where the Bristol Ships ride, to secure them there (but his Lordship was by this time come to Portsmouth, and had no reason to depart from so safe an harbour, on such a dangerous peece of service) that all things in the Parliament goe but sadly on, (a truth they never would confesse if they could deny it) their Army being growne so weak that there is scarce the face of an infanterie, their 3000 men being reduced to 2500, and those hardly serviceable (scender encouragement to make his Lordship venture for a blow at Sea, when he can see no hope to be safe at Land) that moneys are so scarce with them, that they hold out with no small difficultie. ( 'tis time then for his Lordship to make shift for one, and get him gone with that which he hath already, ) and finally, that he will use his best care to provide moneys for the Marriners ( who do ever want ) which as it is an Argument that his Lordship pockets up the money, that it may serve his turne in a time of need ; so may it serve for an encouragement to the cheated Marriners, to pay themselves and deserve better of their Countrey, according to the course laid downe by His sacred Majesty in His Proclamation of the last of July which you had before.

SATURDAY. August 5.

It had beene rumoured about the middle of the weeke that a Ship of the King of *Danemarke* which was bound for *Newcastle*, laden with Armes and Ammunition, had beene intercepted by a part of the *Rebels* Fleet, and brought up the *Thames* : the certainty and particulars whereof were made knowne this day. The King of *Danemarke* had caused a Vessell of 300 Tunne to be laden with Armes and Ammunition, and gave command to one of his trusty Captaines to goe therewith to *Newcastle*, and when he came there to open his Commission, where he should finde his Majesties pleasure for the disposall of them. But this  
Ship



Ship being met at Sea by Captaine *Gatonsby*, commander of a Ship called the *Prosperous* in the *Rebels* Navie, notwithstanding that the *Danish* Captaine acted and pleaded what he could in his owne behalfe, was taken and brought up to *London*, and there commanded by the *Lower House* to be unladen, and all the Armes and Ammunition (though evidently belonging to the King of *Danemarke*) to be seized and inventoried for their use. Which coming to the knowledge of the *Danish* Captaine, he came into the House, and with great animosity and courage demanded restitution of his Masters goods; threatening, that if they were not speedily delivered, and his King satisfied both for the damage and dishonour which he had sustained, all *English* Merchants Ships should be stopped at the *Sound*, (which is the usuall passage to the *Baltick* Seas.) And when hee had done speaking he clapt on his hat, and told them (being checked for so high an insolency) that he was the servant of a King, and knew no cause why he should stand uncovered before such as they were, and in high language pressed for reparation: insomuch that our greene *States* not being used to such affronts, were much discontented, and bid the Captaine get him gone, they would heare no more. This makes the *East-land* Merchants of the Citie tremble, as having many Ships and great store of wealth on the *Danish* Seas. But the House being wise at hand, chose rather to make use of the opportunity for their present need (for they are mightily distressed for want of Armes and Ammunition) then keepe faire quarter with so potent and great a King, who may (and will in probability) avenge himselfe at full for so fowle an injury.

And yet this will not serve the turne, either to furnish them sufficiently, or keepe His Majestie without Armes, (in case those Armes and Ammunition were intended to Him.) For besides that infinite store of Armes and Ammunition which He hath got from them of late, as well in the defeat of *Waller*, as at *Bath*, *Malmesbury*, *Bristol*, *Gainsbrough*, *Dorchester*, and other places. It is further certified, that a Ship is lately come to *Scarburgh* in the North, in which are 3000 Muskets, 1000 case of Pistols,



Pistols, 150 barrels of Powder, with Bullets, Match, and other necessaries in the same proportion.

This day also we had certaine intelligence, that the Rebels in *Exeter* (as a token of their desperate case) made a sally out at the City gate, on purpose only to perswade the Kings forces that they meant to stand it out, thereby hoping to gaine better propositions; but they no sooner stirred out but presently ran in againe, though not so soone but that His Majesties forces killed sixteene of them and tooke above 50 prisoners which (it is probable) is the last attempt that ever they will offer at.

This day also wee were certified that that gallant Captaine *Lawrence* (after many sieges and victories over the Rebels) had relieved himselfe in *Corse Castle*; for the Rebels hearing that the noble Earle of *Carnarvon* (by His Majesties appointment) was coming to relieve the Captaine, durst not stay his Lordships coming, having heard too often of his valour and successe, and therefore with more hast then speed fell suddenly on the Castle, but were so bravely received by the Captaine that he killed 60 of them in the place (though he had no canon, and not a 100 muskets) the rest followed their Leaders and ran away.

But though these Rebels staid not the Earle of *Carnarvon's* coming, those of *Dorchester* were engaged to tarry, whither when the Earle came (resolving to force the Garrison in case they denied to surrender) he presently summoned the Towne, who thereupon sent to his Lordship to desire him to spare the lives of the Soldiers, and inhabitants from plundering, with liberty for the Soldiers to passe out of the Towne, leaving all their Armes, Ammunition, and Canon to be disposed of by his Lordship for His Majesties use; which accordingly was condescended unto, the Town being delivered up to His Lordship, who nobly performed his promise, which may teach all other Garrisons of the Rebels fairly to submit to His Majesties Forces, lest by forcing them to an assault they loose both their lives, & fortunes, if not a better thing. But here I must tell you that that great Observer *Sir Walter Earle*, and Colonel *Syraud* had before tooke shipping and are gone (as 'tis credibly reported) into *France*, leaving all their Garrison to make their owne composition; *Sir Walter* having now leasure to perfect his

his Observations with some new discoveries, the delivery up of *Dorchester* to His Majesty being by this time (in Sir *Walsers* judgement) a most horrible plot.

And by the same Messenger and Letters it was also certified, that *Weymouth* and *Poole* were then in Treaty, and are fully (by this time) in His Majesties possession. For you must know that the City of *Bristol*, when the Kings Forces sate downe before it, had to great and strong a Garrison, and was each way so secured with Ordnance and such fortifications as were almost invincible (all which in spite of art and danger, His Majesties Forces became masters of) that they are resolved no Works or Garrisons whatsoever shall hinder their intentions to restore the King of *England* to His lawfull rights, in which just cause God Almighty hath hitherto so blessed them.

By Letters from *Winchester* wee are advertised, that *Legay*, *Wolfrey*, *Mercer*, and the rest of the pack in the Towne of *Southampton* have sent their goods into the Island, and upon the least noyse of the Royall Army's approach will flye themselves; *Mudford* the Governour of the Towne purposing for *New-England*, for which end he hath lately turned 500*l.* silver into gold, being not worth 5*l.* when he came thither. In which Letters wee are also certified, that *Nathaniel Fines* (who late bestowed *Bristol* on His Majesty) arrived at *Southampton* on Saturday last with 80 horse, each rider having a woman behind him. And for *Nathaniell's* welcome) *Mudford* caused the Towns-men to make *Fines* one of their Burgesses, whose Chaplaine in his Sermon the day before (like a desperate wretch) charged His Majesty with *dissembling Protestations*. And *Mudford*, like a brave villain, threatned to imprison a Towns-man (if he had done it, had not the hired Governesse interposed) for affirming that the *QUEENS* Majesty was joyfully entertained at *Oxford*, for (said *Mudford*) it will discourage the well-affected to heare that the *QUEENE* is beloved in any place. And the same day this good Governour would have imprisoned a youth in the Towne for relieving a Prisoner halfe starved with hunger, saying, if such were not relieved there would be fewer Malignants alive. And before he went to Supper, he assembled 30 young Prentizes whom because he could not force to take Covenant he

he threatened to expell the Towne and transport beyond the Seas, affirming, that their refusall disgraced his government, (belike he conceives he is Governour of their consciences) and that very night he did actually imprison three women, only for saying *They thought the King was too wise to be led by ill Counsell.* And the next morning *Whitehead* and *Fielder* (two of the Governours of *Portsmouth*) came to *Southampton*, and sent their Tickers to *Sir John Mills* for 500*l.* to *Master Thomas Mills* for 200*l.* to *Mistresse Clarke* for 200*l.* to *Alderman Reynier* for 100*l.* and accordingly to others, such as stayd were either imprisoned, plundered, or carried to *Portsmouth*, for *Whitehead* said he had bene at great charge to build a Cage at *Portsmouth*, where many *Hampton* birds should sing very suddenly. And now let the Reader judge if *Nathaniel Fines*, *Mudford*, *Whitehead*, and *Fielder*, are not a Messe of rare Governours, exceeding fit for *Isaack Penningtons* owne Table.

The *London Newf-men* were pretty tame this weeke; but as some are beaten off, others come on; for this weeke a *New Intelligencer* was borne, who calls himselfe *The WEEKLY ACCOUNT of the Parliament proceedings* (*The Parliament Account* we have long looked for) *Imprimus*, he saies. *That the Benjamin gave two great overthrowes to the Children of Israel.* (*B<sup>n</sup> Benjamin* hee meanes *Cavaliers*, and his *Children of Israel* are the *Tribe of Isaack Pennington*, the two overthrowes are *Bristol* and *Round-way-downe*) Item, hee saies, that *Sir William Waller* is like that *Heroicke King Gustavus Adolphus King of Sweden* (extreme like him, as *Prince Grissia* is to *Prince Rupert*) Item, that *Sir William Waller* is commander in chiefe of all *Forces within the lines of Communication* (*The line of Communication* is a strong line to mee: tell us what it is, or strike it out of your *Account*.) Item, *That a Parliament Soldier was lately hanged upon a signe post at Bristol* (the man was hang'd a month since at *Tame* on the *Kingshead* signe post for coming to *Oxford*.) Item, (for he will allow mee no paper in his *Account*) he saies all the *Parliament Souldiers* marched out of *Bristol* with their *swords* (*Wooden daggers*, I understand, for) they had overly cudgells, and so shall you, unless in a weeke we have a better *Account*.

THE <sup>14</sup>  
ANSWER  
OF THE *Scotland*  
CONVENTION  
OF THE  
ESTATES.

To the Remonstrance and Desires of the Commissioners of the Generall Assembly,

Concerning the dangers of Religion :

W I T H

A second Remonstrance of the Commissioners of the Generall Assembly, To the Honourable Convention of Estates,  
Concerning the Remedies of the Dangers of Religion.

July 6. 1643.

At Edinburgh the 13. of July, 1643.

IT is this day thought fit and ordained by the Convention of Estates, that their Answer to the Remonstrance of the Commissioners of the Assembly: Together with this second Remonstrance given in to them by the saids Commissioners concerning the Remedies of the present dangers of Religion, be forthwith printed, And that their presents be warrand for the effect.

Arch. Primeroſe Cler. Conven.

Entred into the Register book at Stationers Hall according to order,

EDINBURGH,

Printed by Evan Tyler, Printer to the Kings most Excellent Majesty,  
Aug: 16 and Reprinted at London for Tho: Underhill. 1643.

## The Answer of the Convention of the Estates, to the Remonstrance and Desires of the Commissioners of the General Assembly.

4. July 1643.



The Convention of the Estates of the Kingdom having more particularly perused the Remonstrance, and Desires of the Commissioners of the Generall Assembly, do acknowledge, and with great care and solicitude of heart, resent the dangers of the Reformed Religion: partly, from the rebellious attempts of Papists in Ireland: partly, from their power in England where they are so long in arms: and partly, from their hopes in this Kingdom where they have their plots and correspondence amongst themselves, and with their confederates abroad: And all these the greater and the more to be taken to heart at this time, that they have the pretence of the Kings Service and Authority, the confidence of the Queens zeal to their profession, and her power to promote their designs, and the assistance of the Prelaticall partie, and of Malignants, and many others, whom upon natural and worldly respects they have drawn against the oath of their Covenant into their secret, and have united into their Combination.

These and the like dangers expressed more fully in the Remonstrance, may be more then sufficient to awake and stir up this Kirk and Kingdom, to provide for the preservation of Religion, the safety of the King, and securitie of the Kingdom, which at this time in realitie can no more be separated and divorced then in former times, when it was professed both by King and people, that the dangers of one were the dangers of all, that they had the same common friends and enemies, and did stand & fall together. But while the Estates are thinking upon that which is remonstrated unto them, many other dangers and distresses, which more directly and immediatly threaten and presse this Countrey and Kingdom, offer themselves to be considered, and are necessary to be universally known, that all men, even such as all this time have never taken Religion



to Heart, may be made sensible of the present danger of their native Countrey, wherein the private danger of every mans life, liberty, estate, and meanes is included.

The Lords of Privie Counsell, and the Commissioners for conserving the peace, have already declared, That a treacherous and damnable plot of the Irish, English, and Scottish Papists was begun to be discovered by letters found with the Earle of *Antrim*, and by the deposition of one of his servants at his death : Now the deposition of the Earle himself and of another of his servants, both upon their oaths, have been read in face of the convention, confirming what was written before of sending Ammunition to the North, and leavying of forces in this Kingdome, and bearing that the Earle had instructions for making peace betwixt the English and Irish in Ireland : Like as diverse letters are sent hither concerning a Cessation of Armes in Ireland, and the joyning of the English and Irish forces upon oath, to go for England to assist the King, as is pretended, but indeed to strengthen and aide the Popish and prelaticall party.

Our Merchants and Marriners are not onely stopped and discouraged in their trade by Ships, Frigots and Fly-botes of Dunkirk, and of Ireland, having Irish Commanders and Souldiers, but their Ships either taken or burnt ; they spoyled of their goods and moneyes, and their persons tortured, kept Captives, or sent away naked : Whereby his Majesties Subjects have suffered more by Sea upon the sudden, and in a very short time, then they did suffer all the time of our late troubles ; And no other cause of all this violence and cruelty pretended, but a Commission and Warrant from Authority.

The Earle of Newcastle's Forces, Horse and Foot, in great numbers lying at the Borders, and ready when they shall be commanded to make incursion upon the South parts of the Kingdom, as many ill-affected are no lesse willing to make trouble in the North.

If the unhappy differences between his Majesty and his Parliament, shall not be determined in a Parliamentarie way, but by the Sword ; Not onely shall the Army in Ireland be in danger to be lost, but the whole Kingdome will be involved in the common Calamity.

Nor is it wisdome, against the continuall rumours and threatnings of forraign invasion, to be so negligent and secure, as if there were no appearance or possibility of danger from without ; experience hath proved the contrary in former times. And although there were no other ground,



Reason doth teach that Princes and States use to observe the opportunities of divisions and breaches amongst their neighbours.

Although the causes of calling a Convention at this time were urgent enough, yet the providence of God watching over this Kirk and Kingdom for good, hath discovered diverse of the dangers of Religion and of the Kingdom, and brought them to light in this opportunity, while the Convention of Estates are sitting, as if they had been called together to be informed of them, and to provide remedies against them. And therefore as the Convention is resolved to take this matter, which is of so publicke and deep concernment, into their serious consideration; so do they desire and require that the Commissioners of the Assemblies (who according to their duty, and the laudable example of the Assemblies of this Kirk in former times have represented the dangers of Religion) will also with diligence think upon the best and most powerfull remedies, and remonstrate them to the Convention, that by the blessing of God upon their joynt endeavours, so many approaching and imminent miseries may be turned away: And the Religion and Peace, which God Almighty of his singular mercy hath granted to this Kirk and Kingdom, may be preserved and transmitted unto the after Generations. Which shall be honour to God, safety to the King and his posteritie, and happinesse to his people.

*Arch. Primrose Cler. Conven.*

To the Honourable Convention of Estates, *The humble Remonstrance of the Commissioners of the Generall Assembly, Concerning the Remedies of the present Dangers of Religion, July 6. 1643.*

**A**lthough it be more easie, especially in a time of many corruptions and great difficulties, to complain of diseases and dangers, then to finde out the right cure and remedies: Yet from our conscience of dutie in the charge committed unto us at this time, from our confidence in God, whose providence hath discovered the dangers, and will in his own time provide sufficient remedies, by the example of the Generall Assemblies of this Kirk, and in obedience to your Lordships commands, we finde a necessity laid upon us, and are most willing, according to our knowledge, to show what we conceive to be the best remedies, leaving the further consideration of them to your Lordships wisdom.

Politick and wordly men are indifferently disposed towards every Religion, and do conceive that the knowledge of a few principles, joyned with the profession of Religion, is sufficient for Salvation, without descending into particular Differences and Controversies: But this cannot be a remedy, for we know that Heresies and Sects have been of old, and must still be, that these who are approved may be made known. Reconcilers, who under the specious pretext of Pacification betwixt Protestants and Papists, intend no other thing, but in a subtile and crafty way to reduce the Protestant Kirks into Antichristian servitude, and in the golden cup of the whore of Babel, to propine again unto us all their abominations and filthinesse. These are also to be rejected and abhorred, as presenting us with deadly poyson in stead of remedies.

A third there is, but an insufficient remedy; Wee do with all thankfulness and reverence, as becometh good Subjects receive the Kings Majesties Declaration of His Intentions, for maintaining our Religion, and esteem it no small happinesse to live under a Prince orthodox in the faith, and a Nurse-father of the Kirk: But His Majesties Disposition to Religion, can neither oblige His Royall Successours, as the frequent change of Religion in England, and other kingdoms, with the change of their Princes, hath taught us; Nor can it preserve us from the plots and power of Papists, as we have even now learned from the conspiracie of the Irish, English, and Scottish papists: If they have been devising mischief against us in the very time of His Majesties Declaration, what may be in all reason expected afterward from the immortall hatred, and uncessant working? And what may we look for presently, if while they are now in Armes, their fury shall have successe, and they suffered to prevaile? We pray, *God save the King*: but we may say, *Cursed be their anger, for it is fierce, and their wrath, for it is cruell.*

The first true remedy, which Christian Piety and Prudence minister unto us, is, to receive the Love of the Truth, and to labour for the Power of Godlinesse. It is never enough observed, That Papistry, Arminianisme, and diversity of sects, are the just judgement of God upon many in the Reformed Kirks for their formality in Religion: Without this one remedy, all other remedies will want the blessing of God, and prove unprofitable.

A second remedy is to abhorre and detest Peperie, not upon conceit or common opinion, but from the particular and distinct knowledge of the

grosse heresies in doctrine, manifold idolatry in worship, and cruel tyrannie in government, which it teacheth, defendeth, and practiseth; from which the Lord in a wonderfull mercy hath delivered us; against which so many thousands of the holy and faithfull Martyrs of Christ, have borne record of the word of God, and testimonie of Jesus Christ, and washed their robes in the blood of the Lambe; And by which the Lord suffereth us and other Reformed Kirks this day to be threatned again, because we have been unthankful for our deliverance, not knowing the greatnes of the ill from which we have been delivered, nor considering the heaviness of that Antichristian yoke, if it shall be again wreathed upon our necks: Which would to God all Kings, Princes, Republikes & people would take to heart.

The third is, that all true Patriots and Professours of the reformed Religion, may learn to discern and know the enemies of the Kirk; which will be found not to be Papists onely, but Malignants also; who under colour of the same profession with us, oppose themselves to the preservation of Religion here, unto the reformation of Religion in England, no lesse then Papists; who make bands contrary or prejudicial unto our National Covenant; who frame and present Petitions, crossing the Petitions of the Commissioners of the Generall Assembly; give information to the Kings Majesty contrary to the informations of the Kirk and Kindome; do oppose the publishing of the necessary Declarations of the Kirk; reade papers in the Assemblies of Gods people without warrant from the Kirk; and offer to Presbyteries in all the quarters of the Kingdome, papers contrary to the Declarations of the Commissioners of the Assembly; do hold their meetings against the Convention of Estates; and if they could finde Ministers to joyne with them, would keep Ecclesiasticall Assemblies against the Assemblies of the Kirk: Which is the most factious, the most scandalous, and the most dangerous way of division and separation that hath been heard of in any Kirk or Kingdome: And therefore by Ecclesiastick censures and civil punishments, to be speedily and powerfully suppressed as a most pernicious practice, tending to the destruction both of Religion and Peace of this Kingdome, and directly opposite to the propagation of the Gospell, and reformation of other Kirks, which God by his providence is bringing to passe, and is ardently desired, and constantly hoped for by all the godly.

The fourth is, If after all good means are used to reduce the enemies of Religion, whether Papists or Malignants, to repentance and obedience, the Kirk be constrained by their obduracy to proceed to the sentence of

Excommu-

Excommunication; Some solid course may be taken, that the civil punishment, which is according to Law, may be really and timously inflicted, that neither the Law be eluded, nor any delinquent for his greatnesse, or any other respect, be exempted or spared.

The fifth is, Because through want of sure and timous intelligence, a great part of the people are either left to uncertaine rumours, or slighted by the negligence of common bearers, or abus'd with malignant informations, that they neither know their own danger, nor the danger of Religion and Countrey; A solid order would be set down whereby intelligence may go forth from Edinburgh to every Shire, and so to every Presbytery and particular Pastor, that the people may be informed both of their danger and duty; and an account taken of the faithfulness of men, to whom matters of so necessary and publick concernment shall be committed, and of particular Ministers how they acquit themselves in matters of so great trust.

The sixth is, That for the more speciall applying of some Clauses of our Nationall Covenant against the present evill, certaine Articles may be framed to be subscribed and consented unto by all the well affected; that we may be more strongly united amongst our selves in the cause of God; and that all Malignants and secret enemies, who hide themselves under their subscription of the Covenant, may be discerned and discovered.

The seventh is, That a Remonstrance be sent to the Kings Majesty from the Honourable Convention of Estates, expressing the present dangers of the Kirk and Kingdome, with a renewed supplication for unity in Religion, and uniformity of Kirk government, for disbanding of all Popish forces, and for using of meanes for the Queenes conversion.

The eighth is, Although we be very wel assured of the Wisedome and good Affection of this Honourable Convention, for which as a meane of great happinesse to this Kirk and Kingdome at this time; we heartily blesse the Lord: Yet from the necessity of our duty, which inforceth us to exhort civill powers to all Vigilancie and Faithfulness, and according to the laudable example of the Generall Assemblies of this Kirk in former times of publike danger, We must crave leave to intreat and excite your Lordships speedily to thinke and resolve upon the best wayes, for the safety and security of the Kingdome against insurrection of Papists and Malignants from within, and invasion from without; which may also be a meane to try and discover the minds of the disaffected; and to commit so great trust to none, but to such as are knowne to be zealous of the safety  
of

of Religion, of the Kings honour, and peace of the Kingdome.

The ninth is, Because the hearts of people are secure and slow in apprehending danger, and the enemies suggest that there is not any great cause of feare; whensoever any letters of negotiation and traffique betwixt Papists and Malignants here, and in other places, are intercepted, or any plots or conspiracies discovered, the same without respect to any persons whatsoever, may be published in print, and sent through the Kingdome, that all may be warned of the danger, and be in redinesse to use the best meanes for their safety, and that such wicked instruments may be censured and punished.

The tenth is, That for the credit of the Gospel, for keeping the publick Faith of the Kingdome, and for promoting the desired and intended Unity in Religion, and Uniformity of Kirk-government, all the Articles of the Treaty of Peace betwixt the two Kingdomes, be inviolably observed, and justice done without partiality upon the controuersers. And forasmuch as at the time of Reformation, and in our late Declarations and Remonstrances, in the time of our troubles and since, the expressions of our desires of unitie, and amitie with the Kingdome of England, have beene many and large: and we have many times from our feeling and feares, made open profession, that the not reforming, or the endangering of Religion there, hath an influence upon our Religion, and the mutuall Peace of the Kingdomes: We doe humbly entreat, according to the example of the Generall Assemblies of this Kirk, that this honourable Convention may be pleased to take into their gravest consideration, the renewing of the League and Association with England, for defence of Religion against the common Enemy, and how far the same may be extended against Prelacie and Popish Ceremonies, for uniformity in externall worship and Kirk-government.

Thus have we pointed at the principall remedies, which we humbly present to be more particularly resolved upon by this honourable Convention as a matter worthy of the gravest deliberation, and the greatest care and diligence: wherein, as we shall be required, we shall most willingly according to our place and calling, contribute our counsels and endeavours, beseeching God, who never forsaketh his people, when trouble draws near, first to direct, and next to fulfill all your counsels to his own glory, and the publick good.

A. Ker Cler. Com. Gen. Ass.

FINIS.



The London Malignants disarm'd, (89)  
 Fifty thousand pounds to be raised,  
 The Lord Capels Forces dispersed,  
 The Cavaliers from Gloucester repulsed.

Numb. 12



Knowl. 4

**Mercurius Civicus.**

**LONDON'S  
 INTELLIGENCER.**

OR,

Truth impartially related from thence  
 to the whole Kingdome, to  
 prevent mis-information.

From Friday August 11. to Thursday August 17. 1643.



Both Houses of Parliament and the City of London, have  
 a long time been much indangered through the Plots  
 and conspiracies of many malignant Inhabitants in that  
 City, the Suburbs, and parts adjacent; notwithstanding  
 which, that City, which in many other things of great  
 consequence to this Nation both in former and latter time, hath af-  
 forded

M



forded many glorious and observable presidents to other parts of the  
 Kingdome; and now more especially of late, in regard of the compli-  
 ance of the best and greatest party in it, with the proceedings of the  
 high and honourable Court of Parliament now assembled; yet out of  
 too much lenity and compassion to ~~the most~~ deadly and blood-thirsty  
 enemies, whom perhaps they hoped yet at last would have their eyes  
 open to see the misery wherein themselves and the whole Kingdome  
 were by the potency of papistlicall and Delinquent Counsellors with  
 his Majestie, have by that meanes suffered many other well affected  
 places in this Kingdome to goe before them in securing the persons and  
 estates of their Malevolents: but at last seeing all expectations of con-  
 version, concurrence, or compliance of the Malignants with them to  
 be altogether frustrate; the honourable Committee for the safety of  
 the City of London, lately issued out Warrants to severall of the Cap-  
 tains of the trained Bands, and to some of the Auxiliary Forces of the  
 City of London, to dispose themselves in the most convenient manner  
 they could into severall places about the City, there to search the hou-  
 ses of all ill affected Malignants for Armes or other things of danger-  
 ous consequence, and likewise to secure such persons, which to the  
 rejoycing and comfort of all persons well affected to the Common  
 cause, they put in effectual execution on Saturday last, being the twelfth  
 of August in the afternoon; and searching in divers Malignants hou-  
 ses in Westminster, Covent-Garden, Southwicks, and severall other pla-  
 ces (for the most part without the City) they found great store of  
 Armes and Ammunition, as Muskets, Pikes, Pistols, Carbines; and in  
 Westminster (more particularly) many Bowes and Arrows (which many  
 had provided for some extraordinary occasion) all which will now  
 serve for the supply of the Forces now raising for the defence of the Par-  
 liament and City. They also surprized the persons of sundry de-  
 perate Malignants, to the number of about 400. whom for the present  
 they conveyed to Saint Dunstons Church under Pauls, where some of  
 them having taken the Oath to be true to the Parliament and City in  
 the defence thereof against the Forces raised by the King, and to con-  
 tribute for the defence thereof, &c. have been discharged upon bail; and  
 others who were obstinately refusers, and other wise found Delinquent,  
 were conveyed to severall Prisons about London, some to London House,  
 others to the Lord Peters, and others to Ely and Winchester houses; all  
 which places were fortunately the last weeke, for the most part, cleared

of the Gallies formerly taken in the Kings Army, and other notorious Delinquents, who are now conveyed on Ship-board under decke, and shall suddenly (with some other of their fellow-Malignants) be sent (as is conceived to forraign Plantations) for better security, so that this course being exactly taken thorowout all the City, it will animate the hearts of all those that are faithfull to the Parliament, who before were much disheartned with feares, least upon the approach of the Kings Forces, this City (through the potency of the Malevolents) should (as some other places have lately beens) delivered up into the hands of the Kings forces, and themselves, their wives and children and estates, made subject to the fury and violence which now (through Gods mercy) it is hoped will be happily prevented.

Another thing also much conducing to the safety of the City, and therefore fit to be publikely communicated, it being at this time in agitation, is the desire of the Committee for the Fortifications for the City of London, who have this weeke published, That if any person whatsoever can make any just exception against any of the Gunners or Matrosses now employed in any of the Forts belonging to the City of London, they may repaire to Coopers Hall any evening about five of the clock, where the said Committee will be ready to receive their information; so that the said Gunners or Matrosses being any wayes found unfaithfull or incapable, they shall be removed from any further employment in these places of so great trust and consequence.

The generall report in the City this weeke is, that Sir William Brereton's forces have lately slaine nere a thousand of the Lord Capels forces, between Westchester and Sturmerbury most of which (as is certainly informed) were Country men inhabitants of those Countiees whom he had forced to take up armes against their will, and placed them as Marquetrees in the forefront, and then set divers of his owne Cavaliers with Pikes to keepe them from any retreat, and then afterwards himselfe in person followed with his Horse; so full of valour and Nobility did this Lord shew himselfe, in not daring to approach the fight in person, but dealt so inhumanely with the Countrey men as if they were no Christians, and their precious blood of no price or esteeme.

On Friday last, Aug. 11. There came out in print an Ordinance of the Lords and Commons now assembled in Parliament for the speedy suppressing and amputing of men which was to this effect, That whereas the true Protestant Religion the Lawe and liberties of the subject, and the

the Parliament were in danger to be subverted, idolatry and tyranny like to be introduced by the force and power of severall Armies raised by the pretence of the Kings authority, consisting of Papiſts, and other dangerous and ill affected persons of this Kingdome, and Irish Rebels, and of divers popiſh Souldiers, and others of forraigne Nations being not under the Kings obedience, for the ruine and destruction of this Kingdome, unlesse timely prevented: It is therefore ordained by the Lords and Commons, that the Committee for the Militia of the City of London, the Deputy-lieutenants, and Committees of Parliament in every County, City, or place within this Realme, or any two or more of them within their severall jurisdictions, shall and are thereby authorized from time to time untill other Order be taken by both Houses of Parliament, to raise, levy and presse such number of Souldiers, Gunners, or Chirurgions for the defence of the King, Parliament and Kingdome, as shall be appointed by both Houses of Parliament, or by my Lord Generall. And that if any person or persons shall wilfully refuse so to be impressed for the said service, that then they shall be committed to prison till they shall yeeld obedience or pay the summe of 10 l. to the said Committee or Deputy-lieutenants, to be implied for the supply of the said service; with a proviso of exception, of any Clergyman, Scholler, or Student in any of the Universities, Innes of Court, or Chancery, or houses of Law, or any the Trained-bands in any County, City, or place, or any person rated in the last Subsidys granted by the Parliament; or the sonne of any person rated at 5 pound goods, or 3 pound in lands in the Subsidy-booke; or of any person of the degree of an Esquire, or upwards; or the sonne of any such person; or the sonne of the widdow of any such person; or to the pressing of any person under the age of 18. or above the age of 50. or of the Members or Officers of either House of Parliament; or of the meniall servants of the Members or Officers of either the said Houses, or any of the assistants of the Lords House, or of any of their meniall servants; or any the inhabitants of the Isles of *Wight* or *Angelsey*, or Cinqueports, or of any Marriner, Seaman, or Fisherman.

It was also the last weeke ordered by the Lords and Commons assembled in Parliament, that 10 thousand coats, shirts, with shooes, and snapackets shall be forthwith provided for the Souldiers which are already raised or shall be raised for their recruitall of the Lord Generals Army, and for shote which shall so be raised under the command of Sir  
Army

*William Waller*, to be distributed amongst them according as they shall want or have occasion.

¶ The Lords and Commons taking into their serious consideration the danger of the six associated Counties of *Norfolke*, *Suffolke*, *Essex*, *Cambridge*, *Hertford*, and *Huntington*, if the Earle of *Newcastle* should with his whole Army fall upon them, have passed an Ordinance of Parliament whereby they have appointed *Sir John Hobart*, *Sir Jo. Palgrave*, Knights and Baronets, with severall others to be a standing Committee, and to have power to order the affaires of the aforesaid associated Counties; And they have ordered, that the Divines of the Assembly that are Reliants of the associated Counties, and now attending the Assembly, shall be desired to goe downe into their severall Counties to stirre up the people there to rise for their owne defence; and also that the six associated Counties shall forthwith raise a body of ten thousand Foote and Dragoones to withstand the enemy. And that 4000 Foot formerly ordered to be raised in those Counties; or which are already raised, shall be accounted part of the said 10000 men: And doe also desire that the Lord Generall the Earle of *Essex* will grant a Commission to the Earle of *Manchester* to be Serjeant-major-generall of all the Forces raised in those six associated Counties.

From the North it is informed, that the Earle of *Newcastle* hearing of the readinesse of the Scots to march into those parts, and of the surprisall of about 100 of his Forces by *Sir Thomas Fairfax* neere *Selby*, is now retreated out of *Lincolnshire* into *Yorkshire*. As also that there is a ship lately come to *Scarborough*, in which are 2000 Muskets, and a thousand case of Pistols, and about 150 bartels of Powder, with March and Bullets, which (as it is thought) came from *Holland* for the supply of his Army; which it is hoped will notwithstanding this supply be distressed by the army of the Scots, upon their meeting.

The great expectation of many well affected people concerning the publishing of the fourth part of *Mr. Pryn's* books of the *Soveraigne power of Parliaments*, will before the end of next weeke be satisfied, for that it will then come forth, with a compleat Appendix to the whole worke, and doth containe many undeniable arguments sufficient to convince the most resolved Malignants or Royalists, unlesse they have wholly shut their eyes from beholding, their ears from hearing, and their hearts from beleiving or giving credit unto the most apparent verities.

On Monday last (being the 14 of August, his Excellency the Earl of Essex, had a generall muster made of all those Horse which were then with him at *Kingstane upon Thames*, at which time and place appeared above three thousand horse, besides those many horses which are daily listed for to go unto him, and the Forces now raising under the command of Sir *William Waller*, both whose Armies it is conceived will be very shortly compleated, and be able to besiege *Oxford*, or to prosecute any other Designe for the good of the Kingdom.

By Letters from the Westerne parts it is informed, That the Cavaliers have lately had two great repulses, both from *Glocester* and *Exeter*; from the former of which places they were beaten off with the losse of about eight hundred men, which is also confirmed by those who came lately from *Oxford*, who certifie that the Drums beate up there on Monday morning last for the speedy sending away of all the Chirurgeons they could then possibly get, to take care of, and to dresse those Souldiers which were wounded in the assault made against that City. The said repulse so much incensed the Cavaliers, that they sent for most part of their Forces from *Oxford* to fall upon *Glocester*, resolving (if they can possibly) to starve and fire it. But the truly valiant and faithfull Commander, Colonel *Masse*, is as formerly resolved to maintain it, and not to yeeld it up upon any termes whatsoever unto any of those popish Cavaliers and Irish Rebels, so that it is believed that City will yet hold out this moneth or longer, if by that time sufficient Forces may bee sent from *London* or any other place to raise the siege, or otherwise to divert the intencion of the Cavalier.

The City of *London* are very suddenly to raise the sum of fifty thousand pounds for the maintenance of the Forces raised for the defence of that City and both Houses of Parliament, for which purpose Letters lately issued from the Lord Major to raise the said sum of money proportionably of every particular Company in the said City.

There hath been lately dispersed in severall parts of this City, a scandalous Pamphlet printed at *Oxford*, intituled, Observations upon the two Covenants: the one appointed to be taken by his Majesty, and the other appointed by the Parliament; concerning which book it being already answered, and the difference betweene the two Covenants manifested, it will be unnecessary to make any observation, onely for the satisfaction of those which are desirous to peruse both Copies, I have here inserted a true Copie of the said Covenant.



**Oxford Oath or Covenant to be taken by all His Majesties loyall Subjects, for the maintenance of the true reformed Protestant religion, His Majesties just rights, and the Priviledges of Parliament.**

**I** Resting fully assured of His Majesties Princely truth and goodnesse, do freely and from my heart promise, vow, and protest in the presence of Almighty God, that I will to the utmost of my power, and with the hazard of my life maintaine the true Protestant Religion established in the Church of England, His Majesties sacred person, His Heires and lawfull Successors, His Majesties just power and priviledge, and the just power and priviledge of Parliament; against the Forces under the conduct of the Earle of Essex and against all other forces whatsoever, contrary to His Majesties command; and I do beleve that the raising, and employing of Forces by His Majesty for the purpose and cause beforementioned, to be most just and necessary; and I will doe my utmost endeavour to procure and Re-establish the peace and quiet of the Kingdomes: And that herein His Majesties Subjects may fully enjoy their liberty and property according to the Law of the Land; and will neither divulge nor communicate any thing to the said Earle, his Officers or to any other, so hinder or prejudice the designs of His Majesty in the conduct or employment of His Army; and I doe beleve the Subjects of England are not obliged by any Act of State, Vote, Ordinance, or Declaration, made or to be made, either by the Kings Majesty solely or by the Lords and Commons singly or jointly, without His Majesties expresse consent; saving such as are, or shall be in execution of or according to some knowne Law, Custom of the Realme, or Statute enacted by the King, Lords and Commons in Parliament; and I doe further protest and vow in the presence of Almighty God, that I will not take nor beare Armes, but by the expresse Warrant of His Majesty, or by authority justly derived from His Majesties immediate Warrant.

The which Oath is apparent to the whole World to be absolutely contrary to the Lawes of this Kingdom, which never invested the King with an absolute power to call forth His people to warre at His owne pleasure. but it is no wonder to see it forced upon Protestants against all Law and reason, with so much rigorous and cruel usage if refused by them, when many Legions of Papists, and some Irish Rebels, have not refused to enter into that Covenant; and thereby intend as well to endeavour the establishment of the Protestant Religion, as the Lawes of the Land, against and contrary



trary to both which, they are now in open Armes for extirpation of both; and It is not unknown to His Majesty, whom some of that Religion menaced to poison, if he should refuse to comply with them in their designs. So really doe they intend to maintaine the Protestant Religion, and the safety of His Majesties Person.

On Wednesday, *Aug. 16.* An Ordinance passed both Houses for the speedy impressing of twenty thousand men to goe forth in defence of the King, Parliament, and Kingdome, which Forces both Officers, Chirurgions, Trumpeters, and Souldiers, are to be raised out of the six associate Counties of *Norfolke, Suffolke, Essex, Cambridge, Hartford, and Huntingdon.* And the same day also the Earle of *Manchester*, now made Serjeant-Major-Generall of all the said Forces raised in those Counties, went out of *London*, towards *Cambridge*, where about foure thousand Horse, already raised in the said associated Counties, are to be ready to attend him. And the Earle of *Denby* is appointed Speaker.

Also this day the House of Commons committed *Colonell Martin*, a Member of the said House prisoner unto the Tower.

*This is Licenced, and entered into the Register-booke at Stationers Hall, according to order.*

**LONDON,**

Printed for *John Wright and Thomas Bates*, and are to be sold at their shops in the Old-baily, 1643.

AN  
ORDINANCE  
Of the  
LORDS and COMMONS  
Assembled in  
PARLIAMENT.

For the speedy Pressing of 20000  
Souldiers, with so many Gunners, Trum-  
petors, and Chirurgions as shall be thought fit by  
the Committees for the six Associated Coun-  
ties of *Norfolke, Suffolke, Essex, Cambridg, Her-  
fo, d-shire and Huntingdon shire*, with the C-  
ty of *Newch*, and Ill: of *Ely*.

Die Mercurii, 16 Augustii, 1643.

Ordered by the Lords Assembled in Parliament,  
that this Ordinance bee forthwith Printed and  
Published.

John Browne Cler, Parliament,

August 17 London, Printed for John Wright,  
in the Old-Bailey. 1643.

## ORDINANCE

PARLIAMENT.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO  
LIBRARY

Discontinued by A. J. 1911.  
 The book is the last of a series of  
 books published by the same  
 publisher.

August 11, 1900, Tuesday

(1)  
5  
**AN**  
**ORDINANCE**  
**Of the**  
**LORDS and COMMONS**  
**Assembled in**  
**PARLIAMENT.**

---

Die Mercurij, 16. Augustij, 1643.

**W**hereas by an Ordinance  
of the Lords and Com-  
mons in Parliament  
for the Impresting of  
Souldiers, the Deputy Lieute-  
nants and Committees of Parlla-  
ment, in every County or place  
Within this Realme, or any two or  
more of them in their severall Li-  
mits and Jurisdictions, are autho-  
rized

rized (from time to time untill other  
 Order be taken by both Houses of  
 Parliament) to Rayle, Leaby, and  
 Imprest, such numbers of Souldi-  
 ers, Surgions, and Gunners, for the  
 defence of the King, Parliament,  
 and Kingdome, as shall be appoynt-  
 ed by both Houses of Parliament,  
 or by the Lord Generall; It is now  
 Ordered and Ordained by the said  
 Lords and Commons in Parlia-  
 ment, That 20000 Souldiers,  
 With so many Gunners, Trumpe-  
 ters, and Chyrurgions as the Com-  
 mittee of the House of Commons for  
 the six Associated Counties, of  
 Norfolke, Suffolke, Essex, Cambridge,  
 Herts, Huntington, With the City of  
 Norwich & the Isle of Ely, or any five  
 of them shall thinke fit, shall bee  
 forthwith rayled and Imprested,  
 within the said six Associated  
 Counties, and the said Citie of  
 Nor.

Norwich, and Isle of Ely, for the defence of the King, Parliament, and Kingdome, according to the severall proportions to be set upon the said Counties, and City, together with the said Isle of Ely, by the said Committees of the House of Commons, or any five of them, And the Deputie Lieutenants and Committees of Parliament, of the said Counties and places or any two of them, are hereby authorized and required, forthwith to raise the said number of Souldiers, together with the said Gunners, Trumpeters, and Chyrurgions, or so many of them as the said Committee of the House of Commons shall thinke fit, within their respective Counties and Limits, according to the proportions, set, or to be set upon the said Counties and places by the said Committee of the House of



Commons, or by any five of them;  
 And it is lastly Ordered and Or-  
 dained, that the said Committee of  
 the House of Commons, or any five  
 of them, shall have power by vertue  
 of this Ordinance, to doe every  
 thing for the providing of Monies  
 and all manner of necessaries, for the  
 accomodation and support of the  
 Forces rayled, or to be rayled, w<sup>th</sup>  
 in the said Associated Counties  
 and places, at the charge of the said  
 Counties and places indifferently to  
 be rated, as the emergent necessity of  
 the Service, shall from time to time  
 require.

FINIS.

*K. pp. London*  
 THE  
 PARLIAMENT  
 SCOUT:

Communicating His Intelligence

TO THE  
 KINGDOME.

---

From *Thursday* the 10. of *August*, to *Thursday* the 17. of *August*. 1643.

---

O Ur Scout is returned very empty of newes this weeke, and that little that he brings is very uncertaine, he tells us that Gloucester hath been severall times assaulted by the enemy, and that most furiously; and that they have been as manfully repulsed, with the losse of more then a thousand men: That these repulses have much enraged the enemy and caused them to send for new Supplies from all parts, being resolved to gaine it, or to hazard their whole Army upon it, but

H

the City is couragious, some say Colonell *Massey* hath declared to his Majesty that he had rather loose his life with the Town and die in honour, then surrender it and loose eternall honour: The Seige began on Sunday last was Sevensnight, it hath held out longer then Bristoll already: and if it hold out but one Fortnight longer no doubt but between my Lord Generall and Sir *Will. Waller* there will be a Party sent out that will put fire in their breeches: For which purpose there is all the hast that may be, making of clothes, shoes, shirts and stockings; and likewise of horses, all being swept away where they are found, both friends, Newters and enemies, in so much that it is guessed, there cannot be lesse then ten thousand horse that are and will be taken up: My Lord Generall is also mustering his horse and foot, so that our Scout hopes to tell you of a brave Army marching the next weeke, and though it now raines and may make the way deepe for the Artillery, yet that will not be stood upon; but they will away without the upon a full carriage, and though the raine did us hurt at home, yet now we hope it will do our enemy more hurt, who is besieging Gloucester, by hindring their approches, mines and batteries, and it may be send them back both shot beateen, and weather beateen: And whereas our Scout met with a Royall Scout who tells him that the Kings Forces so soone as they have taken Gloucester, intend to march in all hast for Windsor, and so to London, it may be they may finde Gloucester so hard a pull, that they will have no minde to advance suddenly, and that before they returne from the taking Gloucester, my Lord Generall and the Forces of Sir *William Waller* may have begint Oxford: And though the Parliaments back-friends have bragged in London, ever since Bristoll was taken that the Royall Army would be at London within three weeks, it may be they may prove three of *Daniels* weeks, for as it was said of Jerusalem, so it may be said of London.

don, if they be unanimous among themselves all the power of the Romanes cannot take it, and yet when Rome was Heathen it was more famous for warre then now it is Antichristian. And if the City follow close upon the disaffected party, carrying them by scores to prisons, what with Pressing and what with imprisoning, and what with flight for fear, they will leave a very inconsiderable party, and to incourage the Londoners, let them but take notice that grand *Cayre* slew ten thousand Turkes before they lost their City after the Turkes were entred, and shall London feare when the power that comes against them is not above ten thousand? As for Exeter our Scout tells us that its in a pretty good condition, and is like to hold out, and that it hath relieved it selfe. Our Scout met this week with a Commander of Windsor, who told him that *Dall-beare* was sent to fall upon some horse plunderers that were about Bele neere Redding, and lighted upon a Troope and brought them away, there were seven Officers, he killed five of them: And that Colonell *Ven* sent out Captaine *Baxter* with some few men to meet with my Lord of Holland, who had a passe to go to Marlow to his daughter the Lady *Pagest*, not conceiving it fit to aske a passe to go directly to Oxford, if he had any such minde, but the Captaine came a mile or two short, so that he was got to his daughters before he overtooke him, but yet he was so put to it, that the axletree of his Coach brake, when they were come to the house they found it so fortified and furnished with Muskietiers, that they saw it not possible to be taken, yet they summoned it, and at last my Lord appeared aloft and demanded what they would have, they answered they had warrant from Colonell *Ven* to take him & bring him back, but he replied, he had

no power but from the House, and therefore he need not be so fierce, the party returned, and at their returne they found their Colonell had seized divers Trunks of his Lordships going for Marlow, wherein were some good booty: Our Scout had nothing else from thence, but the unhappy escape out of Windsor Castle (by mining through the wall) of Colonell *Cockerm*, Sir *Edmund Fortescue*, and Sir *Francis Darington*.

Our Scout went not this weeke, so farre as Chester and those parts; and therefore can onely report to you some kinde of skirmish between the Lord *Capell* and Sir *William Bruerton*, in which Sir *William* is said to have the better; he heard at a distance, as if some attempt had been made upon Chester, but doth not say any thing of any certaine, it is true the Manchester men are brave fellowes, but whither they would thinke it fit to send a party so farre as Chester is doubtfull.

For the North our Scout hath also but by report that some of the Scots are come into Barwick, and that they drew to the borders, by the next you shall be better informed: As for the Earle of Newcastle's Forces they are most about *Newarke*, and begin to impose heavy Taxes upon *Lincolneshire*; requiring many horse and much money of them, having beggered *Yorkshire*, *Lincolne* is to be the next, as for his advance it is conceived it will not be speedy, because he fears my Lord *Fairfax* will be active in *Yorkshire*, and that *Yorkshire* will be glad to close with him, being weary of his yoke. My Lord *Fairfax* having got Armes to furnish such as come unto him, and is like to get fifteen hundred of his old



old men lately taken prisoners for the exchange of Colonell *Goring*, and some prisoners that were taken with him.

There are as our Scout heares as he came from *Boston*, a party either advanced or upon advance into *Holland*, and so either to come to *Boston* that way, or to passe to *Lin* in *Norfolke*; but Colonell *Cromwell* will it is hoped ere long be able, not onely to drive his parties to the maine body, but to encounter that body, so forward and ready are the Associated Counties to joyne and contribute for the making a brave Army, for defence of those parts.

One of our Scouts that past this weeke through *Middlesex* towards *Higate*, *Finchley* and those parts, saith the people complaine much of Souldiers that are billeted there, that they make great spoile among the poor and rich, killing sheep, and doing great mischief, and that there are great store of whores among them, and they dominere: But he thinkes they speake the most, though he beleives the Souldiers are bad enough.

There is a report also, as if Sir *Francis Wortley* with three hundred men, had been surprized by some of the *Manchestrians* about *Hallifax*; which we rather hope, then have any certaine ground to beleieve.

There have been divers men put into ships this weeke that were in severall Prisons, some reports there are, that they are ill used, but upon full enquiry it is found, that they are merry and want nothing; and that they can stand upright, and walke; and play at cards and tables very well.



We understand from Kingston yesterday that the Earle of Holland notwithstanding his promise upon his honour not to goe farther then his daughter *Padgett*, is gone to his Majestie, and that besides him, are gone the Earle of Bedford, *Lovelace* and *Conway*. His Excellency gave his souldiers a weeks pay, which did rather sharpen their stomacks then content them; he is willing, his Officers say to have his Army contracted, purged, and what can be desired.

Our Scout brings us newes of some Papists taken that were gathered together in a house in Staffordshire, being about two hundred and fifty, they will give the Jesuits as little thanks for the raising combustions in England, as the Irish Papists for their raising the Rebellion in Ireland.

Some of Northampton Forces that went abroad met with some Banbury Souldiers, and after a terrible encounter, they of Northampton had the better, slew some, and tooke others prisoners.

Yesterday Master *Martin* was expelled the house, and sent to the Tower for some high speeches against his Majesty.

There bath been severall meetings of some of the Assembly and Commons this week about the Antynomians, a Doctrine much in esteeme among women in the City and parts about where they come to preach, they insist first upon free grace, when they have well planted that, then they tel that the Law Morall is of no use, no not

so much as for direction to a Christian, and whereas the Papists took away but one of the Commandments, they take away all; but how they will teach a Turke converted to be a Christian, to abstaine from coveting his neighbours good, unlesse they bring him to the Law, the Antynomian should do well to declare then the next vice in this Sect is, they say God sees no sinne in his Children, they were as good say he is blinde, as to make him not able to see, that which a childe can see; and they leave not here, but they say there is no sinne in a justified man, but this they preach in private; also they hold that the spirit is the onely evidence without the word, but whither the evidence be from the spirit of God or from the Divell, that they we are sure cannot tell; they go higher yet, and deny any confession of sinne, or humiliation for sinne; or any constant supplication; and when they come to the highest perfection in this society, they account Swearing, Whoring and what else you can reckon, to be no sinne to a beleever. Nay, more they hold that what ever is good in man, is essentially God, and what is evil, is Devill, and man is nothing but a piece of earth, to which he shall returne; and there is an end of him: These come the neereſt to Papists of any Sect in the world; now if they that are so much for Toleration of all Religions in a State, doe but consider seriously they cannot but conclude that these two Doctrines of Liberty would overrunne the Kingdome, let them doe what they can to hinder it.

Divers apprentices being frighted out of the City of  
London

London that night that the disaffected to the Parliament were seised upon, as they were going to Oxford, were apprehended, brought back to Kingstone, they had their lesson ready, which was, they were willing to serve under my Lord Generall, whereupon they were entred under a Commander.

The Oxford Scout whispers up and downe that Gloucester is taken.




---

*This is Licensed, and Entered into the Hall Booke according to Order,*

**Printed by G. Bishop, and R. White.**

---

AN 18  
ORDINANCE

Of the LORDS and COMMONS  
Assembled in Parliament.

WITH AN  
Oath or Covenant

To be taken by all Persons within  
the City of *London*, or Line of Communi-  
cation, for the better securing of the *Parliament*,  
the Cities of *London & Westminster*, with the Suburbs  
therot, and parts adjacent, in these times of eminent danger.

And that the Committee for the *Militia* of  
*London*, shall have power to punish all such as  
shall weare any Colours or marks of Division in the  
said City, or execute them according to Martiall Law.

Being also further Authorized to take Order (as  
occasion shall require) for the shutting up of Shops  
within the said Cities, &c. to the end that all persons  
may be in a readinesse and fitting posture for defence therot.

Die Jovis. 17. Augusti. 1643.

ORDERED by the Lords in Parliament, that this Ordinance  
for the safety of the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*,  
and the Liberties thereof, be forthwith Printed and published,

John Browne Cleric Parl.

*London*, Printed for John Wright in the Old Bailey 1643

# ORDINANCE

Of the Lords and Commons  
Assembled in Parliament

WITH AN

## Oath or Covenant

To be taken by all Persons within  
the City of London or Burgh of Common  
Council for the better security of the said City  
the City of London & Burgh with the suburbs  
thereof and for the better security of the said City

And that the Command for the City of  
London shall have power to punish all such as  
shall wear any Colours or marks of Division in the  
said City

Being also further Authorized to take Oath (as  
occasion shall require) for the shutting up of Shops  
within the said City to the end that all persons  
may be kept from the said Shops

Witness our hands at London the 17th of August 1643.  
John Browne Clerk of the Peace

London, Printed for James Wright in the Old Bailey 1643



Sabbath, 12. August, 1643.

**F**or the better securing of the Parliament, the Cities of London and Westminster, and the Suburbs thereof and parts adjacent, in these times of eminent danger: The Lords and Commons in Parliament assembled doe ordaine; That the Committee of the Militia for the City of London, or any person or persons authorized by them, shall have power, and are hereby authorized and required to tender unto all and every such person or persons, within the said Cities, or within the Lyne of Communication, or any of the Parishes mentioned in the Weekly Bill of mortality which are appointed, or hereafter shall be appointed to beare Armes, under the command of the Committee of the Militia of the City of London, the Oath or Vow hereafter mentioned, that is to say.



**I** A.B. In the presence of Almighty God, doe Vow and  
 protest, that I will according to my power and Vocati-  
 on, maintaine the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, with  
 the Burrough of *Southwarke*, and Suburbs of the said Ci-  
 ties, and the Forts, Out-works and Lines of Communica-  
 ion, lately made about the said Cities and Burrough, a-  
 gainst all Forces raised, or to be raised by the King, or any  
 other, with out the consent of both Houses of Parliament,  
 or Authority derived from them: And that I will not direct-  
 ly, nor indirectly, endeavour the giving up, leasing or sa-  
 king of any the Forts, Out-works, Magazines or places of  
 strength, within the Precincts aforesaid, without the con-  
 sent of both Houses of Parliament, or of such as shall have  
 Authority derived from them, and of the Lord Major, Al-  
 dermen, and Common Councill of the said Citie of *Lon-  
 don*: And that I will not in prejudice of the said Cities, Sub-  
 urbs, or Places, raise or assist any Forces. Tumults or un-  
 lawfull Assemblies of People; nor will directly, or indi-  
 rectly give any intelligence, or willingly suffer any Intelli-  
 gence to be given to the Forces raised, without the consent  
 of both Houses of Parliament; Or otherwise to the pre-  
 judice of the said Cities, Suburbs or places. And that I  
 will with all convenient speed discover to the Lord Major,  
 and Governours of the Forces within the Citie of *London*,  
 or to some of them, all such Plots and Designes as I shall  
 know, or bee credibly informed of, to bee against the said  
 Cities, Suburbs, or Places, or any of them. And this  
 Vow and Protestation I make without any equivocation,  
 or mentall Reservation, believing that I cannot bee absol-  
 ved from this my Vow and Protestation, and wishing no  
 blessing from God if I doe not performe the same.

So help me God:

And

And it is further ordained by the said  
 Lords and Commons, That if any such  
 person or persons as aforesaid, shall refuse  
 to take the said Oath or Vow so rendered,  
 the Committee of the Militia for the City of  
 London, or any two or more of them, shall  
 have power and are hereby authorized and  
 required by themselves, their Agents and  
 Ministers, forthwith to disarm euerie such  
 person so refusing and to seize their horses  
 and in case such person after such disarming  
 shall have any Armes found with him, or  
 with any other to his use, which he shall not  
 immediatly rebeale to the said Committee of  
 the Militia, or some of them That then his  
 goods and estate shall be seized to the use of  
 the commonwealth, and for the defence of  
 the said Cities As likewise the goods and  
 estate of euerie such person as aforesaid, as  
 shall willingly harbour or conceale the  
 Armes of any such person so refusing. And  
 shall also have power, and are hereby re-  
 quired to seize the person or persons of all  
 such persons as aforesaid, as shall refuse the  
 said Oath, or any other person or persons  
 A, which

Which are or shall be knowne or appear to  
 be Maligant or ill-affected to the Parlia-  
 ment: and to put them into safe custody, or  
 to remove and expell them from and out of  
 the said Cities and Lines of communication;  
 Or otherwise to dispose of them as they  
 shall thinke to be most conducing to the safe-  
 tie of the said cities and places, and it is fur-  
 ther ordained by the said Lords and Com-  
 mons That the said Committe of the Mili-  
 tia or any nine of them, or the commander in  
 chief of the forces raised within the said cities  
 and Lines of Communication, or any the  
 foresaid Parishes mentioned in the Weekly  
 Bill of Mortalitie shall have power and are  
 hereby required to suppress all Insurrecti-  
 ons, Tumults, and unlawfull assemblies  
 within the said Cities and precincts afore-  
 said. And to apprehend all Offendors ther-  
 in, their ayders and abettors: and also all  
 such as shal weare any Marks, Signes, or  
 colours to distinguish themselves as a party  
 ioyning against the authority of parlia-  
 ment, and to punish or execute them or so  
 many

many of them as they shall thinke fit according to the rule of Martiall Law.

And it is further Ordained by the Lords and Commons, That the said Committee of the Militia of London, or any part of them, and the Commander in chief, and the respective Officers in their severall places, shall governe and punish their inferiour Officers and Souldiers under the command of the said Committee of the Militia, according to the Articles and Laws of Warre, set forth by his Excellency the Earle of Essex, and authorized by both Houses of Parliament: And the said Committee of the Militia, are hereby further authorized to take order (as occasion shall require) for the shutting up of all Shops within the said Cities and Townes of Communication, untill further Order shall be taken by both Houses of Parliament, or by the said Committee. To the end that all persons may according to their power and vocation, be, and continue in a readines and sitting posture, for the defence of the said Cities and parts adiacent.

providēd

Provided That no power herein granted  
 shall extend to any Person or Member of ei-  
 ther of the Houses of Parliament or any of  
 the assistants or attendants upon the House  
 of Peeres, or House of Commons.



**FINIS.**



A Looking-Glasse

19

FOR  
REBELLS.

Or the true grounds of  
SOVERAIGNTY.  
PROVING

The KINGS Authority to be from  
GOD only :

And the Subjects Obedience from Gods  
Speciall Command.

Rom. 13.1.  
Let every soul be subject to the higher Powers: for there is no  
power but of God. The powers that be, are ordained of God.

Aug: 18. 4.  
OXFORD.  
Printed for William Web. 1643.



# A Looking-Glasse for Rebels.

## CHAP. I.

There are two grounds of true Sovereignty in our gracious Lord  
King CHARLES,

1. He receiving His Authority from God, hath no Superior to punish him, but God alone.
2. The Bond of his Subjects in Obedience to His Majestie is inviolable, and not to be dissolved.

**G**OD denouncing his judgements against wicked Kings, as *Saul* and *Rehoboam*, threatens with *Renning their Kingdoms from them*, and making their houses desolate. The deposing of a King, and the disposing of his Dominions, belong only to God. Obedience, Or the duty God enjoyeth all men is, *To eschew evil, and doe good*, which is diffused into the particular duties of

1. A Servant to his Master.

2. A Son to his Father.

3. A Subject to his Prince.

In the Allegiance of a Subject to his Sovereign, the evil he is to eschew is evil in action, For he is not to touch him with any hurtfull touch, or stretch out his hand against his Sacred Person. *Psal. 105. 1 Sam. 15.* Or any way to bring him to disgrace him, by cutting off the lap of his garment. Evil in words, For he is not to curse his King, *Exod. 22.* Evil in cogitations, For he is not to curse the King in his thought. *Eccles. 10.* The good which he is to doe out of Obedience to his Majestie, is in deed, by Paying Tribute. *Rom. 13* By fighting his battels with *Joab*, adventuring his life with *David*, to vanquish his enemies. In speech, By revealing with Religious *Mordecai*, the treasonable designs of *Bigan* and *Tereh*, *Hell. 2.* By bearing out Prayers for his welfare. *1 Tim. 2.* In thought, By abstracting his mind from the Heart, out of conscience, as the Anointed of the Lord, Gods

holy Ordinance, and Minister, and as a God upon earth; for this is to obey him for the Lords sake, to fear God, and honor the King; When we fear God, by whom the King reigneth, and his throne is established. 1. Pet. 2. Prov. 8. By this we plainly discern how impious and irreligious the practises of those are, who have not only actually offered violence to his Sacred Majestie (witnessed Edge-hill) but have been favourers of those who have any ways villined, nay, belch'd out most horrid treasons against Gods Anointed, as one Pym, who said, He would wash his hands in the Kings blood, and many more in the like nature, too tedious, or odious for me to recite.

#### CHAP. II.

How these two Pillars, (viz. Sovereignty, and the Bond of Obedience) are supported, and upon what foundations they are built.

I Shall discover unto you the foundation of the first prop or Pillar, Our Sovereign Lord King CHARLES receiving his Authority only from God, hath no Superior to chastise and punish him, but God alone.

The Ancient practise of this Kingdom is cleer for this truth. Bracton, Chief Justice under Hen. 3. in his Customes of England 1 cent. rubric a. 35. saith, There are under the King Freemen and Servants, and both subject unto his Power, as also whatsoever is under him and he himself is subject unto no man, but God only. Et ipse sub nullo nisi tantum sub Deo. And again, If there be any offence committed by him, forasmuch as there is no Breeve to enforce, or constrain him, There may be supplication made, that he would correct and amend his fault, which if he shall not doe, it is abundantly sufficient punishment: that he is to expect God a revenger, for no man may presume (disquirere) judicially to examine his doings, much lesse to oppose them by force or violence. And this is no other Kingly Sovereignty then God himself hath given unto Majestie. I counsel thee (saith God by the mouth of Solomon) to keep the Kings commandments, and that in regard of the Oath of God: be not hasty to goe out of his sight, stand not in an evil thing, for he doth whatsoever pleaseth him. Where the word of a King is, there is Power, and who may say unto him, What doest thou? Eccle. 8. An evident testimony, That Kings are subject unto

God, and have no mortall man their Superior, who may require of them an account of their doings, and punish them by any iudiciall sentence. This Divine truth is taught both by *David* and his Son *Solomon*, *Against thee, against thee only have I sinned*. Against thee only, for he was a King (saith *Ambrose*) not bound unto Law, because Kings are free from the bond of crimes, and are not called unto punishment by any Law, being safe by the Power of Command: therefore *David* sinned not against man, unto whom he was not obnoxious, in regard of punishment, but of admonition only and reproof uttered in the Name, and by the Authority of God himself.

Hereupon the Prophet *Nathan*, having used this Preface, *Thus saith the Lord*, admitteth King *David*, that he should expiate his sin by Repentance, but he gave no Sentence against him, whereby according to the Law, he should be adjudged unto death; for if *Nathan* had given any such sentence against *David*, he should have had power to deprive him of his life, and so of the which he enjoyed by his life, his Regall Authoritie, which God only can take away from Princes, because he alone bestoweth it upon him. From whence have they received their Sovereignty, to be here upon earth as gods over men? God himself answereth, *Psal. 82. I have said, Ye are Gods, and by my word the world was made; so are ye appointed by the same word to Rule the world. Who hath given unto them their Kingdomes? The Most High he ruleth in the Kingdoms of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will. Dan. 4. What power hath seated them in their Thrones? The Power of the Almighty. Job 35. Reges (as the vulgar Translation renders it) collocat in solio, He placeth Kings in bestraw.* And by whom doe they sway their Scepters, and govern their Kingdoms, By Gods speciall Authority, *By me doe Kings Reigne, and Princes deesse Justice, Prov. 8. by his immediate Power, who is both Lord and King of all the earth. Psal. 47. Doth not God by the mouth of the Prophet Nathan, tell David, I anointed the King over Israel. 2. Sam. 12. Doth not Solomon acknowledge, That the Lord hath established him, and set him on the Throne of his father David. And the Prophet Ahijah in the Person of God, unto Jeroboam, I will give the Kingdom unto thee. Neither the Kingdom only, and the Power of Princes, but all things*

things else proper unto them are after a peculiar manner Gods. Their Crown, their Anointing, their Scepter, and Thrope are Gods, and their Persons adorned with all these, are so divine and Sacred. That they themselves are the Angels of God, and the sons of the Most High. 2 Sam. 14. Psal. 82.

*Object.* Are not Kings made by the people, and receive their Regall power by them and their election? Is not said of *Saul*, That all the people went to Gilgal, and there made him King before the Lord? Of *David*, The men of Judah anoynted *David* King of Judah: The Elders of Israel anoynted *David* King over Israel.

*Ans.* *Zadok* the Priest, and *Nathan* the Prophet anoynted *Salomon* King, and the Lord also anoynted him, otherwise hee had not been the Lords Anointed, but the Anoynted of *Zadok* and *Nathan*. The Lord anoynted *Salomon* as Matter of the substance, and gave unto him regall power; *Zadok* and *Nathan* anoynted *Salomon* as Master of the Ceremonies, and declared that God had given unto him this power: for outward unction doth not confer upon Kings their authoritie (when without it *Cyrus*, *Esay* 45. and before the use thereof, some of the Patriarchs over their families, were the anoynted of the Lord) but it is a signe only of Soveraignty; becaule if wee powre oyle into the same vessell with any other liquour, it will still be uppermost.

The Elders of Judah & Israel anoynting *David* King, 2 Sam. 2. did manifest him to be their King; but did not give unto him the right unto his Kingdome, this was only from the Lords appointing. So the people then made *Saul* King, not by giving him the right of his Kingdome, but by putting him in possession of his Kingdome, to reigne over them: for the Jewes by Gods speciall commandement, being to make such an one King, whom their Lord God had chosen, unto whom their Lord God had given regall authority; from their Lord God, and not from themselves, from Heaven, and not from Earth, was the Soveraignty of their Princes.

For as in spirituall graces, which God mercifully bestoweth upon the faithfull, neither the outward ministry of *Paul* in planting, nor of *Apollus* in watering, is any thing; but God giveth the encrease, 1 Cor. 3. So in the civill power, which God vouch-

safeth to Princes, the people are not any thing in giving this authority, but God only is the free Donor thereof.

### CHAP. III.

*The bond of his Subjects in obedience to his Majestie is inviolable, and cannot be dissolved.*

**T**He principall meanes whereby the seditious Sons of Belial doe pretend, that this sacred band may be dissolved, are either supposed crimes in the Persons of Princes, as Tyranny in governing, Infidelity, Heresie, Apostasie. First for Tyranny, Was not *Saul* a Tyrant in hunting after the soule, and seeking after the life of *David*, who was most faithfull unto him amongst all his servants, whom he himselfe confessed to have rendered good for evil? Was hee not a bloody oppressour in commanding *Dag*, without any just cause of offence, violently to run upon the Priests, and slay foure-score and five persons that did weare a linnen Ephod, 2 *Sam.* 22. 18, 19. To smite Nob, the citie of the Priests, both man and woman, both child and suckling, both Oxe and Asse, and sheep, with the edge of the sword?

The blood of many Innocents did cry unto God for vengeance, and by his speciall commandement, *Gen.* 9. 6. *Whoso sheddeth mans blood, by man his blood shall be shed*) deserved death: yet *David*, not an ordinary or private man, but by Gods owne appointment designed unto the Kingdome, a chiefe Captain and Leader in the Kings battels, the Kings son in law, when he had *Saul* delivered into his hand, and was encouraged by his servants to destroy him, said unto them, 1 *Sam.* 24. 6. *The Lord keep me from doing that thing unto my Master; the Lords anoynted, to lay my hand upon him; for he is the Lords anoynted.* And after unto *Saul* himselfe, *vers.* 14. *Wickednesse proceedeth from the wicked, but mine hand be not upon thee.* And againe unto *Abisai*, when the Lord another time had closed *Saul* into his hands, (1 *Sam.* 26. 9.) *Destroy him not; for who can lay hands upon the Lords anoynted, and be guiltlesse?* Which pious and religious acts of *David* towards *Saul*, amongst the Israelites, *Optatus* hath elegantly described, the more effectually to commend them unto Christians: *David* (saith *Optatus*) had the occasion of victory in his hands



hands, he might have cut the throat of his unwary and secure adversary, without any labour; hee might without shedding of blood, without any conflict, have changed a publike war into a private slaughter, and his men the victory, occasion and opportunity encouraged him: he began to draw his sword, his armed hand was moved towards the throat of his enemy, but the perfect remembrance of Gods Commandements stayed him: hee withstanding his men, and the occasions enciting him, in effect thus speaketh unto them: O victory, thou doest in vaine provoke, and invite me with thy triumphs, I would willingly conquer mine enemy, but I must rather keep Gods Commandements. I will not (saith he) lay mine hands upon the Lords anointed. And so he repressed his hand together with his sword; and while he feared the oyle, saved his enemy. *Truth* teacheth, to wish evill, to doe evill, to think evill, is indifferently forbidden us towards all men; thence inferreth, if wee are not to offer the least of these injuries to any man, much lesse to him that is so highly advanced by our God, speaking of the Emperour *Seporus*, who was an unbelieving Tyrant, an Infidell, that did grievously persecute the Christians, whom he did afflict with the fifth famous persecution.

St. Peter writ his first Epistle in the time of *Claudius* the Emperour, and did direct it to his Countrey men the Jewes, throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia, Byrhinia, regions then subject unto the Roman Emperour. And because some seducers (with whom this latter age is much burdened) had perswaded the Jewes, under a pretext of maintaining their liberty, that tribute was not to be payd to *Cesar*, neither any mortal man was to be accounted as a Prince or Lord over them, but God only: St. Peter exhorteth them to be free, as not using their liberty for a cloke of malicious selfe, but as the servants of God, (1 Pet. 2. 16, and 18.) and to feare God, but yet to honour the King also. And although Magistrates be men, and so their Ordinance, in regard of their persons in whom it doth reside, but humane; yet to submit themselves unto them, for the Lords sake, from whom they received their authority. And if we are commanded to submit our selves, and to be subject to a profane Infidell and mercilesse Tyrant, as *Claudius* was, who would have tortures



portures in examinations, punishments for Parricides executed  
in his owne presence: hee had most cruel Searchers of all the  
cause but to salute him, sparing not any sex or age: he delighted  
to see the faces of Fencers (whose throats hee had caused to be  
cut for stumbling by chance in their sword-fights) as they lay  
gasping, and yeelding up their breath: and being excessively gi-  
ven to the wanton love of women, hee was so enthralled to his  
wives and free-men, that as it was commodious unto them, or  
stood with their affection, he granted honourable dignities, con-  
ferred the conducts of Armies, and decreed impunityes or pe-  
nishments; yet unto such an unbelieving and bloody Oppressor,  
St. Peter earnestly exhorteth the beleieving Jewes to yeeld obe-  
dience.

If Subjects are obliged in duty, and out of conscience cheer-  
fully to obey tyrannous, unbelieving, hereticall, Apostaticall  
Princes, as Powers ordained of God: with what alacrity shoul-  
d we be in all things obsequious unto our gracious and reli-  
gious Sovereigne? Gracious, as being like unto God,  
whose Vice-Gerent he is in this, that his clemencie and mercie  
is over all his works: Religious, in that he is a zealous Propa-  
gator of the ancient and Catholike Faith, not only by his Kingly  
power and authority, but hath confirmed the same by many sa-  
cred vowes and protestations, to the glory of God, to the rejoy-  
cing of Angels, and to the great comfort of all his true-hearted  
Subjects, to the terror and confusion of all his malicious e-  
nemies.

**FINIS.**

AN 20  
ORDINANCE  
OF THE  
LORDS and COMMONS  
Assembled in  
PARLIAMENT:

For the speedy supply of Mo-  
nies within the City of *London*, and  
Liberties thereof, for the reliefe and  
maintenance of the Armies raised and  
to be raised for the necessary defence  
of the City and Liberties aforesaid.  
Die Veneris, 18. August. 1643.

*Ordered by the Lord Mayor and the Militia of London, that  
this Ordinance be forthwith Printed and published.*



Printed at *London* by *Richard Cotes*. 1643.





## An Ordinance of the Lords and Commons in Parliament Assembled.

*Die Veneris, 18. August, 1643.*



THE Lords and Commons, finding that there is for the present an urgent necessity for the speedy raising and levying considerable summes of money, for the necessary defence of Religion, Lawes, and Liberties, and of the City of *London* with the Liberties thereof, the chiefe objects of our enemies malice, Have hereby Ordained, and be it Ordained by the said Lords and Commons, That all and every person and persons as well Aliens and Strangers, borne out of the Kings obedience, as Denizens, and others Inhabiting, or who at any time since the beginning of this Parliament, did Inhabit within the said City of *London*, and Liberties thereof, forthwith after publication hereof, shall by way of Loane for every sum of foure shillings which every person and persons paid, or was rated or Assessed to pay for twenty shillings Lands, in any one of the two last of the six first Subsidies granted, this present Parliament: lend for the Service aforesaid, and pay to the Treasurers hereafter appointed the summe of ten pounds, and for every summe of eight shillings, which every such person or persons paid or was rated or assessed to pay for three pounds Goods in any one of the said two last of the first six Subsidies

dies granted this present Parliament; the summe of twenty pounds, and so rateably according to that proportion for all and every greater summe and summes of Money rated and assessed upon any person or persons, for the aforesaid Subsidies, either for Goods or Lands, within the said City and Liberties. And it is further Ordained by the said Lords and Commons, that the Alderman; Aldermans Deputy and Common Counsell men of each Ward within the said City and Liberties, or the greater number of them, shall be a Committee in their severall Wards, forthwith to nominate and appoint some trusty, able, and well affected persons, either amongst themselves or others, inhabiting within each Ward respectively, who upon sight of the Rolls of the said former Subsidies shall cause the said Rates and Assessments hereby Ordained to be lent, to be paid in as aforesaid. And the said Aldermen, Aldermens Deputies, and Common Counsell men of each Ward, or the greater number of them, calling in to their assistance, such as they shall thinke fit, shall also within their severall Wards have hereby power and authority to rate and assess in such proportionable manner as they shall thinke fit, towards the payments of the said Monies for the Service aforesaid, such other person and persons, as well Strangers as others, who being of ability to pay, were notwithstanding not rated, nor assessed in the said former Subsidies.

And it is also Ordained by the said Lords and Commons; that all and every person and persons rated and assessed by vertue hereof shall, within three dayes after demand made by such person or persons as the said Committees, or the greater number of them shall appoint as aforesaid, after notice thereof given and left at his usuall dwelling place, pay to the Treasurers hereby appointed, or to any two of them,

one

one halfe of the summe so rated or assessed, or to be rated and assessed upon him or them, and the other halfe within the space of one moneth after publication hereof: And if any person or persons so assessed or to be assessed by vertue of this Ordinance, shall faile therein, that then the said Committees, or any two of them within their severall Wards by such person or persons as they shall appoint, shall levy the sum so assessed or to be assessed, by Distresse of the Goods and Chattells of such person and persons so assessed, or to be assessed, and neglecting or refusing to pay the same in manner aforesaid, and sell the goods so distrained for the service aforesaid, and if no sufficient Distresse can bee found, that then the said Committees or any two of them within their severall Wards, by such person & persons as they shall appoint, shall certifie the names of every such person, and persons, to the Committee of the House of Commons for Examinations sitting at *Westminster*, or to the Committee of the Militia of *London*, or any three of them, who shall hereby have power respectively to commit such person and persons to safe custody without Baile, and Mainprize, wheresoever the said persons shall be found, whether within the said Citie and Liberties or without, and his Estate shall be moreover sequestred by the Committee of Sequestrations for the said Citie of *London*, or of such County where his Estate shall be found to be employed for the service aforesaid, untill the Summe so charged upon him bee satisfied. And the said Lords and Commons doe further ordaine that all and every person and persons shall pay in their proportion of Money hereby rated and Assessed upon them and every of them according to this Ordinance at the *Guild Hall London*, unto Sir *John Wollastone* Knight and Alderman, Mr. Alderman *John Warner*, Mr. Alderman *Towse*, and Mr. Alderman *Andrewes*;



or to such other person or persons as shall be from time to time hereafter nominated and chosen by the Common Councell of *London* for that purpose, or to any two of them, who are hereby appointed Treasurers for the receiving and issuing forth of the Moneys aforesaid. All which shall bee issued forth and payd by warrants under the hands of the Committee of the Militia of *London*, or of such others as the Common Councell of the said Citie of *London* shall appoint for the intent and purpose aforesaid. And for all such persons as shall pay in their Moneys according to the true intent and meaning of this Ordinance. It is hereby ordained that they shall have the securitie of the Common Seale and Chamber of *London*, in manner as it was granted and agreed upon by Act of Common Councell, the 11. of this instant *August* 1643. And it is further ordained by the said Lords and Commons, that (all pretences and delays set aside) all and every person and persons inhabiting within the said Citie and Liberties heretofore Rated and Assessed, to pay any summe or summes of Money by vertue of any Act or Ordinance of Parliament: or of any Act of Common Councell for the service aforesaid. And all Aldermens Deputies, Common Councell men, Collectors, or any other person or persons within the said Citie and Liberties that now have or hereafter shall have by vertue of this or any other Act or Ordinance of Parliament, or of any Act of Common Councell heretofore made, or by any voluntary Subscriptions any summe or summes of Money in their or any of their hands Collected for the service aforesaid, and shall not within six dayes after publication hereof, or after the receipt of such summe or summes of Money bring in the said severall sums to the Treasurers and Receivers appointed for that purpose, shall respectively undergoe the like penaltie as is hereby formerly

merly appointed to be imposed upon those that shall neglect or refuse to pay in their Money, Rated and Assessed according to the proportions of the Subsidies expressed in this Ordinance. And it is further ordained, that the Lord Maior and Court of Aldermen within the said Citie of *London* shall have power, and are hereby authorized to commit to prison any person or persons hereby appointed to execute this Ordinance, that shall wilfully refuse the same, or shall bee negligent in the execution thereof. Provided alwayes, that this Ordinance shall not extend to give power to Rate or Assesse any of the Peeres, Members, Assistants, or necessary Attendants of either of the two Houses of Parliament, or of any person whose estate is seized upon by the Kings Forces, power, or command; for his good affections, or conformitie to the commands of the Parliament. And hath beene necessitated to withdraw himselfe from his ordinary place of habitation to the Citie of *London*.

---

FINIS.

---

1. The first of these is the fact that the British Government has been unable to secure the necessary cooperation from the United States Government in the prosecution of the war against Germany. This is due to the fact that the United States Government has been unable to secure the necessary cooperation from the British Government in the prosecution of the war against Germany.

## CONTINUATION

Of certain Speciall and Remarkable passages  
informed to the PARLIAMENT, and otherwise from  
divers parts of this Kingdome. from Thursday the 10. of  
*August*, till Fryday the 18. of *August* 1643.

*Containing these Particulars, viz.*

1. A true relation of Letters to the Parliament from the Lord Generall informing some speciall matters of newes from the Army, and some proceedings of the Parliament touching the same.
2. A true relation of some late proceedings of the Commons in Parliament touching shutting up the shops in the City, the taking of a New Oath, and for the punishing of tumults by Marshall Law.
3. A new order of Parliament to prohibite all men from going beyond Sea, except Foraigners and Women and Children.
4. A true Relation of Letters to the Parliament from the Lord *Fairefax* at *Hull*, of some speciall news from the North, and some proceedings of the Parliament concerning the same.
5. A true relation of Letters to the Parliament from the Navy of three Danish ships that ly: betwix: *Catlice* and *Bullen* with Souldiers that come to assist the King against the Parliament.
6. Some passages of news touching those Lords that lately made escape from the Parliament, and are gone to *Oxford*.
7. A more punctuall and exact relation then hath beene yet enformed of all the passages of the seige against *Gloucester*, what number of men were lost, and the Certaine raising of the siege there.
8. News from *Northampton* of a late defeat given to the Cavaliers neare *Towcester*.
9. A punctuall and exact relation of a great defeat given to the Lord *Capels* forces n.e.e. *Nantwich* in *Cheshire* by Sir *William Brereton*, and the certaine number slaine and taken prisoners there, with some other news from *Chester*.
10. Other news from *Lancashire* of their taking 300. of the Enemies Horse with that great Malignant Sir *Francis worthley*.
11. A true relation of letters of news from *Scotland*, with a punctuall accompt in what condition the forces are, that they already have and are raising to send into this Kingdome.
12. A true relation of Colonell *Martins* commitment to the Tower on Wednesday last, by Order of Parliament and the grounds thereof.
13. Lastly, a true accompt of some proceedings of the Parliament on Thursday, touching the Sequestration of Recusants Estates, and a new Oath to be tendered to all Papists and suspected Recusants.

15

1

# CONTINUATION

Of the History of the Colony of Virginia

From the Year 1607 to 1614

By William Sturges

London, Printed by J. Sturges, at the Sign of the Gun, in St. Dunstons Church-yard, 1725.

In the Year 1607, the first Colony of Virginia was settled by a Company of English Men, who were sent out by the Virginia Company, a Corporation created by an Act of Parliament in the Year 1606.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.

The first Landing was made on the 20th of May, 1607, at a Place called Jamestown, on the River of James, about 100 Miles from the Mouth of the River.



A CONTINUATION OF  
Certaine Speciall and Remarkable  
passages informed to the Parliament,  
and otherwise from divers parts of  
this Kingdome.

From Thursday the 10. of *August* till Friday the  
18. of *August* 1643.

**T**He intermission of the Diurnall on Munday last  
gives me occasion to continue this Intelligence, &  
briefely to collect something of the Parliaments  
proceedings for above a weeke past: yet infor-  
med of in print, and what other newes of note hath  
come to light in this weekes occurrents: And first  
of all the last weeke the Parliament received a letter from the Lord  
Generall, whereby hee importuned them for a speedy supply of  
Monies and Cloathes for the better Recrewting his Army, giving  
them to understand that his sicke Souldiers beginne to recover a  
pace, and the Countiees were so forward to joyne with him and re-  
crewte his Army, that if a certaine course were but seled to pay  
his Souldiers, he conceived there would bee little neede of Impre-  
sing of men, but should have a very formidable Army suddenly  
to take the field againe, & give a good account of the service, where-  
upon the house accordingly ordered forthwith to supply his Excel-  
lency with monies and cloathes, and sent him 10000. pounds on  
Satterday last to *Kingston*, and appointed to send more speedily af-  
ter. And have passed an Ordinance for the pressing of men if there  
be occasion.



The House of Commons also the last weeke had consultation about a Petition and some Propositions presented to them by Alderman *Adams* in the name of the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Common Councill of *London*, for the shutting up of shops throughout the City, that men might have more liberty to looke to the publique safety, and fill themselves in person to goe forth with Sir *William Waller*, that there might be an Oath taken by all those that shall remaine in the City, to be true to the Parliament, City and Oute works against the Kings Army, and not to give them any intelligence of affaires here, that about 10. Counties next adjoining to *London* might be desired to joyn with the City in raising men and moneyes for an Army of 30000. horse, and foote, and some other such like Propositions, which the House very well approved of, and referred to a Committee to frame an Ordinance upon them.

And they have since framed an Oath to be taken throughout the City to the effect aforesaid, and all that doe refuse to take this Oath are to be imprisoned, or expelled the City, with their Wives and Families, and their estates to be secured, and taxed for the payment of the Souldiours that defend the City. And with the said Oath, the Commons are about passing an Ordinance to prevent the raising of Tumults, or unlawfull assemblies within the City, and that the cheife Authors of any such tumult shall be punished by Marshall Law, likewise that the Committee of the Militia in *London*, shall have power to cause the Citizens to shut up their shops as they find cause.

Likewise the Commons had further consultation about passing an Order to give free liberty to all women and children, to depart the Kingdome for more security during these troubles, to any parts beyond the Seas; with prohibition, that no men, Papists nor Male-Children of above 16. yeares of Age should depart hence; but since that, for sundry speciall reasons, the Commons for the present, have made stop of that Order, onely there is leave given to the officers of the Custome house to grant passages to all Forraigners not being above the degree of an Artificer, with their Wives and Children, to depart the Kingdome at their pleasure. From

(W)  
From the Lord Fairfax at Hull the Commons received letters, giving them to understand that he is now ready to take the Field againe, having recruited his Army at Hull the Country coming into him with much alacrity, where by his Army is very formidable, onely he wanteth some Armes & Ammunition which he desires the Parliament to supply him withall, and the Commons thereupon Ordered that he should have Armes for 4000 men 400 Cal of Pistolls, 1000 barre's of Powder, six Tonn of Match and 2000 of the Roundhead clubs that came out of the Danish Ship, to be speedily sent unto him by Sea.

From the *Dowries*, it was informed the Parliament by a Letter from one of the Captaines of the Navy, that there are three other Ships each of them at least 200. Tonn burthen, lie hovering upon the English Coasts, whom he chased and discovered to belong to the King of *Denmarke*, and sent his her with Souldiers and Armes to assist the Kings Army against the *Park* to serle the Protestant Religion (if you'l belevee it) with their other Gômpeers of *Wallawes* French, Spanish, & Irish Rebels that are already in the Kingdome, they were intended to land about *Newcastle* but by the diligence of the Earle of *Marwick* ships were prevented, and now lie berwy *Calice* and *Bulben*, the Captaine that sent this intelligence, desiring the Parliament to grant him Commission and he would use his utmost endeavour to surprize them, which the Parliament accordingly Ordered, and withall appointed that the Earle of *Marwick* should be made acquainted therewith, and desired to take the full care to prevent the landing of the said ships in this Kingdome.

On Saterday last there was one *Missis Jordan* a Citizen brought a Petition to the House of Commons, desiring leave to go into *Holland* for that she went in great Jeopardy of her life here amongst her own Neighbours, in that she refused to loyn with them in their tumultuous rising against the Parliament on the Wednesday before, and being examined before the whole house, touching that tumult she declared in the Commons Bar, that she heard one Master *Knowles* in Chancery lane affirme, that many of the Women had been with a great Earle in this Kingdome, (whom that night

(62)

night or the next morning with some others in companie made escape from the Parliament and (as it is thought) gone to *Oxford*, who encouraged them in that tumultuous manner to come downe to the Parliament under pretence for peace, and told them that all the Lords but the Lord *Say* were for the Propositions for peace. and so altho' all of the House of Commons except foure or five, and that if they came downe in that manner but 3. or 4. dayes together these propositions for peace would passe the Houses and they would then have peace, but a very strange peace it would have beene certainly, when after the profuse expence of so much blood as hath bene spent in this warre, wee shall be left in a worse condition then we were at first, and surrender up all to the bare will and pleasure of his Majesty, or rather of his seducing Counsellors without any provision made for the securing of our Religion, Lawes, or Liberties otherwise then in such manner as His Majesty shall approve of or give consent, which information of *Mistris Lordans* the Commons referred to a Committee throughly to examine the whole businesse, which Committee had appointed to sit on Monday following about it, But on Monday the first thing we heard on, was that the said great Earle concerned in that businesse was escaped from the Parliament as aforesaid.

And since that wee understand from *Windsor*, that the Earle of *Holland*, Earle of *Bedford*, Lord *Lovelace* and Lord *Conway* are all gone to His Majesty: that some of the Souldiers at *Windsor* persued them to *Marlow*, where they found the Earle of *Holland* at his Daughter the Lady *Tageris* House, but had so stronge a guard upon the House, they could doe no good with so small a force, and retreated backe to *Windsor* for more ayde, in the meane time the Earle went for *Oxford*, but Colonell *Ven* hath met with some of his Tunkes that were going after him, wherein doubtlesse there is some good booty.

From *Gloster* the newes this weeke hath bene confirmed by sundry informations to this effect; that on *Friday* last, the Towne was summoned by Prince *Rupert*, and afterwards by his Majesty in person; and that the Governour Colonell *Mossy* returned answer, that if his Majesty in person pleased to enter the Towne with the Prince of *Wales* or any else of his owne retinue he would give them free admittance, with all the obedience safety, and Protection that became a faithfull Subject to his Prince, but for any forraigne Prince that came to invade this Kingdome, by taking part with Papists Irish Rebels, and other Delinquents about his Majesty, and now in Armes against the Parliament, he would give no admittance unto them, but would stand out in defence of the Towne against them with his last drop of blood and life, and that thereupon the Kings forces made a very fierce assault, but were beaten off with great losse. And that night they made a second assault upon one of the workes, entered it, and seemed confident to winne the towne, but they

were no sooner entered the worke, forcing in with great violence, but the Governour discharged nine peece of Ordnance against them, which he had placed in Ambuscados charged with Musquet Ballers, and made such Bloody execution amongst them, that very few escaped, leaving many hundred dead in the place, and since this it was for certaine informed on Thursday last, that the enemy were so farre disheartned at their bad successes against *Gloucester* that they have quite raised their siege against it, and that they have lost in that service above 2000. men, whereof two were Colonells, five Lieutenant Colonells, and about twelvy Captaines, already discovered, besides what they carried away privately.

From *Northampton* we are informed that the Cavaliers in *Banbury* sent a partie of horse into that County to plunder and Pillage the well affected, and on Sunday night last pillaged *Northampton* Carrier and some other Carriers coming up for *London*, and tooke away all their Horses and loading, and *Northampton* Carrier Prisoner, that on Munday they went to *Towcester* to raise Contribution money for their Army, which *Northampton* men having notice, sent out of a Troope of horse that fell upon a partie of the enemies, had a short skirmish with them killed a stout Captaine of the enemies, one Captaine Chamberline, not long since a Prisoner at *Windsor* Castle, and killed and tooke Prisoners all his Troope, and are safely retreated back to *Northampton*.

There hath been much talke this weeke of a great overthrow given to the Lord *Capell* in *Chester* by Sir *William Brereton*s forces, and some have spoken largely of the taking of *Chester*, but thus much is certaine and confirmed by letters on Wednesday last, That Sir *William Brereton* having notice that Sir *Thomas Middleton* (appointed by the Parliament to be Major Generall of all *North Wales*) was upon his advance from *Cowenry* into those parts, went from *Nantwich* with a Convoy to meet him, and bring him safe to *Nantwich* with a bove 200. Prisoners all Papists which Sir *Thomas Middleton* had taken at a house in *Stafford-shire*, and that Sir *William Brereton* and Sir *Thomas* his forces accordingly joyned, but the Lord *Capell* thinking to take the advantage of Sir *William Brereton* leaving of *Nantwich* drew up his forces against it, and summoned the Towne, but the forces in *Nantwich* slighting their summons issued out upon them and charged them fiercely, and not many shotes passed, but their besiegers tooke themselves to flight, and *Nantwich* men pursued and did wonderous great execution upon them, and absolutely defeated the Lord *Capell*s whole force, tooke all his Ordnance Armes and many Prisoners.

And although I can report nothing for certaine touching *West-Chester*, though I here much talke of the taking thereof, yet doubtlesse this defeat to the Lord *Capell* will give a great blow to the worke, and Sir *Thomas Middleton*s joyning with Sir *William Brereton* and some supplies from *Lancashire* must



must needs make him of sufficient strength for the besieging thereof.   
 And from *Lincolne* it is for certaine reported, that the ever renowned *Murcheffians* have lately surprized a party of the enemies horse neare 200 of them, and taken that grand Mallin Sir *Francis Muxley*, and seven or thereabouts prisoners of war.

From *Scotland* there is expectation daily of letters from the Parliament Committee but none as yet comes so that I dare not repeat the news thereof so confidently as otherwise I might, how ever thus much I have heard confirmed by private letters from very good hands, that there was a bold march made ready raised in *Scotland* about the beginning of the last weeke, and that it was conceived their number would be doubled within a weeke following, that part of them are already upon the march, & some 1000 of them come to *Barnick*. But whether any of them be as yet come to *Hull* to the Lord  *Fairfax*, though I heare some report so, I much question is, but doubtless if not as yet, there will be some of them ere long there. And Sir *William Paul* is gone downe from the Parliament by Sea to *Hull* to supply his Dealship with Armes and Ammunition as is before specified.

On *Wednesday* last Colonell *Martin* was questioned in the House of Commons for speaking some high words touching his Majesty, and upon serious debate disabled for being any longer a Member of that house, and committed to the Tower to answer the matter all edged against him.

And on *Thursday* last both Houses had a Conference about passing an order for the more effectual sequestrating of Recusants estates, and a new Oath to be rendred to all Papists, and suspected Regulars, the better to discover them, they having found out so many cunning flights to evade the former Oath of Allegiance and Supremacy, and if they refuse this Oath, they are to be proceeded against as Traytors and enemies to the State.

This is Licensed and entered into the Register Booke of the Company of Stationers according to Order.

And although I cannot say nothing for certain touching West-  
I have much to do of the kind, yet doubtless this letter to  
I will give a great blow to the work, and Sir *Thomas*  
will give a great blow to the work, and Sir *Thomas*  
will give a great blow to the work, and Sir *Thomas*

22

AN  
ORDINANCE  
OF THE  
LORDS and COMMONS  
Assembled in  
PARLIAMENT.

for the  
Better securing and settling the Peace of  
the County of *SURREY*,

And for enabling them to Associate amongst  
themselves or with other Counties for their mutuall de-  
fence, and to raise Forces within the said County  
and therewith to fight with, kill and slay all such  
Forces as shall invade that County without  
the Authority of Parliament, and to as-  
seise and levy money according to several  
Orders and Ordinances of Parliament.

And to doe and execute in that County, all other things  
that may conduce to the peace and safety of the said County.

---

Imprimatur, *John White.*

---

*Aug: 18<sup>th</sup>*  
Printed at London for R. D. 1643.







AN  
ORDINANCE  
OF THE  
LORDS and COMMONS  
Assembled in  
PARLIAMENT.

---

*Die Jovis 27. Julii, 1643.*



Whereas the County of *Sur-*  
*ry* is in great danger spee-  
dily to be invaded by For-  
ces, raised against Autho-  
rity of Parliament, and be-  
cause timely remedy can-  
not be provided, if a long and tedious des-

A 2

bate

bate should happen about preventing this mischiefe. It is this day Ordered by the Lords and Commons in Parliament, that Sir *Anthony Vincent*, Knight and Baronet, Sir *Ambrose Browne*, Baronet, Sir *John Maynard*, Knight of the Bath, Sir *Richard Onslow*, Sir *John Dingley*, Sir *Matthew Brand*, Sir *Robert Wood*, Sir *Robert Parkhurst*, Knights, *Nicholas Stoughton*, *George Farwell*, *George Evelyn*, *Henry Weston*, *Robert Goodwin*, *Francis Drake*, *John Goodwin*, Esquires, Colonell *Edmond Harvey*, Colonell *Samuel Jones*, *Cornelius Holland*, *Edmond Jordan*, *Robert Wood*, *Henry Hastings*, Esquires, Major *Jeremy Baynes*, Captaine *Juxton*, Captaine *Gates*, Captaine *Inwood*, *Robert Lane*, Master *Collins*, Master *Tunstall*, Master *Sackford Gunstone*, Master *Thomas Cullam*, Master *Robert Meade*, Captaine *Mercer*, Captaine *Hoblin*, Master *Richard Clarke*, Master *Cornelius Cooke*, Master *William Barton*, Master *William Beake*, Master *Robert Haughton*, Master *Richard Wright*, Master *Francis Smith*, Master *William Hiccocke*, Master *Tarleton*, Master *Edward Barker*, *Ioseph Collier*, and *William Crofts*,

*(roses)*, shall be Committees for disposing the Affaires of the County of *Surrey*, and the *major* part, or any five of them shal have power, and are hereby authorized to raise Forces within, or for the said County, and appoint Officers for the same, Fortifie Townes or other places within the said County and with the said Forces to fight with, kill, and slay, any that shall invade that County without authority of Parliament, associate amongst themselves or with other Counties for their mutuall defence, imprison and punish offenders against any Order or Ordinance of Parliament, execute all Orders and Ordinances of Parliament, and to asseesse and levy money, according to the severall Orders and Ordinances of Parliament; and appoint Collectors and Treasurers to receive the same, and to issue out the same for the uses aforesaid, by warrant under the hands of the said Committees, or any five of them, who are to be Accomptable to the Parliament for the same, and to doe and execute in that County all other things

that they conceive may conduce to the peace and safety of that County, and what they shall doe in pursuance of this Ordinance, they shall be protected by both Houses of Parliament, Provided that any thing in this Ordinance shall not extend to the receiving, imploying, or disposing of any of the moneyes collected upon the Ordinance already made, or to be made for the weekly Assessements within that County: but that the same shall be collected received, and imployed in such manner as is or shall be appointed by the said ordinance or ordinances.

*Jo. Brown, Cleric. Parliamentorum.*

*H. Elfyng Cler. Parl. D. Com.*

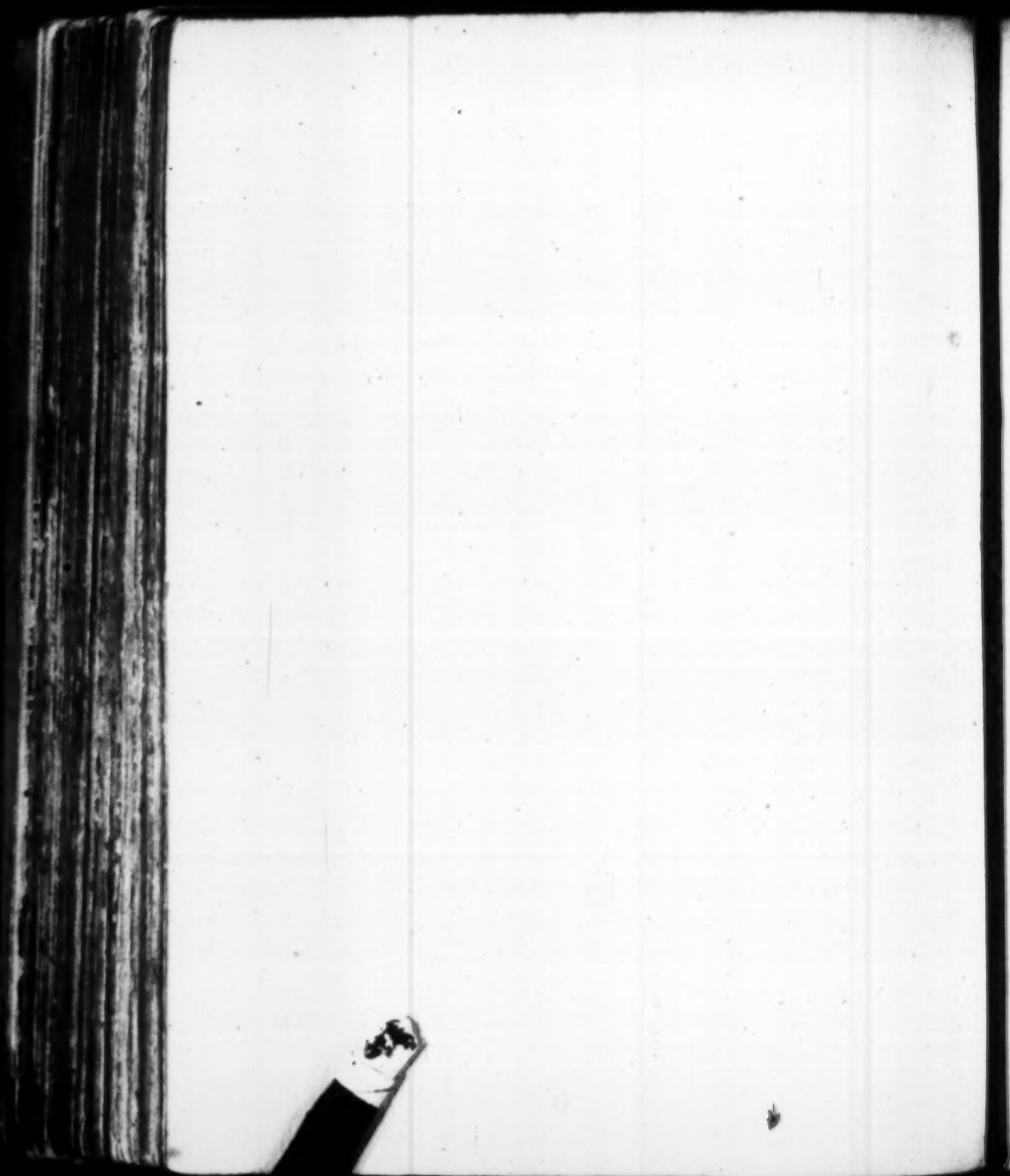
FINIS.

the  
hat  
rdi.  
oth  
any  
end  
gof  
the  
made  
that  
lect-  
nner  
d or.

orum.

Com.





23  
AN  
ORDINANCE

Of The  
LORDS and COMMONS

Assembled in

PARLIAMENT.

Concerning the late Rebellious  
INSURRECTION in the County of  
K B X T.

VVhereby a Committee is appointed for  
the said County, forthwith to sieze upon all the  
Armes and Horses, and imprison the Persons of  
all those that have appeared in, or given any assistance to  
that Insurrection, and Rebellion, or have willingly  
relieved any of the said Rebels, with Armes,  
Ammunition, Money or otherwise.

Die Mercurii, 16 Augu<sup>ti</sup> 1643.

Ordered by the Lords Assembled in Parliament, that  
this Ordinance be forthwith Printed and Published.  
John Browne Cler Parl.

August 19. Printed for Iohn Wright, in the Old-  
Bailey, 1643.

ORDINANCE

Of the

Lords and Commons

PARLIAMENT

Concerning the late Rebellions

IN SUBRECTION OF THE COUNTY OF

REBELLY

Whereas a Commission is appointed for  
the County of ... to hear upon all the  
Arises and Fines, and upon the Petitions of  
all that have appeared in or given any assistance to  
the late Rebellion, or to the Rebellion of  
Ammonition, Mob, or otherwise

It is therefore ordered by the said Lords and Commons  
That the said Commission be and lawfully be  
and do the same

Given at the City of London the ... day of ... 1545

AN  
**ORDINANCE**  
 Of the  
**Lords & Commons Assembled**  
**PARLIAMENT.**

*Die Mercurii, 16 Augusti, 1641.*

**VV** Whereas divers ill-affectcd persons of the County of Kent, have unlawfully and Trayterously assembled themselves together, and in a Warlike and hostile manner, possessed themselves of divers Townes, and places in that County, and have Trayterously, and Rebellously, Levied Warre against the King and Parliament, and Robbed, Killed, and Spoiled divers of his Majesties Subjects: And notwithstanding they were inhibited by an Ordinance of both Houses of Parliament, to lay down their Armes, and every man to depart in Peace to their

their severall places of habitation, with an of-  
 fer, not onely to passe by their offences then al-  
 ready committed by them, but to give redresse  
 to any iust greivance that they should in a peace-  
 able and Parliamentary way present to the  
 Parliament, yet they wilfully and contemptu-  
 ously refused that favour offered unto them,  
 and gave Battaille to those Forces sent by Au-  
 thority of both Houses to suppress that Insur-  
 rection, where, by Gods great goodnesse they  
 were wholly Routed, and a very great number  
 taken Prisoners; Now to the end, the like In-  
 conveniencies may be prevented hereafter; and  
 that the Peace of the Countrey may be the better  
 settled, It is Ordained by the Lords and Com-  
 mons in this present Parliament assembled,  
 That Sir Henry Vane senior, Sir John Sidley,  
 Sir Anthony Welden, Sir Michaell Levesay,  
 Sir Henry Heyman, M. Nut, M. Augustine  
 Skinner, M. Thomas Blunt, M. Thomas Frank-  
 lyn, Sir Edward Boyse, M. Browne, Sir Wil-  
 liam Springate, Sir Edward Master, M. John  
 Boyl, M. John Boyse, Sir Peter Wroth, M.  
 Richard Lee, Sir Tho. Walsingham, M. Tho-  
 mas Seyliard, and Sir John Roberts, or any  
 three of them, shall forthwith seize upon all  
 the Armes and Horses, of all those that have in  
 person appeared in that Insurrection and Re-  
 bellion, And of all such as have willingly assis-  
 ted or countenanced the same; By that have  
 will

willingly relieved any of the said Rebels, with  
 Armes, Ammunition, Money, or otherwise;  
 Or that have refused to give their Assistance,  
 (being thereunto required) to suppress the said  
 Insurrection or Rebellion; And that the Hor-  
 ses that shall be so seized, shall be sent to the  
 City of London, to the Commisary for Horses  
 there, to be Entered, and Listed for the Service  
 of the State; And that the Armes so to be se-  
 zed, shall be layd up in some place of safety in  
 that County; To the end, the same may be di-  
 stributed to the well affected Party of that  
 County, when occasion requireth, And it is  
 further Ordained by the Authority aforesaid,  
 That the said Sir Henry Vane senior, Sir John  
 Sidley, Sir Anthony VVelden, Sir Michaell  
 Levellay, Sir Henry Heyman, M<sup>r</sup>. Nur, M<sup>r</sup>. Au-  
 gustine Skinner, M<sup>r</sup>. Thomas Blunt, M<sup>r</sup>. Thomas  
 Franklyn, Sir Edward Boyse, M<sup>r</sup>. Browne, Sir  
 William Springate, Sir Edward Master, M<sup>r</sup>.  
 John Boyse, M<sup>r</sup>. John Boyse, Sir Peter Wroth,  
 M<sup>r</sup>. Richard Lee, Sir Thomas Wallingham,  
 M<sup>r</sup>. Thomas Seyliard, and Sir John Robarts,  
 or any three of them, shall have power, and are  
 hereby Authorized to enter upon, and seize all  
 and singular the Lands, Tenements, and Re-  
 vedgements, & the Goods, Cattell, and Chat-  
 tels, of all and singular the persons that were  
 Access, Countenances, or Abettors in the said  
 Rebellion, who did not submit to the said Or-  
 dinance,



dinance, and immediately come in, lay downe  
 their Armes, and repaire to their places of ha-  
 bitation, and to seize and Imprison these  
 persons To the end, they be proceeded against  
 according to the Law, and the merit of their  
 offence; Provided alwayes, and it is fur-  
 ther Ordained by the Authority aforesaid,  
 That the said Sir Henry Vane Seniors, Sir  
 John Sidley, Sir Anthony Welden, Sir Mi-  
 chael Levelay, Sir Henry Heyman, M. Nur,  
 M. Augustine Skinner, M. Thomas Blunt, M.  
 Thomas Franklyn, Sir Edward Boyle, M.  
 Browne, Sir William Springate, Sir Edward  
 Master, M. John Boyle, M. John Boyse, Sir  
 Peter Wroth, M. Richard Lee, Sir Thomas  
 Walsingham, M. Thomas Seyliard, and Sir  
 John Robarts, or any three of them, shall have  
 power, and are hereby authorised to compound  
 with such of the Persons aforesaid, as they  
 shall thinke to be fit objects of such mercifull  
 Proceedings, and to receive of them such sums  
 of Money by way of fine & Ransome, as they  
 or any three of them shall thinke fit, having re-  
 spect to the offence, and the Office of the Per-  
 son offending, and to certifie the names and  
 sums received of every Person, and returne the  
 same to the Guild-Hall, London, to the Treas-  
 urers appointed to receive money and State  
 upon the Propositions, and every Person that  
 shall compound and pay their money, according

to this Ordinance, shall be freed in their Persons and Estates, and discharged from any further Prosecution for the Crimes and offences committed by them in that Rebellion and Insurrection, and it is further Ordained that the said Sir Henry Vane senior, Sir John Sedley, Sir Anthony Welden, Sir Michael Levesay, Sir Henry Heyman, M. Nur, M. Augustine Skilner, M. Thomas Blunt, M. Thomas Franklyn, Sir Edward Boyse, M. Browne, Sir William Springate, Sir Edward Master, M. John Boyse, M. John Boyse, Sir Peter Wroth, M. Richard Lee, Sir Thomas Walsingham, M. Thomas Seyliard, M. John Robarts, and every of them shall be protected and saved harmless by the Authority of both Houses of Parliament, for what they shall doe in pursuance of this Ordinance.

---

FINIS.

---



Cavaliers new blasphemies.  
Encouraging Predictions.  
Another Popes Nuncio coming.  
Some happy Victories.

(235)

Numb. <sup>24</sup> 31.

CERTAIN E *Keith to S.*  
INFORMATIONS

From severall parts of the Kingdome, and  
from other places beyond the Seas, for the better  
satisfaction of all such who desire to be truly  
Informed of every weekes Passage.

---

From the 14. of *August*, to the 21. of *August*, 1643.

---

*Monday, Aug. 21.*

**S** Hropshire still breatheth out lamentable complaints against the Lord *Capell*, and his tyrannicall and Popish adherents in that County: for which, the inhabitants thereof may justly thank themselves, because they have wilfully brought those pressures upon their own heads; for they both by Messages and Letters invited the Cavaliers to come from *York* unto them, received them with joyfull acclamations and ringing of Bells, caressed them with feasts and banquets, supplied them with clothes, with money, horses and armes, and formed them into a considerable Army of some thousands; whereas at their first arrivall in those parts, the Cavaliers forces were but a few gleanings of despicable and necessitous Plebeians in *Yorkshire*: for all which gratefull Services and accommodations, the Lord *Capell* plucketh them still with surcharging Taxes and Impositions, under the colour of raising pay to maintaine his souldiers, but he inforceth the County to keepe them upon free quarter, and converteth the mony to the maintenance of himself and the Cavaliers at *Oxford*. And whereas the Gentry of that County promised the King, during his abode at *Shrewsbury*, that they would mainaine for him a thousand Dragoneers at their owne charge, they have since eased themselves of that burden, and laid it upon the Farmers and meaner sort of people. And the Mendicant Rascality of that County, who heretofore were glad, by way of almes, from the better sort, to lodge in barnes and out-houses, have so

I i      \* ransacked

ransacked many of note and quality there, that they have accounted themselves in their apparell, taken their horses from them, and like Gallants ride up and downe the Countrey, and now make their Benefactors stand cap in hand to them.

Which indignities, being partly acted, and partly tollerated by the connivence of the Lord *Capell*, hath so much exasperated and imbittered the Trained Bands of that Countrey against him, that they have of late begun to refuse to appeare at his Summons, and wish for freedome out of that Egyptian bondage; which, as it is to be hoped, they will shortly obtaine; for it is lately informed, that Sir *William Brereton* had besieged Colonell *Hastings*, who was gotten into the Lord *Cholmeys* House in *Cheshire*, in the meane while, the Lord *Capell* came out of *Shropshire*, joyned with some Forces from *Chester*, and went to give an Alarme to Sir *William Brereton*, at *Nantwich*, who issued out and beathim from thence, routed his whole Army, and hath followed him neere to the Walls of *Shrewsbury*, but what other particulars passed, or what execution hath been done upon the Salopian Cavaliers is not yet related, because the Letters from those parts were taken at *Daventre* in *Northamptonshire*, carried from thence to *Banbury*, and were burnt there, to conceale the good Newes they contained of that Victory.

Which information if it prove true, will open such a free passage for Sir *Thomas Middleton* and Colonell *Misson* into that Countrey, who are marching thither with forces to reduce the Welch Counties to the obedience of the King and Pailliament, that if the aforesaid Trained Bands, and all other oppressed Persons in that Shire, will but repaire to their assistance, they may easily free their Countrey from the insolency of those Tyrants, recover their former Liberty, and drive the Lord *Capell* and his maledicted Complices, either into *Chester* or *Wales* for refuge.

Sundry of the Cavaliers blasphemous Oathes, Curses, and Imprecations, have heretofore been published, that all the world may see, how execrably they labour, to despight both God and man, and since they continue in those Diabolicall courses, and also aggravate and augment their impieties, by the invention and addition of new blasphemies, I have thought it fit, at the information & request of some persons of worth & credite, to divulge what they certainly informe. Since the Cavaliers have gotten the City and Port of *Bristol*, and exercised their pleasures in plunderings and Ravishments there, to adde gall and Wormewood to their perfidious cruelties, and to excruciate the hearts and mindes of the good Protestants there, they have asked them

in derision, where is your Jesus Christ now ? And they have told them in plaine and blasphemous termes, that their Jesus Christ dotes now. Wherein they manifest themselves to be of that blasphemous Popes minde, who scoffingly told his Cardinalls : *Quantum lucris comparabimus ex hac fabula Christi.* And this is one strong note, that those Cavaliers are either Idolatrous and Superstitious, Marian Papiſts, or incredulous Atheists and Infidells.

Another true Protestant was putting some of the Cavaliers in minde of God, of his power and judgements, whereunto they blasphemously replied, a Pox on you and your God. Others of them say that God commands them to swear : And a person of note that is lately come out of Staffordshire affirmeth, that some of the Cavaliers in *Dudley* Castle made an excursion into the parts adjacent, and seized upon a Farmers Kyne, who followed them to the Castle to reobtaine his cattell, and besought them for restitution ; but they told him, that unlesse he would so often curse the Parliament, and swear so many damnable oathes never to assist them, as they would have him take, he should not have his Kyne againe, which the party refusing to doe, was forced to returne home without them.

And will not the omnipotent God avenge these blasphemies, though he deferre the execution for a time ? The Scriptures ascertain us that he will. And if we may give any credite to humane predictions, we may conjecture that their Judgement sleepeth not, for many grave Divines have foretold since the eruption of these distractions amongst us, that God would certainly confound the Cavaliers, because they began to blaspheme his Sacred Name; one Master Bisterfeld writes thus out of *Transylvania* ; *In Anglia Bonis salutaris, Adalis exitialis erit Catastrophe. Tale quin & acrim quorundam Perditorum Luxuries Flagitabit remedium.* Concurrant with these are *Henry Alsted*, and Master *Booker* in his present Almanacke, that Popery should be consumed ; *Et quod Scelera monstrosa, portentosa, ac prodigiosa, magnam vim Malorum & Calamitatum nobis ostentant, portendunt, pramonstrant, acque prænunciant* ; which no doubt will fall upon those blasphemous Cavaliers.

*Tuesday, August 15.*

From *Venice* in *Italy* they write for a certaine truth, that the Pope is sending another Nuncio to the Queen of England, to perfect no doubt the maine designe for the setting up of Popery, and the Extirpation of Protestantcy, and it is the rather supposed to be so, because he that is coming now is the Abbot *Scarpasii* of *Piemont*, who is a Clergy man, whereas the other two that were here before, were Lay men, the better to conceale those purposes and intentions, and yet their juggling were soone espied and discovered.



The Cavaliers now strongly besieged *Glocester*, and some say, that the King lieth within two miles of that City to see the event of the siege. And it is certainly affirmed, that Colonell *Masse* who is the Governour thereof, together with all the Citizens, have resolved to make good that place against the Cavaliers, or else to loose their lives, because they cannot confide in the Cavaliers Compositions, since they perfidiously violated their Agreement at *Bristol*. And that the Cavaliers have twice or thrice assaulted the City, but have beene repelled with the losse of at least a thousand of their men, inso-much that the defendants hope to hold out as long as their Ammunition lasteth, and pity it is that they should not be relieved before it be totally spent. And is hoped, that the Lord Generall of the Parliaments Army will send some aide to them, because he Yesterday Mustered his Horse at *Kingston* upon *Thames*, and found them to amount to the number of 4000. compleate, whereupon it is thought that his Excellency will spare 2000. of them for so good a worke.

On Sunday last, seventeene Trunckes belonging to the Earle of *Holland*, were taken going up the River of *Thames* in a Barge to *Oxford*, and are carried into *Windfor* Castle, ten of them went under the name of the *Lady Page*, and it is thought they are stuffed with moneys, because they were very heavy.

The City of *London* hath now begun to take a care of its owne safety and wel-fare, for by an Order from the Committee for the Militia, the persons of many disaffected Citizens together with their Apprentices are seized on, and for want of safe prisons to retayne them in, they are committed, to the Custody of *Saint Faith* under the great Cathedrall of *Saint Paul*.

Out of *Devonshire* it is informe, that the Inhabitants of *Barnstable*, *Beddyford* and *Terrington*, in the North part of that County, are joyned in a body, and are gone into *Cornwall*, and that they intend to seize upon the houses, estates and goods of such of the *Cornish* Cavaliers as now besiege *Excester*, endeavouring by that meanes to draw them from that City, to looke to the safety of their owne substances at home: Which Policie was heretofore used by the *Romans* to draw *Hanniball* out of *Italy*, when he had almost wasted and overrunne it.

*Monsieur Dalbier* His Excellencies Quarter-Master Generall, hath lately done a good piece of service, for he went with a party of Horse into *Berkshire*, and tooke a whole Troope of the Cavaliers Horse at *Redding* in that County, which had done much spoile there, by pillaging and plundering many well-affected Persons.

Wednesday,

Wednesday, August 16.

Out of France they write; That the Queene Regent hath something to do to please the severall discontented Parties and Factions which begin to appeare there. That the Cardinall *Macarini* is least envied. That some dayes since *des Noyers* was come to *Paris* in a disguised habite, which the Queene hath taken very ill. That one Faction is altogether for the house of *Bourbon*, and the other for the house of *Guyse*, but the Queene remains neuterall. That the Prince of *Conde* begins to insinuate with the Protestants there. That the Jesuits begin again to creepe into the Court, and make themselves potent, but the Sorbonists have lately published some Invectives against them. That there hath beene great talk there, that the Queene Regent is sending Monsieur *Beikieure* (who hath beene formerly Ambassadour) into England, to mediate an Accommodation betweene the King and Parliament, but there is no certainty of it. That the Subjects thorowout the whole Kingdome of France, urge with the greatest importunity, the taking off of a number of heavy Taxes, which of late hath beene imposed upon them, and some of those Taxes are already abolished by the Parliament. That the Scottish Ambassadour the E. of *Lothian*, hath taken his leave of the Q. Regent, in great discontent having been long delayed there to no purpose. She told him that the Scots did oppose their King; but he replied, that whosoever had told her so, was no better then a Villain and a Traitor. When she pressed him to stay longer, he excused himselfe, saying his presence was required in Scotland; but withall he told her, that he now saw, that the old friendship and alliance was altogether buried with the King. Lastly, that the Peace betweene France and Spaine is underhand as good as concluded, and that both those Crownes are fully resolved to fall with all their power upon England and Ireland, *Quod Deus avertat.*

From *Bristol* it is certified, That the King hath made Sir *Ralph Hopson* Governour of that City, and that the Cornish men which came along with him have deserted his service, and are gone home into their owne countrey discontented, because they have been still put upon the forlone hopes, and all desperate services, and yet have received no recompence, nor are permitted such benefit of plunder and pillage as the other Cavaliers enjoy. Whereby they may now perceive what poore fruits they have reaped for their disservice to the Commonwealth.

Thursday, August 17.

From Amsterdam in Holland they write, that the Kings successes against the Parliament are mightily amplified there, and yet for all that, Doctor *Ussher* the Primate of Ireland, hath entreated some of the English there, to seek out

a place for him in those parts, where he may have food and apparell, and that if he continue still in the minde to retire himselfe, they thinke that they shall be able to get him a Professors place at *Leyden*. And whereas there had been a motion made from hence to the English in that Towne, in the behalfe of the distressed Protestants in Ireland, they write, that they have seriously layed it to heart, and that we may be confident, a considerable contribution will be raised for their comforts.

Out of *Yorkshire* it is informed, that the Lord *Fairfax* hath recruited his Army at *Hull*, and gotten together three and twenty Troopes of Horse, and about three thousand foot. And to the end that he may further encrease his Army, the Parliament hath sent him many Muskets, Carbines, Pistols, spiked clubs and hookes, and two hundred barrells of Gunpowder, that were taken out of the Danish ship, which was sent to supply the Popish Army in the North.

Out of the West it is informed, that the Devonshire Forces which went lately into Cornwall, to seize upon the estates of those Cornish men that besiege *Excester* (in hope to draw them from thence) are againe retired into their owne Countrey, without effecting much to their purpose, because the whole power of the Countrey of Cornwall rose against them, so that their numbers being farre unequall to the Cornish strength, they were forced to give over their designe, and returne to their own homes againe.

From *Manchester* they write, that their Countrey of Lancaster is yet in Peace and tranquillity, and that the Earle of *Newcastle* hath sent them threatening Messages, if they do not submit and comply to his will, which maketh them diligently to stand upon their guard, and they have made all the possible preparations they can, to resist his fury if he should come with his Army to assault them.

From *Cambridge* they write, that the Drums are beating up in their Countrey to raise forces according to the late Ordinance of Parliament, but because the People there are now busie about their Harvest, their whole numbers cannot be so speedily compleated as is desired, and yet there are many young men that come in readily and offer their services.

Out of *Northamptonshire* it is informed, that Captaine *Lawson* was sent with his Troope of horse towards Banbury upon a designe, who met upon the way thither, one Captaine *Chamberlaine* with his Troope of horse, whom Captaine *Lawsons* Troope charged, and behaved themselves so bravely, that they slew about six or eight of them, and tooke all the rest prisoners, without the losse of one man.

Friday

Friday, August 18.

Out of Germany they write, that the Duke of *Simoron*, who is Uncle to the present *Paltzgrave* of the *Rhine*, is fully restored, by the Emperour, to all his Lands in the *Palatinate*. That the affaires also of the *Paltzgrave* himselfe, are much laid to heart by the well-affected party thorowout the whole Empire. That the French *Q. Regent* promise him to do great matters for him, and hath given speciall Instructions to her Ambassadors that are gone to the generall meeting at *Munster* in *Westphalia*, and hath commanded them to go thorow the *Hague*, for no other purpose, but to conferre with the *Paltzgrave*, for the more satisfactory advancement of his businesse.

From *Leicester* it is informed, That *Manchester*-Carriers came lately with forty packs from *London* to that Towne, with whom the Lord *Grey* of *Grubey* sent out a hundred horse to guard them to *Derby*, which they having effected, in their returne home, they met with another hundred of their owne Horse, at *Copps-Oaks*, in the Forrest of *Leicester*, where they joyned together, and went towards *Abby de la Zouch*, within about two miles whereof, they met with an hundred of *Colonell Hastings* Horse and Dragoones, sounded them a charge, and advanced to encounter them, but *Hastings* Horse wheeled about, and made with all speed to *Bagworth-Heath*, whither the *Leicester* Horse followed them; and after the first charge, *Hastings* men ran away, the other pursued them eagerly, murthered and cur them sorely, killed six of them, tooke sixty of them prisoners, with their horses, amongst which was a Sergeant-Major, a Captaine, and a Lieutenant: Which good piece of Service, hath diminished some of those Rob-Carriers, who, like the Arabians, or Italian Bandettoes, lie skulking upon the *Leicestershire* and *Staffordshire* Roads, to intercept all travellers and passengers into the North-west parts of the Kingdome.

Out of *Staffordshire* it is informed, That *Sir Thomas Middleton* passing thorow that County into *Shropshire*, had intelligence given him, that one *Master Giffard* of *Chillington*, in the Parish of *Brewod*, neere *Wolverhampton*, who is a strong Papist, had fortified his house with men, armes and ordnance, and much disquietted that part of the Shire, to which place (it being not much out of his way) he presently made, and after some small resistance of the contrary party, he tooke the house, where was found some Romish Priests, Papists, and other disaffected Persons, whom he seized on, together with their armes and ordnance, and it is reported, that he found as much money there, as amounteth to some thousands of pounds, since which happy interception, he purposed (as it is informed) to set upon *Dudley Castle*, which if he can obtaine, that whole County will be cleared of the Cavaliers.

Saturday,

Saturday, August 19.

The Confederate Princes in *Italy*, have prosecuted their Wars against the Pope with all vigour and celerity, for the Venetians have taken a great deal of Land from him lying along the river *Po*. The Duke of *Florence* hath done the like in the Duchy of *Urbis*. And the Dukes of *Parma* and *Modena* have also bereft him of much of his Lands in the Duchy of *Ferrara*.

From Southampton it is informed, that Colonell *Poulet* with a party of horse came lately into the City of Winchester in Hantsire, and pillaged most of the wel-affected persons there, and carried about fourty of them away with him as Prisoners, and being gone about two or three miles out of the City, they met with a party of Dragoners, which were sent out of Southampton against them, who set fiercely upon *Poulet* and his horse, slew him and two more of his men, and tooke about sixty of them prisoners, and rescued the Winchester men, and sent them safe home againe.

Whereas a temerarious Relation was inserted into the last weekes Informations, about the late yeilding of Dorchester, because it was destitute of its Souldiers 600. of them being with the Earle of *Warwicke*, and that Sir *Walter Erle* should have 1200. more of them against *Corfe* Castle, and that therefore the Town was forced to yeild because it had not above two or 300. souldiers to defend it, and that Sir *Walter Erle* should write so to the Parliament, which Relation being erroneious, and not rightly bottomed, I have thought fit to retract, that the truth may be vindicated, and that no prejudice may redde upon those whom it may concerne. Wherefore I affirme (having now been rightly informed) that Sir *Walter Erle* wrote not so to the Parliament as was related, that the Earle of *Warwicke* had but 200. of their souldiers, whom he sent back againe; that Sir *Walter Erle* had but about 200. foot besides his own Troope of horse against *Corfe* Castle, and that when *Dorchester* was yeilded, there were about six or 700. Souldiers in the Town, who perhaps might have defended it for a time, because there was not so great a number as 5. or 6000. that came against them. This being the truth, the dissonancy between verity & error I hope is cleared, concluding with the *Moralist*, *Humanum est errare, sed beluinum in errore perseuare*. From Sea the Newes is, that one of the Kings ships called the tenth Whelpe, was lately convoying of another ship laden with 400. Armes, 60. barrells of Gunpowder, and brasse peices of Ordnance to *Bristol*, and in their way thither, there met by some of the ships under the Earle of *Warwicke* command, upon the Western coast, who took the ship laden with Armes, but the Whelpe being a swift sayler escaped, and is gone into *Bristol*.

This is Licensed, and entred into the Hall Booke according to Order.

Printed by G. Bishop, and R. White.



AN <sup>25</sup>  
ORDINANCE  
OF  
EXPLANATION  
AND

Further Enlargement of a former  
ORDINANCE  
Made by the *Lords and Commons*  
*in Parliament, for Sequestration*  
*of Delinquents Estates.*

With an Oath for renouncing of  
POPERY.

---

*August 19. 1643.*

Ordered by the Commons in Parliament assembled, That  
this Ordinance be forthwith Printed and Published.

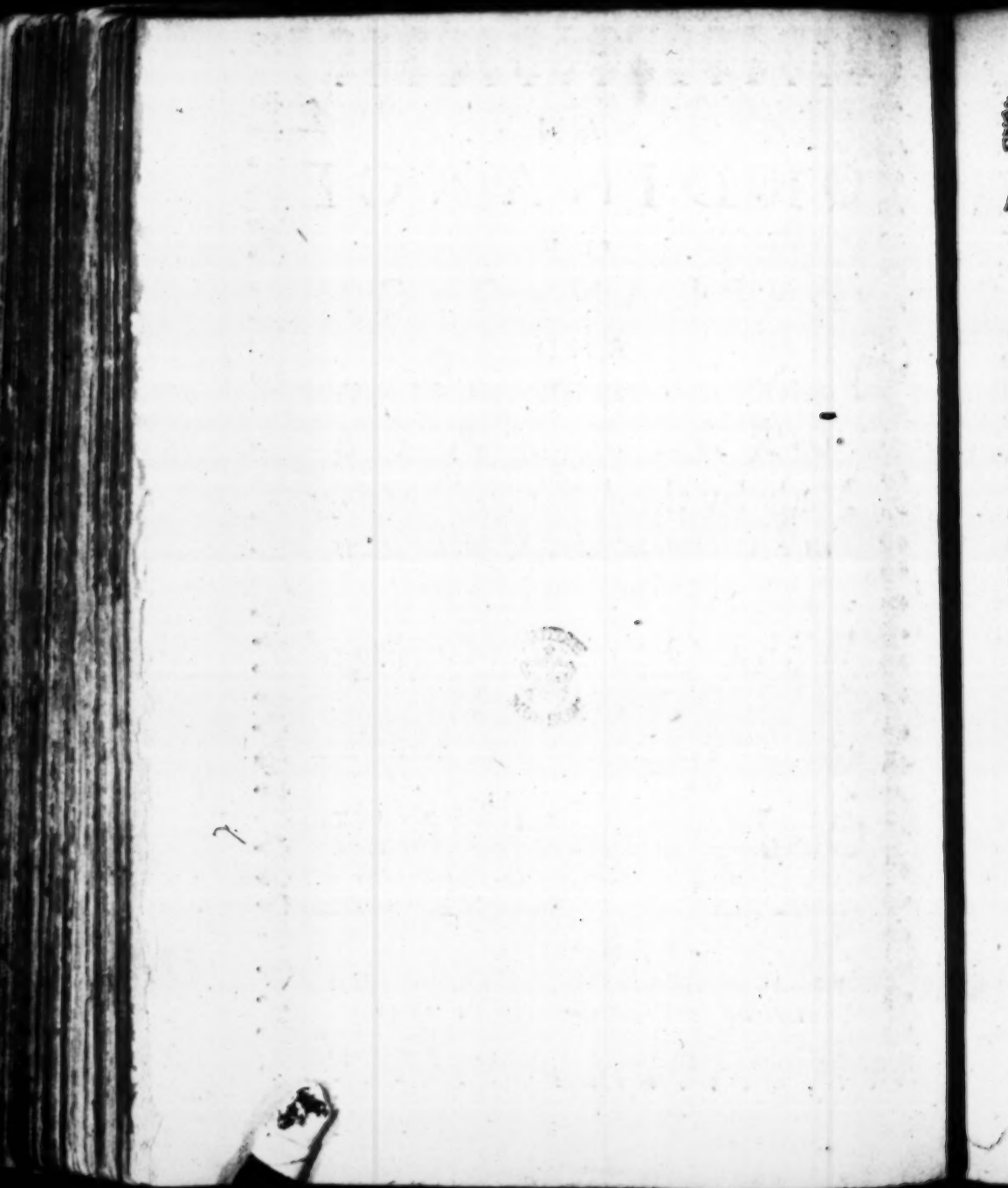
*H. Elsynge Clr. Parl. D. Com.*

---

LONDON:

Printed for *Lawrence Blaikelocke*, and are to be sold at  
his Shop neer Temple-Bar. *Aug. 21. 1643.*







An Ordinance of the Lords and Commons,  
in Parliament, for explanation of a former  
*Ordinance for sequestration of Delinquents estates.*



Or explanation and enlargement of  
an Ordinance lately made by the  
Lords and Commons in Parliament,  
for Seizing and Sequestering the  
Estates both Reall and Personall of  
certain kindes of notorious Delinquents :

Be it now Declared and Ordained by the said  
Lords and Commons assembled, That in the num-  
ber of such Delinquents and Papists, who shall  
come within the compasse of the said former Ordi-  
nance, and to all Intents and Purposes to be pro-  
ceeded against, as notorious Delinquents or Pa-  
pists, expressly described in the said Ordinance, shall  
be reckoned and accounted, all such as voluntarily  
absenting themselves from the usual places of their  
abodes, or dwellings, Trade, Offices, or Imploy-  
ments, and have gone, or shall go to any of the  
Kings Armies, or other Forces raised without con-  
sent of both Houses of Parl. and have there conti-  
nued, or shall there continue, and shall not within  
ten days after Seizure or Sequestration of their se-  
verall goods or estates, or stay made of their Rents  
by force of the said Ordinance (which said Seque-  
strators are hereby required to do) shew sufficient  
cause

cause to be allowed by the Committee of the County, City, or Place in which the said Seizure or Sequestration, or stay of Rents, is, or shall be made, of such their absence, going, and continuing in any of the said Armies or Forces: And all such as shall fraudulently imbezle, conceal, or convey away, all, or any part of their goods, money, or estate, without valuable consideration, or not *bonâ fide* thereby preventing or avoiding the paymēt of any taxes or Assessments laid upon them by any Ordinance of both Houses of Parl. or any distresse or seizure in case of *non*-payment thereof; or that after any such Tax or Assessment laid on them, convey themselves away, or refuse to be spoken with, whereby any Tax or Assessment laid upon them by Ordinance of both Houses of Parliament cannot be executed upon them or their estates, according to the true meaning and purport thereof: or that wittingly or willingly conceal or harbour any goods or persons of Delinquents, within this or the said former Ordinance, or that have had any hand in the late horrid and desperate Conspiracy and Treason of *Waller, Tompkins, Challinor*, and their Confederates, whether they be already, or hereafter shall be Convicted to be privie or consenting thereunto (except such as being not yet convicted shall discover and confesse all that they know thereof, within the time limited by both Houses of Parliament, to such person or persons as are or shall be appointed to take such discoveries and Confessions) or that shall sue or molest any person or persons who shall have yeelded obedience or conformitie unto the Orders, Ordinances,

nances, or Commands of both Houses of Parliament, or have been, or shall be employed by authority of both the said Houses, for, or by reason of any thing done, or to be done, in execution or performance thereof, or that have willingly harboured any Popish Priests or Jesuites in their houses or dwellings since the 29 of November 1642. or that shall hereafter so harbour any : And all and every person or persons which at any time heretofore have been convicted of Popish Recusancy, and so continue, or that have been or shall be thereof Indicted, and such their Indictments removed by *Certiorary*, or being not removed shall not by appearance and Traverse be legally discharged, before Seizure or Sequestration made of their goods or estates, or stay of their Rents, by force of this, or the said former Ordinance, or that have been at Masse, at any time within one whole year before the 26 day of March 1643. or shall hereafter be at Masse, or whose Children or Grand-children, or any of them living in house with them, or under their, or any of their Tuition and Government, shall be brought up in the Popish Religion : and all such persons as being of the age of 21 years, or above, shall refuse to take the Oath hereafter expressed ; which Oath any two or more of the said Committees for Sequestration, in every Countie, City, or place respectively, or any 2 Justices of the Peace, or the Major, Bailiffs or other head-Officer of any City or Town Corporate, shall have power to administer to any such person or persons ; The Tenor of which Oath followeth, *in hac verba*, viz.

## The Oath.

**I** A. B. Do abjure and renounce the Popes Supremacie and Authority over the Catholike Church in Generall, and over my Selfe in Particular; And I do beleve that there is not any Transubstantiation in the Sacrament of the Lords Supper, or in the Elements of Bread & Wine after Consecration thereof, by any person whatsoever; And I do also beleve, that there is not any Purgatory; Or that the Consecrated Hoast, Crucifixes, or Images, ought to be worshipped, or that any worship is due unto any of them; And I also beleve that Salvation cannot be Merited by Works, and all Doctrines in affirmation of the said Points; I do abjure and renounce, without any Equivocation, Mentall-Reservation, or secret Evasion whatsoever, taking the words by me spoken, according to the common and usuall meaning of them.

So help me God.

---

Shall

Shall forfeit as Papists within this and the said former Ordinances, and Seizure and Sequestration of two third parts of all their goods and estates Real and personall, and sale of such proportion of their goods so Seized and Sequestred, shall be made, and their Rents and estates disposed of, in such manner and proportion, and by such persons as by the said Ordinance of Sequestrations is appointed for Papists.

And for the better discovery of such Delinquents and Papists, in this, and the said former Ordinance described, and of their estates, Be it further Ordained, by the said Lords and Commons, That over and besides the former power given by the said Ordinance of Sequestration to the persons trusted and imployed in the said Service, the said Committees for Sequestrations, or any two or more of them respectively, shall have power further hereby, to examine by Oath or otherwise, all and every person or persons (other then the parties themselves so declared to be Delinquents) that probably may be able to discover such Delinquents and Papists, or that may be trusted with, or privy to the keeping or concealing of the goods or estates of any such delinquent or Papist, or that shall owe any thing to any such delinquent or Papist, and such as shall refuse so to be examined, or to declare the whole truth therein, so farre as he shall be so required, shall be committed to safe Custodie by the said Committee, or any two or more of them, imployed for their examinations, till he or they shall conform him, her, or themselves.

And



And that such person or persons as shall first finde out and discover to one or both Houses of Parliament, or to any Committee authorized for this Service, or to any of their Agents or Officers, any such moneys, goods, debts, or estates (it the same be imbezelled, eloynd, concealed, or conveyed away, as aforesaid) shall do therein an acceptable service to the Common-wealth, and shall have and receive for his pains therein 12. d. in every twenty shillings, so discovered after Seizure or sale thereof made, and receipt of the money arising thereupon, or out of the Rents of estate so discovered, the same to be paid unto him by the respective Committees, or Treasurers trusted with the moneys that shall be received upon the Sale, or Proceed thereof, without any further or other Warrant, and shall further receive such other reward for his extraordinary service therein, as by the said LORDS and COMMONS shall be further appointed and Ordered: And for the more speedie and effectuall Seizure, and obtaining possession of all such Debts, Goods, and estates, as aforesaid, discovered, or to be discovered.

It is further Ordained, That over and besides the Power given by the said former Ordinance for Sequestration, the severall and respective COMMITTEES, appointed for this Service, or any two, or more of them, shall hereby have Power to authorize their severall Collectours, and Agents, imployed herein, to breake open all Locks, Bolts, Barres, Doores,

dores, or other strength whatsoever, where any such estates, moneys, or goods, are or shall be, upon probable grounds made appeare to the said Committees or any two of them, and by them allowed in writing under their hands, to be provided that some or one of the said Committee, or the Sollicitor, or Constable, or some other known Officer of that County or Place; and one other person or persons of credit and trust be present at the doing thereof; and it is further ordained, that an exact Inventory, subscribed by all their hands, be taken of all particulars whatsoever; which shall be seized by vertue of these Ordinances: and one part of the said Inventory in writing so subscribed, delivered to the owner or owners of the said money, goods, or estates, or other things so Inventoried, or to some person trusted with the keeping thereof. And that where any Rents, Debts, or Estate pertaining to any Delinquent or Papist within this or the said former Ordinance for sequestration shall be found due, and the Debtor refuseth or neglecteth to pay the same, upon any pretence whatsoever, reasonable time being given to provide it, after it be come payable, and demand thereof made, the said Committees, their Collectors or other Agents whom they shall authorize thereunto under their hands in writing, shall hereby have power to distraine, seize, carry away, and sell so much of the goods and estate of every such person so refusing or neglecting as aforesaid, as may fully satisfie the said Rents or other Debts, together with all charges of seizure, removall, and sale of goods for satisfaction of the said Rents, or Debts: And if any person or persons

sons shall stand out or forbear to make payment of any summe or summes of money which he or they ought to pay by vertue of this or any other Ordinance of both Houses of Parliament whatsoever, made for the raising of moneys, untill a distresse bee taken for the same; that then he or they so standing out or forbearing, shall pay such double charges for all such seizures, removeall, and sale of their goods, as the Committee or any two or more of them respectively shall allow or appoint; the same to bee levied and taken out of the goods and estates of such persons so standing out or forbearing, by such as shall be employed to distraine for, and seize the principall summe. And if any person or persons shall undertake for the forth coming of any goods or estate at any time seized, by force of this or the said former Ordinance, all and every the said goods or estate shall be particularly Inventoried, and the Inventory thereof signed and subscribed by three or more persons of credit, and after given in to the Committee, under whom the persons making the seizure shall bee employed; and if it shall after happen, that any of the said goods or estate bee imbezilled or wanting, or be denied or refused, or not delivered to the said respective Committee, or to their Collectors, requiring the same by order of the said Committee, or any two or more of them respectively, that then the said Committee, or such as they shall authorize thereunto, shall have power to seize, carry away, and sell so much of such undertakers goods or personall estate, and profits of his Lands and Tenements, as may fully satisfie for the goods or estate so wanting,  
imbezilled

imbezilled, or not delivered; and also so much double charges for the seizure, carriage, and sale of the said undertakers goods or estate so to be seized and sold, as the said Committees, or any two or more of them, shall allow.

And for the better enabling of the said severall Committees, and their Agents, to make sale of all such goods and estates as are and shall be by them seized, and are appointed to be sold by this or the said former Ordinance.

It is further declared and ordained, that after the apportioning and setting out of some necessary maintenance (if it be desired) for the wives and children of such Delinquents whose goods and estates are and shall be seized (which allowance or maintenance the said severall and respective Committees, or any two or more of them respectively, shall hereby have power to make, so, as they allow not the wife and children of one Delinquent above one fifth part of his goods and estate so seized) they shall authorize and require their Collectors and Agents to make sale of the residue or remainder of the said goods by the Candle for ready moneys to be paid at the delivery of the goods so sold, within ten dayes after the seizure thereof, giving notice of the said sale in writing upon some posts or walles in the most open and eminent places neare the place of sale two dayes before the said sale, due appraisment being first made thereof by two skillfull appraisors, being men of some quality, and known integrity, from time to time to be chosen with the advice of the Solicitor for sequestrations, by the Committee trusted with  
B 2 the

the seizure and sale of the said goods : which appraisment shall be made in the presence of some of the said Committees, Solicitor, or Treasurer of the same County, City, or place respectively, and not otherwise. And for the more speedy dispatch hereof, it is further ordained, that the Committee of Lords and Commons for sequestrations shall receive no information against the particular Committee of any County, City, or place for sequestrations in any cause of this kinde, till the matter hath first beene certified under the hands of two or more of the said respective Committees by whose Agents and Ministers the goods or estate of the Delinquent were seized : Or in case the said Committees refuse to certify the speciall matter, or that otherwise Certificate cannot bee had. And bee it ordained, that honest, able, and sufficient Collectors bee appointed in every County, City, and place for this service, and their neglects or defaults be certified to the Houses, or to the Committee of Lords and Commons for Sequestrations.

And that all and every person and persons, who shall be employed in this service, or shall doe anything in pursuance of this or the said former Ordinance for Sequestrations, shall therein have the protection of both Houses of Parliament for their Indemnity, and bee held and esteemed as persons doing an acceptable service to the Common-wealth.

And it is further ordained, that every Collector within every County, City and place respectively, who shall receive any moneys in kinde, or make sale of any goods, shall deliver the moneys so received or raised:



fed by sales, to the Committee for sequestrations within the said County, City, or place, where such moneys shall be received, or to such Treasurer as they shall appoint, or other person authorized to receive the same within seven dayes next after the said Collectors receipt thereof, upon paine of forfeiture of twelpe pence for every twenty shillings, received or levied by sale as aforesaid, and remaining in his or their hands, which Committee or Treasurer, shall take order for the safe sending of all, and every summe so received to the Treasurer at Guild-Hall in *London* appointed for this purpose, Monthly, or more often, as they shall bee thereunto required by the said Treasurers at Guild-Hall, or by the said Committee of Lords and Commons for Sequestrations, or by the Committee of Lords and Commons for advance of moneys; and that the severall Committees, Collectors, and Treasurers respectively, shall have power to give acquittances and discharges for the severall sums by them received, which shall bee sufficient discharges to the parties concerned in that behalfe.

And it is further ordained and declared, That Master *Hobson*, Master *Bernardison*, Master *Hill*, and Master *Samuel Avery*, Citizens of *London*, shall bee and are hereby appointed, and authorized to be Treasurers at Guild-Hall *London*, to receive all moneys raised and to be raised upon, or by vertue of this, or the said former Ordinance for Sequestrations, and shall make entries thereof in faire books to be provided for that purpose, as also of the names of the persons, from whom,



and the time when they receive the same, and of their disbursements and payments out; for which their paines and service, they shall have three pence in every pound, which they shall so receive to be debated out of the said summes received.

And it is further ordained that no Treasurers trusted with any part of the said moneys, shall issue out any of the said moneys by way of payment, loane, or otherwise, (except as in this Ordinance is appointed) otherwise then and in such manner as is directed by former Ordinance for issuing out of moneys; and for the more exact and perfect keeping of all accompts touching the premisses; it is yet further ordained, that every Collector shall from time to time, make and keep a sure and perfect Inventory of all and every the moneys, goods, and estates by him seized, another of the sale or other disposall thereof; both of which shall be subscribed under the hands of two or more persons of credit that were present at the said seizures or sales, besides his own, and that he make and ingrosse a duplicate thereof in parchment, fairly written, one part whereof he shall leave with the particular Committee, under which he is employed; and the other part after examination thereof, he shall deliver to the Solicitor for that place, who shall transmit the same to the Committee of Lords and Commons for advance of money subscribed by the said Solicitor, and Collector, and two of the said particular Committee of the place from whence it is transmitted, all which accounts and duplicats shall be made and sent up to London in such manner and so

often

often as the said Committee of Lords and Commons for advance of money, shall from time to time order and appoint: Provided always, and be it ordained, that it shall be lawfull for the respective Committees for sequestrations, or any two or more of them to accept of ready mony for the goods of the said Delinquents or Papists, or any of them which shall or are to be seized according to the value thereof, in leiw and satisfaction of the said goods, and thereupon the seizure and sequestration, as to the same, to be discharged.

And bee it ordained that if any person shall wittingly or willingly conceale and harbour any of the goods of any Delinquents within this or the said former Ordinance (he knowing such person to be a Delinquent) that then such persons shall forfeit treble the value thereof, to be levied upon ~~his or~~ their goods and estates, by the said respective Committee or Sequestrators, or any two or more of them, or their agents, to the uses appointed by the said Ordinances for Delinquents Estates.

*F I N I S.*



August. 19. 1643.

Ordered by the Commons in Parliament assembled,  
That this Ordinance bee forthwith printed and pub-  
lished.

H. Elsyng Cler. Parl. D. Com.



COLONELL

26

FIENNES

LETTER

TO MY

LORD GENERAL,

CONCERNING

BRISTOL.

*This is licenced and entred according  
to Order.*

*Aug. 22*

L O N D O N,

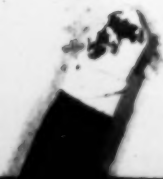
Printed by T. P. and M. S. for Thomas Vnderhill.

1 6 4 3.

COLONEL  
FLENNES  
LETTER  
TO  
LORD GENERAL  
CONWAY  
BRISTOL

I have received and send according  
to Order.

LONDON  
Printed by T. P. and M. at the New Theatre in Pall Mall.



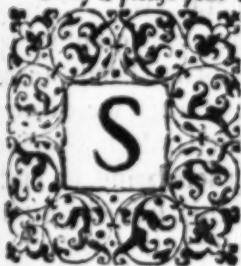
to  
the  
wh  
the  
fre  
fel  
Co  
of  
the  
or  
To  
ev  
tin  
the  
rio  
and



# COLONELL FYNES

Letter to my Lord Generall,  
concerning BRISTOLL.

*May it please your Excellencie,*



Ince the surrender of *Bristoll* (of which I desire to give an account before a Councell of War) I could not get any means to send to your Excellencie; and I would not have written at this time, but have my selfe waited upon your Excellencie, but that I finde it necessary for me

to stay here a day or two, to cleare my selfe of such aspersions as are most unworthily laid upon me in this Citie, when I kept the Town so farre beyond the enemies expectation, that they began to beleeeve we had gotten some fresh forces into the Citie, and held a solemne counsell of warre (the results whereof I have, being found in Colonell *Burkes* pocket, whom we slew amongst divers other Colonels and Officers of qualitie) whether they should proceed to fall upon the town by way of assault, or by way of approach. My Lord, I held that large Town with a handfull of men against a greater Armie then ever yet the King had together, foure dayes, being continually almost assaulted both by day and by night, and stormed by them in eight or nine places together, in so furious manner, as the like was never yet done in *England*, and the losse that they have received, doth testifie as



much: For there are neere a thousand of them slain and maimed, besides a great many of their chiefe Officers, amongst the rest, Coll. *Lunsford*, Coll. *Buck*, Coll. *Trevanian*, Sir *Nicholas Slaning*, and divers others, and yet we lost not above eight men in service, and none of quality. The enemy was provided with all sorts of Fire-works, as Granadoes, Fire-pikes and the like, and with Waines full of Faggots, and broad Scaling Ladders, whereon foure or six might climb up on a breast, and they made use of all those in a most desperate way, driving their wains of faggots into the ditches, and climbing up with their Fire pikes and granadoes in their hands, to the very portalls of our great Ordnance, yet they were beaten back in 8 or 9 places together, and entred only in one place where the works were not perfected, there being no ditch as yet made, nor any foot-bank within side the breast-works; notwithstanding all this, and that they had entred the suburbs, and drawn the whole body of their foot to that place, yet our Souldiers sallied out both Horse and Foot upon them, as they lay in the suburbs, and beat them back from street to street an hour and halfe together; but being overlaid with fresh companies, one seconding another, wherein we were not able to answer them, though they beat the enemy back most courageously at the first, insomuch that many of them ran away, threw down their Arms, and cried for quarter, yet being long overborn with fresh men which the enemy still drew down upon them, they were forced to retreat into the town; and then and nottill then, the Souldiers began to be disheartned, and whether out of wearinesse, or being discouraged, having been 5 dayes & nights together constantly upon duty, and in fight without any reliefe (for we could make no reserves) they began to sink away from their Colours and  
Guards,

Guards, and get into houses, do what their Officers could, so that of 14. Companies, I could not make 120 men, although I proclaimed that all those that were upon the Guards, should reparaire to their Guards; and those that were not, should reparaire to the Marsh, and that there they should receive both money and victuals, but I could not get them to their Colours or Guards, although the enemy lay ready on the other side of the Key (which at low water, which then it began to be, may be waded over) to fall over into the Town, and no doubt in that condition that our guards were then in, both upon the Key, and in the Marsh, they might in lesse then halfe an houre, have fallen into the Town by force, and used their pleasure both upon the Souldiers and upon the Citizens. Finding our selves in this condition, I called a councell of warre, at which also Sir *John Horner*, Mr. *Stevens*, and other Gentlemen of the Countrey, were present, I proposed to them our condition, and besides laid open to them, what store we had of Ammunition, that we had not of powder above 25 French barrells; and of match for above a dayes space; that the Castle it selfe, the works not being finished, was not tenable above a day or two, for that the maine wall would be battered in two severall places, and that we had no expectation of reliefe against such a potent Army wherewith we were besieged, in one, two or three workes. At the same instant, Mr. Major, and the Sheriffes did earnestly intreat us, that seeing we could not keep the place, we would not ruine so famous a Citie to no purpose, nor expose so many mens persons and estates to violence and plundering. Vpon all these considerations, it was unanimously resolved, that we should entertain a treaty with the enemy; and that if we could have reasonable conditions, that it were far better to save so many Commanders and

Souldiers both of Horse and Foot, and so many honest mens persons and estates, as well of our friends in the Citie, as of Gentlemen and others that came out of the countries adjacent, then to expose them all to destruction by attempting in a furious and mad way to defend the towne or Castle for two or three dayes (if we could have held it so long) without any hope of holding them any longer, for I will put it upon that issue, and without any hope or expectation of any reliefe within that time, or a longer time after. Vpon the treaty all things almost which we demanded, we obtained, excepting the Arms of the common Souldiers, and our Colours, which being poynts of honour, I was resolved to have insisted upon, and so we brake off for a while. But upon the earnest suit of the Major and Citizens, and others, called together my Officers, and fell into a serious debate concerning it. And when I was very resolute not to quit the point, very many of my Captains came in and told us, that they could not get six of their Companies together, and that they ran away apace to the enemy over the Key, it being now low water; whereby they not only shewed to the enemy, that our men were disheartned, and that they should have found but slender opposition; but also they shewed them the way how they might readily fall over into the Towne, so soon as the treaty should break off, which undoubtedly they had done, and given us little leave to retreat into the Castle, or any where else, I must confesse this Castle the ballance in my thoughts, that caused me to yeeld to that Article, which otherwise I would never have done, supposing that we should quickly find Armes againe, preserving the hoses and men of my Regiment of horse and foot (which had conditions been kept with me, I had preserved.) I have given your Excellence a true account of the

the carriage of this unhappy businesse, and of the causes of the surrendring of that Citie and Castle, together with the conditions whereupon they were yeelded up. All which being considered and proved, as it shall, by many witnesses, against whom there can be no exception, I hope I shall not only stand clear in your Lordships eyes, and the eyes of all the world, but that it shall be acknowledged, that I have done most faithfull service to those by whom I have been entrusted, and that in truth (which every indifferent man sees) the unhappy disaster which befell Sir *William Wallers* Army, did necessarily involve the fate of *Bristol*, both because I had unfurnished the Citie with men and Ammunition, to supply that Army: and it was necessary for me so to do, because the City was never put into a condition to subsist of it selfe against a Royall Army, although I was not wanting to represent the importance of the place, and the means how it might be defended in certain propositions which I long since sent to your Lordship, and which were by your Excellency earnestly recommended to the Committee, but they were not brought to any effect. What my care and pains hath been to preserve that Citie, having the whole burthen thereof for the providing of Men, Arms, Ammunition, and all sorts of provision cast upon me, having armed 3000 foot, and 300 horse, and paid constantly 2000 foot and a Regiment of Horse, for foure or five moneths together, without ever having above 4000 pounds from the Parliament, and 1700 l. of the custome moneyes: What hath been my toil and labour to get moneyes for these uses, without troubling the Parliament, how little advantage I have made for my selfe, how ready I have been to furnish Sir *W. Waller* with Men, Arms, Ammunition, Money, and all sorts of provision, (that I may say nothing of the hundreds of his maimed

mained Souldiers that have been cast upon my care and charge) I leave to my greatest enemies to speak the truth: for I know there cannot be found in the world so great malice as to deny it; and I appeal to him that knowes all things, to judge between me and those that expect a greater tale of brick from me, and will not afford me straw wherewithall to make it; and I shall appeal to your Lordship, and all indifferent men, whether more could have been done by me, when as after the defeat of Sir *W. Wallers* Army, I had left onely 700 men to defend that Citie against two such Armies as came against it, nor so much as one peny of money to raise more men, provide Armes, or pay those men I had already; yet God inabled me in five dayes, to raise and Arm 1000 men more, and with those 1700 men, and that Ammunition I had left, I made that defence that I have done, of which I am sure I shall never have cause to be ashamed of, nor do I beleieve that your Lordship will be ashamed to own me still, as

*Your Excellencies most humble  
Servant,*

NATH. FIENNES.

We whose names are under-written, do know the narrative part of this letter to be true according as it is here set down.

*John Horner,  
John Fiennes,  
John Clifton,  
Gabriel Homes,  
Tho. Raulins,  
Henry Archbould.*

*John Birch,  
Edward Tyson,  
Robert Johnston  
Chr. Stokes,  
Robert Bagnall.*

FINIS.





# MERCVRIVS AVLICVS,

Communicating the Intelligence and  
affaires of the Court, to the  
rest of the KINGDOME.

*The two and thirtieth VVeeke.*

SUNDAY. *August 6.*



OU heard last weeke of the affrights and terrors  
which the prevailing faction in the pretended  
*Houses* were fallen into, by reason of the sad  
condition of their affaires in most parts abroad;  
and shall now heare of the confusions and di-  
stractions they are in at home: the *Upper House*  
bandying against the *Lower*, the *Lower* at a rupture amongst  
themselves, and the Army in as great distemper as both the  
*Houses*. For it was certified this day (and had beene rumoured  
two or three dayes before) that the Lords had ordered that the  
Earle of *Portland* and the Lord *Conway* should be bayled  
(whom formerly they had committed upon a generall im-  
peachment from the House of *Commons*). And though it was  
much pressed by Master *Strode*; that *There would be no sitting*  
*for them, if those Lords were released and restored to the freedom*  
*of their Votes againe*; yet the Order stood, and the two Lords  
were bayled accordingly: foure of the *Peeres* which hereto-  
fore had deately cherished the proceedings of that *House*, be-  
ing bound for them; which added much unto the heat and su-



ry of their discontent. As also that two Bills being sent up to the Lords, the one for levying the estates of all whom they stile *Malignants*, according to the newly enlarged *Ordinance* for *Sequestrations*; the other for the continuance of the weekly *Assessments*, were both rejected by that House. Which moved Master *Martyn* to propose, as he had done before on the like occasions, that they would passe them of themselves without the Lords, whose suffrage and consent he conceived as unnecessary at the Kings in things pertaining to the *Commons*: but wiser heads thought fitter to passe by the motion, they being now in no condition for so great a breach.

As for the *Lower House* it was also signified, that on the rising of the House on Saturday July 29. Master *Pym* moved that they would heare some Propositions from the Earle of *Essex*: but the House having all that day attended the leisure of the *Close Committee* without doing any thing, would not be perswaded, but rose immediately; to the great disgust of that *Committee*, who formerly had beene looked upon with more observance. But this was but the beginning of a greater storme. For at the next meeting it was moved that the *Close Committee* should be dissolved; many considerable men inveighing bitterly against it, as the cause of all those miseries which afflict this Kingdom. And when that could not be effected, it was proposed and carried at the last by the major part, that a *Committee* should be nominated to take an accompt of the *Close Committees*; and of all others which were trusted with receipts or disbursements of money; and that none of the *Close Committee*, nor any which had fingered any of the publick moneys was to have a voyce in it: it being affirmed in the House, that great summes of money had beene drawne from the Citie and Country (to the summe of three millions at the least, as was before allcaded) whereof although the Earle of *Essex* had not received 300000<sup>l</sup>, *Waller* and *Fairefax* both not above 30000<sup>l</sup>, yet the Armies were continually in want of pay. And though *Strode* and others of the *Close Committee* did oppose it openly, saying, it called that power in question which had beene given them by the House; and used all cunning Artifices, and underhand

hand devices not to have it passe; yet it was carried in the end<sup>7</sup> the Lords concurring also in it, and nominating a *Committee* of their *House*, to the same intent. Which hath begot such true fears & jealousies, & raised such a distrust of one another, that it is thought the *Houses* will be too hot for some potent Members, who heretofore did governe the affaires of both, and were as uncontrollable amongst them there, as ever were the *Tribunes* in the State of *Rome*.

Last of all for the *Armies*, it was thus advertised, that the Earle of *Essex* finding him selfe abused in Pictures, censured in Pulpits, dishonoured in the table-talk of the common people, and a designe on foot of raising a new *Army*, under the conduct of Sir *William Waller*, which would soone put an end unto his authority, made complaint of it to the *Lords*, by them to be communicated to the other *House*; requiring that his *Army* be forthwith paid, and furnished with cloathes and all other necessities, his broken and diseased Forces presently recruited, reparation to be given him in point of honour, for all the calumnies and scandals which falsely (as he saith) have been laid upon him, that *Waller* be called to an accompt for the losse of his Forces in the *West*; and finally, that no *Commission* may be issued out to any one to have the charge and conduct of any Forces, but by his authority. Which bold demands, though very unwelcome to the Citie-faction in the *Lower House*, who had resolved otherwise amongst themselves; yet the Lords ordered for their parts (referring the payment and clothing of the Soldiers to the care of the *Commons*) that his *Army* should be first recruited before any other Forces raised, that he and his *Army* should have reparation by a Declaration of both *Houses*, for all the scandals vented against them, that the miscarriage of the businesse in the *West* should be examined, and the blame laid on those whom it did belong to; and finally, that whosoever was appointed to any charge or command, should take his *Commission* from his *Excellencie* onely, and depend on him; and that he should have power to call backe such *Commissions*, as hee saw occasion. And it is further certified, that though these *Votes* may give content unto the *Generall*, which was the mat-

(410)  
ter most intended, yet doe they yet much displease the faction  
in the House of *Commons*, and infinitely distast the *Citizens*, who  
are resolved to raise neither men nor money, if *Waller* may not  
have ordering and disposing of them, and this they sticking not  
to say openly as they walke the Streetes. And on the other  
side, *Waller*, and those who have before served under him are so  
inraged by these *Votes*, that an implacable and deadly feud is  
very like to grow amongst them, so as there is some hope  
when these plundering *thieves* once fall out, true men will come  
the sooner to their goods.

MONDAY. Aug. 7.

We have beene long in the intelligence of the former day, but  
shall be breifer in the next; the most of which comes from  
*London* also. For it was certified from thence, that they were  
more disanimated at the losse of *Bristol* (when first the newes  
was suffered to be knowne amongst them) then at all their former  
losses in the North and West; and that alsoone as the newes  
came unto the Houses, the prevalent faction there gave *Exeter*  
for as good as lost, especially since the Earle of *Warwicke* was  
come thence with his fleet, and had done nothing towards the  
reliefe of it, but added much unto their desperate condition by  
being so shamefully repulsed. And it was also certified that they  
had other feares which did more afflict them, upon the sight of  
certaine letters from the Major of *Plimmonth* to the Earle of  
*Warwicke*, in which was signified that Sir *Alexander Carew*, and  
Master *Thomas Arundell* their Governours of the Fort & Island  
of *Plimmonth*, were suspected to incline unto the King: which  
did so startle them, that presently they caused letters to be sent  
unto them, commanding them as Members of the House of  
*Commons* to returne to *Westminster*, to doe their service to the  
*Hansa*. But it was thought the Gentlemen had heard too much  
of *Hobham*, to put themselves into their hands, who shew so lit-  
tle favour unto those that deserved best of them in their present  
Rebellion.

It was also certified from *Bristol* that for a speedier ending  
of

of the siege of *Exeter*, and the totall reducing of the West under His Majesties command, (that so his Armies might unite for some other service) Prince *Maurice* with the *Cornish* forces and some troopes of horse, with many gallant Gentlemen who would needes attend him in the Action, was gone towards *Devonshire*; whose going thither, as it was generally conceived, would quickly put an end to that businesse. As also that for the settling of the affaires of *Bristol*, His Majesty had made that noble and deserving Gentleman Sir *Ralph Hopton* Governour of the towne and Castle; and under him, that valiant Colon, *Washington* Lieutenant Governour of the Castle, to the generall content of all men.

It was also signified from *London*, that this last weeke hath beene a terrible weeke of newes to that falling faction. For besides the deadly newes from *Bristol* (the losse whereof doth more astonish them then all the rest of their misfortunes in the North and West) and that they have given *Exeter* for as good as lost: they have beene miserably vexed with Letters from *Gloucester*, *Coventry*, and *Warwicke*, complaining of their severall wants, but specially of the backwardnesse of the people to make good those places, or contribute to the worke, as formerly, since this change of things; and plainly signifying, that unlesse speedy supplies be sent of Men, Armes, and Money, (neither of which the pretended Houses can afford them at the present time) they are not able to hold out against His Majesties Forces, but of necessity must give up those Townes on the first assault.

TUESDAY. August 8.

It was advertised this day that the prevailing party in the House of *Commons* had refused to concurre to many of the *Votes*, which had beene passed by the Lords in favour of the Earle of *Essex*; which breedes ill blood, not onely betwixt them and the Lords, but betwixt the Soldierie and them: and that considering that no Commission must be granted but by and from the Earle of *Essex*, the Independent Army which was so much talked of, is come to nothing; insomuch that Sir *William*

Waller hath not yet lifted above 600 of the 2000 which the City promised him. And it is further certified that the towne is very much divided about the businesse of *Bristol*, some imputing the losse of it to *Fines*, and some to *Waller*, according as they stand affected to either party: and that the disputation grew to so great an height betweene Sir *William* and my Lord *Say*. (who you must thinke would not allow his sonne to be a *Comard*, though he can cherish him in a *murder*) that the lye passed betweene them. As also, that Sir *William Waller* begins to be discontented with his friends the Citizens, who so much admired him being absent, and promised him such mighty matters, if he would honour them with his presence. For whereas on the first of this present *August*, he went into the new Artillery yard to list those multitudes of men which had long expected him; the appearance was so thinne and small, that he was very much ashamed of the disappointment. And when the new *Committee* nominated in the Citie Petition, told him that was no place to doe the feat in, but they would goe presently to *Haberdashers Hall*, and appoint *Commanders* to receive them; and then hee should see with what alacrity the people would come in unto him: that on the other side did as much offend him, to see he should not have the nominating of his owne *Commanders*. So that, for ought we can perceive by the preparations, the *Conquerour* is like to adde little to his *Westerne victories* by the Citie Army.

It was advertised also that some of the more peaceable Lords (to say no worse) taking advantage of the slow successe which *Waller* found in raising his Army, and of their losses in the *West*, proposed the renewing of the Treaty; desiring that such Propositions might be sent His Majestie, as they might reasonably hope would be hearkned to. Which being agreed on by the rest, and a Committee named for the *Propositions*, they drew them to some certaine heads, such as might give some little shew of satisfaction to His Majestie, but more security unto themselves, and a free pardon to all those who have beene either Instruments or Authors of this Rebellion. And yet this pleased not my Lord *Say*, who by chance was absent, and therefore



fore when he came next into the House, he laboured very earnestly to have them altered, and prevailed in it at the last. In such much, that whereas it was first agreed on, that the Ships, Forts, Townes, Magazines, and Revenues should be delivered to the King, without any condition; and if the Parliament should be adjourned to some other place, being the only points in which there was any shew of satisfaction to His sacred Majesty; he obtained to have both of them altered, and put into such generall termes as might best suite unto the humour of his friends in the other House. But being the businesse stayed not here, but brake out into greater and more publike heats; you shall heare more of it after a day or two.

WEDNESDAY. Aug. 21

It was advertised this day that the Castle and Isle of *Portland* (whereof *S<sup>r</sup> Edw. Sydenham* Knight Marshal was & is Governor) were reduced againe under his Majesties command, which had bene taken by the Rebels about March last. The manner how it was regained is reported thus. A Gentleman well known unto the Rebels which had the guard of the Castle, and used to be much there for his owne safety and preservation in these dangerous times, came to the noble Earle of *Carnarvon*, and gave him very good assurance that if he would trust him with 60 of his men he would forthwith make him Master of the Isle and Castle: the Earle considering that the Castle and Isle were richly worth the adventuring of 60 muskets, having taken so many armes at *Dorchester*, condescended he should have them; which being obtained the Gentleman furnished them with Parliament colours, and making towards the Castle with so consulted a speed as if he fled from an Enemy, called upon the guards and told them he had brought some Parliament forces to make good the place; but that they were pursued so closely by the Earle of *Carnarvon*; that if they had not speedy entrance they should all be lost. This was no sooner heard by the credulous Rebels, but all the hast was made that could be to set open the Ports: at which His Majesties Soldiers entred, and seizing on the



the guards, who looked not for such unwelcome visitors, made themselves masters of it without further trouble. A place of very great importance, as having the command of the haven and Towne of *Weymouth*, against which it lieth, and as the case then stood, of most infinite wealth, all the rich household stuffe and Treasure which had beene taken by the Rebels out of *Wandour* Castle with a great deale more of goods plate and money, being stored up there.

It was also certified from those parts, that *Peole Melcombe*, & *Weymouth* which were in treaty with the Earle of *Carnarvon* (as you heard the last weeke) upon the yeelding up of *Dorchester*, have since submitted to His Majestie: so that all *Dorsetshire* is totally reduced againe to its old obedience; which cannot but very much conduce to the dispatch of the worke at *Exeter*, and consequently to the absolute and finall settling of all the *West*. And it was also signified, that a ship of His Majesties Navy called the *Charles*, being the ship of the second ranke, had left the Earle of *Warwick*, and was come to *Falmouth*, according to His Majesties Proclamation of the 7 of *July*. Nor is it (in my mind) without some good *Omen*, that the first ship of strength and burden, which did obey that invitation should be the **CHARLES**.

THURSDAY, *August. 10.*

It was advertised this day that the Lord *Capell* with his forces appeared before the Walls of *Namptwich*, in hope to finde them in a disposition of returning to his Majesties service; considering how His Majesties affaires had thrived and prospered, not only in raising the siege of *Chester*, but in clearing of the *North* and *West* from the power of the Rebels. But finding them continue in their wonted obstinacy, he fell off againe, and retreated safely to his owne quarters, with the losse of sixteene only of his men. And on the other side to make amends for the defeilement of this hope (for it was no more) we had intelligence this day, that the Lord *Willoughby* of *Parham* being gone from *Gainsburgh*, on his redelivery of that towne, had recovered

recovered *Lincolne*. But seeing an impossibility that either *Cromwell* should time enough recruit his beaten and distracted forces, or that hee could receive any reasonable supplies from *London*; on the first newes that the Earle of *Newcastle* was coming towards him, he forsooke the place, and made what hast he could to *Boston*: leaving the City and *Clofe* of *Lincolne*, which he had nested in so long, to be the next example (as we have had very many lately) of Gods great mercy to His sacred Majesty.

It was also signified this day, that the heates in *London* (according to the season) doe still increase; and that the discontents which have late beene growing betweene the remaining partie in the two *Houses*, are at the last improved to a *sedition*, if not unto a *Civill Warre* amongst themselves. For howsoever the Lord *Say* had so farre altered the *Propositions*, intended by some peaceable Lords to be presented to His Majesty, as to make them of a better relish to the *Lower House*: yet when they came into that *House*, they were very eagerly opposed, and the *House* continued sitting untill nine at night; in hope such men as durst declare themselves to be well affected, would be wearied with their long debates; and they of the malignant faction, might there carry matters upon that advantage as they had done formerly. But finding that they fate it out, and carried it for the *Propositions* by the major part; they had no other way to effect the businesse, then to returne againe to their former practices, and bring downe their City Club-men to awe the Members of both Houses, and repeale those *Votes*. And so accordingly they did. For the next day, being Sunday last, they had so fashioned and prepared their partie in the City of *London*, that printed Bills were set up on the Church doores, (and somewhat you must think was done in the *Pulpits* too) a copie whereof wee here offer you.

*All such as desire there may be a generall raising of the people against those Irish Rebels, and blood thirsty Papists now in Armes, (fully purposing to destroy us, our Religion, Lawes and Liberties) are desired to meet at Westminster Hall, to morrow morning by nine of the clocke, being the seventh day of this instant*

August, to move the Parliament that this may be put in speedy execution.

*Twenty thousand Irish Rebels are appointed to come over against us.*

According to which intimation, the *Rabble* came in such multitudes, and with so great clamour, that such of the *Lords and Commons* who had favoured the *Propositions*, were forced to take boate and make hast towards *Kingston*, where the Earle of *Essex* then lay with that part of his Forces, which Gods hand and the Kings sword had left alive: conceiving that the declaring of themselves in favour of him (of which you heard at full before) had beene sufficient to oblige him fast unto their partie. But contrary to their hopes and expectation they found him so resolved for the other side, as they were faine to dispose otherwise of themselves. And it is said, that, notwithstanding those indignities which have beene offered to him by the City faction, he is so much inclined that way, that upon notice sent unto him, that the women had made an uproare in demand of peace, he sent some Troops of Horse amongst them, and killed three of them: for which (and some other former courtesies) that sex will ever honour him and his posterity.

On Wednesday last a partee of Horse (about fifty) were sent out from *Banbury* towards *Towcester* (commanded by Captaine *James Chamberlaine*) twenty of this number divided and went towards *Northampton*; the other thirty within lesse then a mile of *Towcester* met with the Rebels Forces, in number about one hundred and twenty, commanded by Captaine *Lawson*, which though they had so great advantage in number, yet Captaine *Chamberlaine* very valiantly charged through them with part of his men, (his Rere falling off from him) and with that small strength maintained a sharpe fight with them above halfe an hower, wherein he received many wounds, and at last was shot dead through the head, and one of his men also. Of the Rebels there are at least 20 sore wounded, as by intelligence from *Northampton* (where they are) is certified, and five were carried away behind them dead from the place, one left on the ground, and Captaine *Lawson* himselfe wounded.

This

This gentleman was the youngest brother to Sir Thomas Chamberlaine now high Sherriffe of this County, and was in most of the principall Fights; at Worcester, Keynton, Brainsford, &c. where his valour was eminently manifested, and by this last action wherein he lost his life, hath added further to the honour of that worthy and loyal Family.

*FRIDAY August 27.*  
This day wee were certified by Letters from York, that about foure hundred of the Rebels of Lancashire came stealing into Yorkshire, hoping to have surprized some of His Majesties horse quarters about Halifax; which being timely perceived by Sir Francis Miskeworth, he fell upon them and routed them, killed above forty in the place, and tooke fifty, the rest (as they were taught) ran away, and escaped by the advantage of the place.

At Coventry they pull downe many houses of the Suburbs, and tell the people that the Kings Army is marching towards them with twenty pieces of Ordnance, and they had some reason, for this day we received an expresse that his Majesty yesterday late downe before Gloucester, and sent in a most Gracious Summons to the City, in these very words, *Out of our tender Compassion to Our City of Gloucester, and that it may not receive Prejudice by Our Army, which We cannot prevent, if We be compelled to assault it, We are personally come before it so require the same, and are graciously pleased to let all the Inhabitants of, and all other Persons within that City, as well Soldiers as others, know, That if they shall immediately submit themselves, and deliver this our City to Us, we are contented freely and absolutely to pardon every one of them without exception; And doe assure them in the word of a KING, that they nor any of them shall receive the least Damages or Prejudice by our Army, in their Persons, or Estates; But that we will appoint such a Governour, and a moderate Garrison to reside there, as shall be best for the ease and security of that City and that whole County. But if they shall neglect this Proffer of Grace and Pardon, and withstand Us by the Power of Our Army, we will reduce that place (which by the help of God We doubt not We shall be easily and shortly able to do) to very much their*

themselves for all the Calamities and Miseries most befall them  
 To this Message, We expect a cleere and positive answer, within  
 in two hours after the publishing hereof. And by these presents  
 doe give leave to any Persons safely to repair to, and returne from  
 Us whom that City shall desire to employ unto Us in their businesse,  
 And doe require all the Officers, and Souldiers of Our Army  
 quietly to suffer them to passe accordingly. But this Rebellious  
 City answered, that they would obey His Majesties command as  
 they were signified by the two Houses of Parliament. And now let  
 the world judge if His Majestie could have sent a more Graci-  
 ous Message to His most Loyall Subjects, and whether these  
 desperate Rebels deserve any merrey, who after so many offers  
 do still refuse a pardon. But since their returning this Rebelli-  
 ous Answer, they have set their owne Suburbs on fire, which  
 surely is not to keepe the City either for the KING or Parliam-  
 ent. Yet His Majesties Forces quenched the fire, and in spite  
 of the Rebels, entered the Suburbs where still they are, and have  
 already raised Mounts, and digged trenches so neare the City  
 wall, that I dare promise you (God willing) a very speedy ac-  
 cunt of the siege of Gloucester.

SATURDAY, August 12.

This day newes was brought to Town of Sir William Waller's  
 extraordinary progresse in raising the great Army intended for  
 him: You heard before how the good women flocked to West-  
 minster on Tuesday last, to cry out for peace; three of the which  
 were killed directly in the place, and thirteene or fourteene  
 more most shrewdly wounded. And the next day, to shew the  
 men were better studied in the point then so, came downe some  
 3 or 6000 of the usuall backsters, which had beene alwayes  
 ready for such purposes at a minutes warning; and they cryed  
 No peace. And being told by some who were appointed to re-  
 turne the Answer, that they who were for the continuance of  
 the Warre, (as every one of them seemed to be) should goe to  
 Haberdashers Hall, and there list themselves under the condu-  
 ct and command of Sir William Waller, it wrought so much upon  
 the courage of those gallant spirits, (Reader, thou canst not  
 chooſe but wonder at such monstrous forwardnesse) that of



3000 men which would have no power, no fewer then fifteen sturdy fellows (in words at length and not in figures) listed their names upon the Roll to pursue the *Warre*. And some of those perhaps may see *Gloucester* one day.

It was advertised this day also, that 300 of the Rebels by the appointment of Sir *William Brereton*, have laid siege to *Eccleshall* Castle in *Staffordshire*, (an house belonging to the Lord Bishop of *Coventry* and *Lichfield*;) the greatest part of those who are shut up in it, being Ladies and Gentlewomen of that County, who purposely came thither to secure themselves in these times of danger. And that they are so gallantly resolved upon it, that though their victuals doe begin to faile already, they meane to stand upon their guard and defend the place (in hope His Majestie will relieve them ere it come to that) as long as they have horse flesh, water, and old leather left to preserve nature. Which as it shewes the bravery and courage of those noble Ladies, so is it an infallible argument of the incivility and rudenesse of those barbarous Rebels (who regard neither sex nor quality of persons) from whom the best that can be looked for, is more unsufferable then the miserie of *warre* and famine.

This day there came to Towne from *London*, the Earle of *Lindsey*, Lord Great Chamberlaine of *England*, and Sir *George Radcliffe*; the first tooke Prisoner at *Edge-hill*, the second made a Prisoner by appointment of the House of *Commons* at the beginning of this Parliament: but by what meanes and accident they are at liberty, is not yet made knowne to mee.

But because the Rebels are now so farre vanquished, that they dispaire of their designes, they resolve (like bloody cowards) to make use of all base advantages, for which end they are now beginning to ship away beyond sea such of His Majesties good Subjects as are in their custody; and wee were this day informed, that *Mudford* alias *Murford* (that infamous Browniticall Governour of *Southampton*) hath this weeke taken a learned ingenuous Gentleman one Mr *Jones* of *Lincolnes Inne*, and others out of Prison, and sent them by sea to *New-England*, or some such other place as the Devill and they think fittest



rest for their punishment, making the said Master Jones to passe  
 through the streets by his owne doore, but would not suffer  
 him to take leave, or speake with his Wife, or any other friend  
 or Kinsman to furnish him with linnen and other necessities for  
 this unexpected voyage; and that yester day their brother Re-  
 bels at London conveyed Colonnell Goring, Sir George Sands,  
 Sir John Goodrick and other gentlemen (three or foure Co-  
 ches full) to the water side on ship-board, there to lye under  
 hatches like slaves of *Argiers*, expecting every hower how  
 this barbarous bloody faction will dispose of them. Nor is  
 this strange: if you consider their devotion, for this aforesaid  
*Murford* sent up his Levite into the pulpit at Southampton, to  
 move the people to take the New Covenant, who (like a Priest  
 of their Religion) fell on cursing (praying they call it) in these  
 very words: *Blesse the King; O Lord, mollifie his hard heart which  
 delighteth in blood; open his eyes that he may see that the blood of  
 thy Saints is deare in thy sight; He is fallen from faith in thee, and  
 become an enemy to thy Church: Is it not He that hath sinned  
 and done evill indeed? but as for these sheep, what have they done?*  
*Let thine hand, we pray thee O Lord our God, be on Him and on  
 His Fathers house, but not on thy people that they should be pla-  
 gued.* And (to let you see both Priest and people are of the  
 same profession) *Saint-barbe* himselfe after he had taken the  
 Covenant laid aloud before many witnesses, that he had rather  
*see the Kingdome in a flame, then that the King should prevaile  
 against this cause they have undertaken.* This is pure Protestant  
 Religion, such as their brother *Judas* scarce findes among  
 the damned. And it was also signified by Letters from *Winche-  
 ster*, that this aforesaid *Murford* in pursuance of his for-  
 mer threats to the Prentises of *Southampton* (whereof you  
 heard last weeke) for refusing to take the rebellious new Co-  
 venant, sent one *Thornborough*, *Riggs*, and divers others to  
*Portsmouth*, where they are lodged in such a dungeon, as they  
 are not able to stand upright, but are forced to doe their neces-  
 sary acts of nature in the same place where the poore men  
 must make their lodging: And yet the Newes-men at London  
 have the impudence to tell us in print, that no body hath been  
 punished

*punished for refusing their Command.* And in the same Letters it is advertised that the Maior of *Somthampton* (a very ancient man) is so over-awed by this *Murford*, that being lately come from the two Houses (whose prisoner he hath beene these eleven weekes for his loyalty to his Sovereigne) hee must not now be suffered to goe out of the Towne gates, but every common Souldier by *Murford's* command forceth him backe again; in such contempt is the Kings Lieutenant amongst this factions; and all this out of *Whitehead* of *Portsmouth* his malice to the Maior, because he would not deliver the keyes of the Towne to him when hee demanded them for the two Houses; the good old Maior (being a *Jerry* man) answering him, *Me ne hang for you Master Whitehead, you hang for your selfe.*

This day also we received a copy of *Isack Pennington's* Petition against peace, (though moulded and penned by *John Pym* himselte) desiring the House of Commons, or rather commanding them *to persist in this warre (though they perish in the worke);* and tending a forme of an Ordinance to presse and force every man rich and poore (excepting some few) to take Armes for this cause, or pay ten pounds a peece; which accordingly was voted, and the Petitioners had thanks returned them from the House.

This day wee saw a printed Ordinance from the two pretended Houses, for the speedy raising and levying of a weekly contribution towards the maintenance of their Army, to be paid by the severall Counties and Cities of this Kingdome for two moneths together: as for example, the Citie of *Chester* is to pay weekly unto the two Houses 62<sup>l</sup>. The County of *Cornwall* 62<sup>l</sup>. The Citie of *Torke* 62<sup>l</sup>. The County of *Salop* 37<sup>l</sup>. The Citie of *Lichfield* 5<sup>l</sup>. *Bristol* 55<sup>l</sup>. *Worcester* 16<sup>l</sup>. The County of *Worcester* 500<sup>l</sup>. *Oxford* 400<sup>l</sup>. If the worthy Members will come to these places, the money lyes ready for them.

The Earle of *Northampton* this weeke intercepted divers Letters from *London*, wherein we see such pretty devices as the Brethren use to cheat one another; One writes, *That 3000 Cavaliers were slaine at the taking of Bristol.* Another, *That*  
Waller

Waller will be 30000 Horse, and 10000 Foot. Another, That Waller is 8000 strong already. Another, That 10000 Scots are come as far as Barwicke. Another, That the Scots will not come, because the Citizens have no money. Another, That all is lost except spirit small comforts. Another, That the Earle of Essex would have all their Souldiers leave their Garrisons, and come away with their Armes, lest they be all taken by the King. Another, That Gloucester cannot be relieved. Another, That the rotten Lords (a pretty-pretty epithete) would now have Peace. Another, That now they must no longer trust in the Parliament. Another, That the losse of Bristol hath discovered many false hearts, who onely had creature-confidence. Another, That to vote for peace now, was like the plot of the Trojan horse, and like Saul, to fly in distresse to the Witch of Endor; with a world more of such excellent expressions, as doe trouble me to want paper for them.

And the Printed Newes-men are this weeke turn'd Preachers, urging Scripture (in place of Newes) against fainting in tribulation, yet ever and anon sprinkling a lye: as 1. That the Lord Digby hath one Troope of Spanish Papists: (My Lord thanks you for raising a new Troope for him; but hee thinks you meane the Walloones at Fulham, allowed to have Masse by the Close Committee.) 2. That the Lord Willoughby of Parham's Souldiers marched out of Gainsborough with all their Armes: (You were cudgelled for this the last weeke, and yet you are at it againe.) 3. That the King commands all his men for fearing God: (for labouring to murder him in the feare of God; feare God, obey the Parliament.) 4. That Sir William Waller hath many thousands of men: (yes, at Roundway Downe.) 5. That those men are most of them good lusty Butchers (to knocke downe the Ox at Kingston.) 6. That Sir William went in triumph to Butchers Hall neare Newgate: (he went himselfe now, but next time he shall be brought to Newgate.) Lastly, That the Close Committee had newes that Dorchester, Weymouth, and Lincolne, were delivered up to the Kings Forces; and yet were not disheartned at it: I thinke it would please them to see one another hang'd; which God for his mercies sake, &c.

The Humble <sup>27</sup>  
PETITION

OF THE

*Well-affected Commons of England :*

PRESENTED

To the two Honourable Houses of  
PARLIAMENT, for a speedy Reforma-  
tion, (which hath been long expected) both  
in CHURCH and STATE.

*Submissively Supplicating*

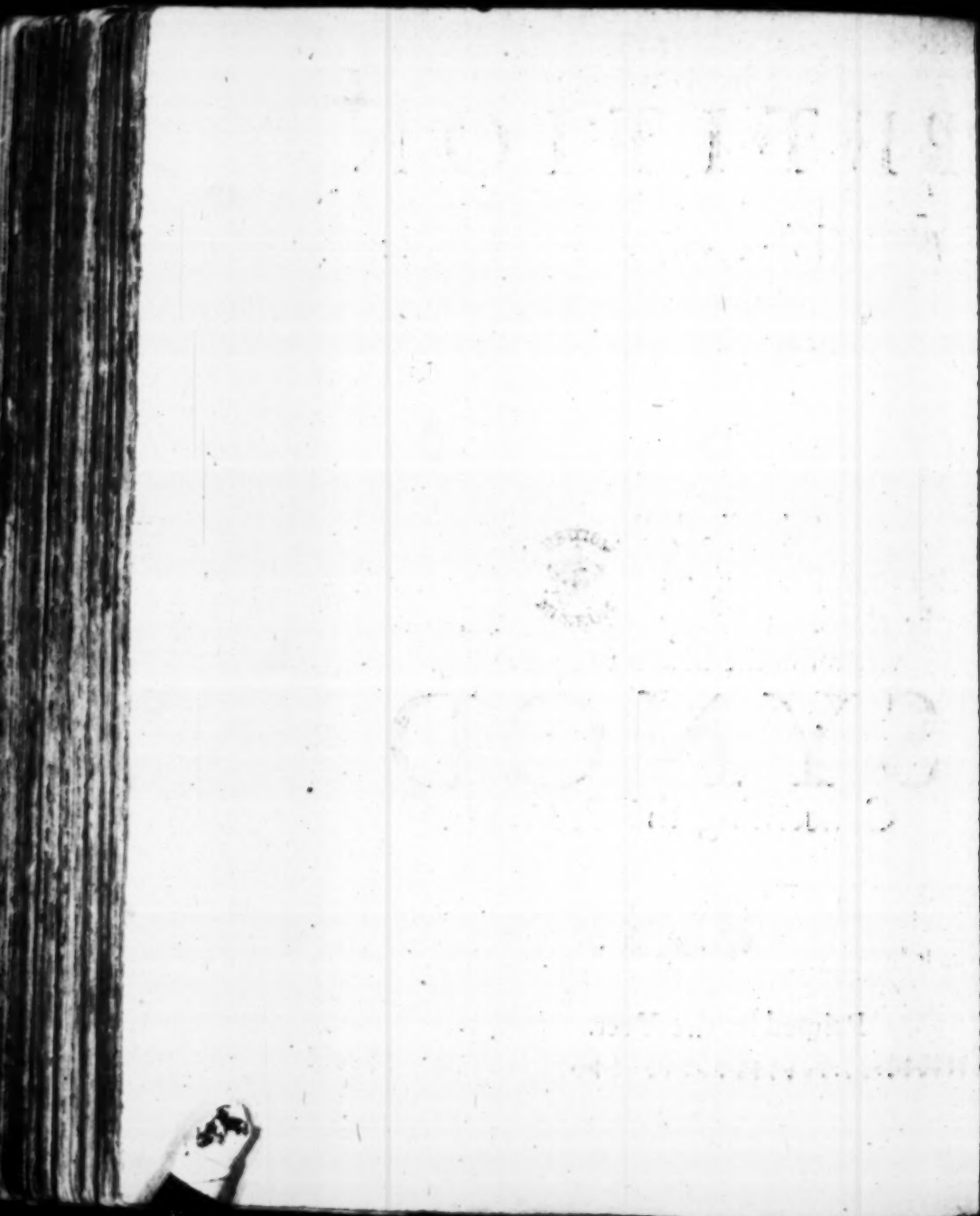
That Grand ASSEMBLY; That they would  
be pleased to Propound to, and Ad-  
vice with the Grave and Reverend

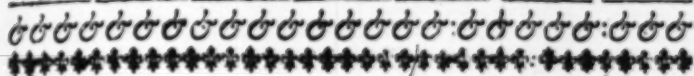
SYNOD

Concerning the Premisses.



<sup>23<sup>rd</sup></sup> Aug. Printed in the Year. 1643.





*The humble Petition of the well-  
affected Commons, &c.*

*Humbly Sheweth,*

**B**Efore we presume to relate our great Greivances, our grievous Perplexities, our present Sorrowes, and personall Sufferings; Give us leave (we humbly beseech you) to commemorate to the world your grand cares for the publick good, your unwearied labours, your incessant paynes, your indefatigable industry, your late-sittings, and early risings, your unanimous consent, and determinate Resolution, not to desert the *Cause*, which you are resolved to maintaine with your Lives and Fortunes. And though these your valiant Determinations have animated the blood-thirsty Papists to combine and confederate themselves in a hostile manner, with a powerfull Army now in the very bowells of the Nation; yet neverthelesse, such is your undaunted *Prowis*, that ye have already prepared, and raised an Army of Horse and Foot to meet and oppose them in the open Field. The *Romanists* have been a long time Arch enemies to our Kingdome, and our Religion; from time to time they have beene the onely Incendaries and Contrivers of the miseries and distractions of this Land. They have recrwted their Forces by the as-



istance of Forraign Nations, some of the Rebels lately in *Ireland* are joyned unto them, they have now many strings to the bow of their expectation in the Northern parts, and have strongly fortified their party by the ayd and concurrence of the friends of *Anti Christ*, or (at least) of those who are friends of his friends and Adherents. Their only end and ayme is to introduce the Species and Forme of *Poperie* into this Land; and their Superlative Designe is to abollish, and quite extirpate, (if it were possible) our true Protestant Religion.

To what a height of Insolence are they now arived at? Certainly that saying of the *Lyrick Poet* may be truly verified of them; One word in the Verse onely inverted;

*Andax omnia Perpeti;*  
*Gens Romana ruit per vetitum Nefas.*

Against these your Arch-enemies who are insatiate after our blood, and implacable in their rage and malice against us, you have forthwith Imprest men for Service, and raise this City and Kingdom, as one man, to subdue and subjugate them, who would Tyrannize, and make Slaves of us. *Ex Pede, quo cepisti pergit;* As you have bravely begun, so (In Gods Name) go on: Go on and Prosper; The Lord of Hosts, and God of Battailles go along with your Army, *Teach their hands to Warre, and their fingers to Fight;* And for your selves (Ye Worthies of this our *Israel*) the more zealous you are now for God, the more gracious will he be still to you, As you maintaine his Cause, so will he maintaine you in his Cause, In the prosecution whereof, an eternity of Fame doth attend you here on earth, an Immortality of Glory shall Crowne you hereafter in Heaven.

As we have thus in unsayned and hearty thankfulness

esse made a Reall and true Confession of this great  
 Councells valour and integrity, (you being the Ag-  
 gregate body of the whole Kingdome: in which re-  
 spect it is impossible, that such a grave Senate, the great  
 Councell of the King and Kingdome should erre, or  
 do any injury, *Vel ex odio, Vel ex Livore.*) So in the  
 next place; We the humble and poore Commons of  
 distressed, and almost destroyed *England*, do as in a Map  
 present unto you our manifold Miferies which we have  
 a long time sustained, and sad Calamities, which for  
 these many yeers we have groaned under, and are now  
 grown such an intollerable, and unsupportable weight  
 and burthen, that we are no longer able to undergoe  
 them. The distempers and distractions of this our lan-  
 guishing Kingdom are various, and indeed innumera-  
 ble; yet neverthelesse, (for brevity sake) we will re-  
 duce them to three heads: *Matter of Religion. Justice.*  
*And the Liberty and Propriety of the Subject.* How this  
 Land hath lamentably suffered of late yeers in all these,  
 the woefull History of these times doth sufficiently  
 testifie. To these three (with the leave and favour of  
 this Honourable Court) we may allude the approved  
 Opinion of learned Physitians; who hold that in the  
 Body naturall there are three main principles, Namely;  
*Coe, Caput, & Fecur;* the Heart, the Head, and the  
 Liver; Now if any these be infected, or any wayes  
 distemper'd, the whole body suffers: And as it is in the  
 Body naturall, so it is in the Body politicke. The truth  
 is, that the Heart, Head, and Liver of this Common-  
 wealth hath been dangerously sicke, so perilously sick,  
 that had it not beene for the sage advice, and mature  
 Councell of this renowned Assembly (the great Phy-  
 sician, the Parliament) the body Politick of this State  
 had

had long ere this been brought to an utter dissolution. The diseases of the State grow on, more and more, like a violent Torrent, they are likely to overwhelm the whole Kingdom, what with Innovations in point of Religion, corrupting in matters of Justice, and violation of the Subjects Liberty, and Propriety in his estate, this whole land strangely suffers, his Majesty of latter times hath been miserably misled and mis-informed by his Councillors in matters of State-policy; by his Clergy, in matter of Conscience; and by his Judges, in matters of Justice: And therefore that the *Grandia Regni*, the great affaires of the Kingdom have so unfortunately been miscarried, the fault is not in him, but in them.

The KING of himself is like the Sunne in the Firmament, which shines gloriously of it self, but when it is obnubilated, it is in regard of the interposition of some clouds about it: In like manner there is a Malignant Party, which stands between the Prince and his People; This is not one of the least greivances which we undergoe, and for the timely redresse thereof, that saying of *Solomon* (of mortall men, of immortall memory) is worthy to be imbraced, *Take away the wicked from before the KING, that his Throne may be established in Righteousnesse*. The two supporters of the KINGs Thron, are Mercy, and Justice; Unlesse Delinquents and Malignants be removed from his Majesties presence, his Thron will hardly be settled and established in Righteousnesse.

That the administration of Justice hath been perverted it is too evident, for a long time the Lawes have layne still, and not been put in execution: We all know, that the world cannot afford, nor the wit of man  
cannot

cannot invent better Lawes then this Kingdome now enjoys ; All the defect is, only want of execution: And that the Subject hath been oppressed of late dayes, we the poor Commons of England are too sensible, we have been depriv'd of our Liberties, by the imprisonment of our bodies, and detain'd of our Property by the pillaging of our goods ; all which we know is contrary to the Liberty of the Subject, and quite opposite to the known and Fundamentall Lawes of this Land. But our greatest Greivance which goes neereest to our hearts, is the violating of our Religion, our Religion, which is dearer then our Lives, Liberties and Fortunes: How is the face of it besmeared ? how is the purity of it defiled.

These premisses considered in the asoresaid greivances related, our submissive Supplication unto this Honourable Assembly is, that you would be pleased ( for under God is lyes in your power ) to take these into your grave and judicious consideration, and forthwith to redresse, and to administer timely remedies to these emergent maladies both in Church and Commonwealth: You have been long, and now are upon the happy worke of Reformation. Reformation is that which you endeavour for, and we all pray for ; we doubt not but that God in his good time will grant it, and make you the happy instruments in the accomplishment thereof.

And because the maine matter in the Reformation of this Land consists in the abolishing of Popery, the extirpating of Arminianisme, and purging of our Church from those errors & Innovations, with which of latter times she hath been defiled, Therefore our humble suite unto this renowned Senate is, that you  
would

would be pleased in the first place in your consultations, to enter upon the Reformation of Religion; that it may be settled and established in this Kingdom in the Primitive Purity thereof, that so the wholesome and Soul-saving Doctrins and tenets of our Mother the Church of *England* may be truly taught and preached, and the two Sacraments (as they ought to be) rightly administred. To the end, our last Supplication (which is not the least) is, that you would be pleased, to give Order to the Reverend SYNOD of Divines now assembled, (as we know your vigilancy and endeavour in this kind is not wanting) that they have a special care in this particular, and not be tardy in the performance, but with all possible expedition to hasten so good and pious a worke: The glory whereof will be Gods, the Honour yours, the benefit and happinesse the whole Kingdomes.

*And We your daily Orrators shall (as We are perpetually obliged) pray, &c.*

*F F N F S.*

The m  
practic  
deli

T O  
that  
procure  
endeavor  
glory, r  
consider  
wherein  
as also se  
the King  
King and  
shall in  
your C  
hundred  
fed and c  
places w  
and refre  
by also y  
not need  
want of  
a speedy  
give you  
ly of the  
great co  
then the

The nineteene Propositions cleered, and the 28  
practice thereof desired, for the certaine speedy  
deliverance of City and Countrey from  
feare of Sword and Famine. *propositions see*  
By Thomas Nutt. *12 Feb 51.*

**T**O the honourable Court of Parliament, and all others  
that desire neither shedding of blood, nor yet a sinfull  
procurement of peace, the Author committeth his weake  
endeavours, beseeching God, so farre as shall be for his  
glory, to give you patience, willingly, deliberately, and  
considerately, to read a part of his weak conceptions,  
wherein he hopeth you shall see cleered the 19. propositions,  
as also see a cheape way of accomplishing the hopes of all  
the Kingdome, except those that are wilfully bent against  
King and Kindome, Parliament and City, as also how you  
shall in all likelihood have a willing army to strengthen  
your Cities and places yet unplundered, consisting of twenty  
hundred thousand persons at least in such a manner dispo-  
sed and disperfed, as they shall not be a burthen to any the  
places where they come, nor whereout they goe, but a joy  
and refreshing to the places, and the places to them: where-  
by also your godly officers, in case of want of helpe, shall  
not need to send farre for them, wheresoever they be in  
want of them; but shall probably in all places not need feare  
a speedy supply of their want of men and food, if the Lord  
give you hearts to practice the same. Do you not heare dai-  
ly of the losing of Cities, and townes of wealth, and of  
great consequence, the which I feare do more affect men  
then the hurt of the poore people therein, whose condition

Aug. 23 1643 A



I beseech you to consider, and if ye cannot relieve them as ye would, yet prevent the like for others, as if you were, as I know not how soone you may be, in their case: it may be had not you desired them they would at first have taken the other side, not knowing which was best; but judging the Parliament wise and godly, they have followed your counsell, and stood against rebellious enemies; the which by an over-ruling providence of God, and his determinate counsell and will, it hath tended to the destruction of many, and to the dis-harbouring of many more, whose afflictions and miseries, together with other great occasions, do so affect you, that you labouring to help, yet cannot spare time to hearken to that which might effect your godly desires: for these eight or nine moneths your poor suppliant hath laboured to get a hearing, yet never could; Gods time being not yet come; but if hee incline you at last to hearken, I hope God will shew you by a poore despised creature what will tend to your deliverance: and whereas you are labouring to raise an Army for Sir *William Waller*, which doth I conceive but slowly increase, although your money decrease apace. Consider the wayes of Gods people are not bloody without his command; therefore consider how you might have a thousand thousand people for the defence of the poore countreys, besides the inhabitants themselves, which would be as many more, who all for love or feare would be your friends to defend your cause; if you will hearken to Gods way, whereby you shall let your enemies know, that except they seek their owne destruction, you desire not their blood, but if they will come and lay down their armes, they shall be entertained, and enjoy their liberties and estates peaceably.

1. Then consider with what willingnesse it would make the most go out, with courage and hope of prevailing in your cause.

cause, where almost all did go, and on condition they should  
place neighbours of every parish by themselves in the villa-  
ges, and officers of their owne chusing in their owne par-  
ishes should go and governe them, and there they should  
one worke for another, and take money for it, and se-  
verall poore men of trades should make ware, and have  
rich men at hand to buy it, and might without feare of plun-  
dering send goods to *London*, and receive goods from  
*London*, so their strength and store would increase apace,  
for most men would be glad by night or day to bring their  
goods into your compasse for safety, who also still would  
be guides to your living wall, I meane your multitude of  
people, to incompasse further and further every day; and  
every place would be glad throughout the Kingdome to se-  
cure their food and their goods, in their severall parishes by  
order of authority: if you should give commission to all the  
officers that go out to intreat, admonish, and inforce them  
that refuse in parishes and villages to secure their food and  
chiefe goods in their parish-Churches, and great walled  
houses for their own use from feare of plundering; and if  
any obstinately refuse, then to plunder them: which food  
being thus secured, none should have food for their money,  
except they would defend your cause in all places, the  
which would make them all generally willing to do it, know-  
ing that all their neighbours must do the like, or els starve.  
And againe, having by this means such a satisfactory ex-  
cuse if they be taken, that they must have starved: and you  
might put muskets and armes in the custody of two or three  
honest officers in every such defended place, and thirty or  
forty more, if but women, they would easily with muskets  
defend it: and cause all food to be brought thither, and  
none sold but from thence to all in that parish by the owners  
therof or their deputies, who being friends might keep there.

And if any should speake or do any thing against the proceedings of the House herein, or hinder or desert the cause, upon the testimony of two honest witnesses, he should have no food by the space of one weeke following, but at double the price, and so the people out of all townes aforesaid, and cities, and populous places would inforce all to such a conformity, that none, neither one nor other almost would desert the cause, knowing that in all probability they must needs prevaile, when all villages shall be so filled with strength of men and women, who having all their chiefe goods and food in the Church secure, they will incompasse the enemy rather then they shal get it, both men, women, boyes and maids would unanimously set upon them and destroy them, being so strengthened with as many more as they had before in their towne; and then they that are in the Church might alwayes have a Centinell on the top of every steeple, which might give warning round about to their neighbouring townes; by setting up a pole on the steeple top with a black eloth in the day, and a great torch or link on fire on a pole in the night, reaching much higher then the steeple top. The neighbouring townes having their owne goods so also secured, in their Church, and many of our helpers also to go with them, and then all having such kinde of weapons as I can show, the which every one almost may make for themselves for 6. pence or 8. pence cost, a blow whereof would kill a horse, and yet a little youth or wench might use the same against any man with sword and poleaxe: so that were the enemies number greater or smaller, it were impossible almost that any should escape, but by deliveering up horses and armes, and then you need neither kill them nor take them, but let them go back to help to eat up your enemies food, and tell them, if they will fetch such as are the great maintainers of their cause, and deliver them up,

you

you then will entertaine themselves, and let them have food if they will worke among you, and live like honest men: for we desire no mans blood: for you may be sure that they must needs come short of food; for they have made and do make great wast, and they do and must keep many that are gone to them out of our countreys and all other countreys in the Kingdome, besides many that the Queen hath procured, which will all helpe to eat faster then they know how to get, if God would move you to take this course: so also you shall finde many Irish in your compasse, which you might send to the enemies, and send them word you could send them more if they had meat for them, but our food must be for our friends.

If this course were taken, ye should not, I conceive, heare within a while, one black mouth open against your proceedings: but seeing your side the strongest, and all hopes of the others prevailing quashd, all would take part, speak and doe for the Parliament in their proceedings, although more for feare then love: whereas now the food in Parishes not being secured in such places, ye heare by lamentable experience how they plunder and spoile, the reason is, the poore inhabitants now having their chiefe goods and food in their own houses, dare not stir out at the enemies approach to resist, fearing if they goe out, the enemies will come in and plunder them: and if there come but ten or twenty, they will plnder a whole town, fearing there are many more behind, and so men are hiding their chiefe goods for feare: whereas this course being taken, that feare were gone, not onely from that town, but all about it, so that with warning as aforesaid, they would irresistibly destroy them, if they did not lay down armes, and deliver up their horses, and then plundering them, let them go with their lives. In this before set down are the 5. first Propositions in som measure cleared.

6 If the course above-written be not taken, there will I feare be fire set on barnes of corne when it is got in, but by this course you may prevent it. The 7. is formerly answered.

For the eighth, if God would move authority to command, that inasimuch as Barley and Rye is good bread-corn, that they might make but halfe the barley into malt, and make no beere to retaile at any dearer rate then two quarts a penny, under a strict penalty, and authority by Officers in every Parish to punish the same, as by a Justice of Peace. The 9. and 10. are formerly answered.

I conceive there should hardly need any, or but very few Captains or Colonels, or the horses and their riders these wayes, and halfe the money in the other way would serve the turne, for every one might be at worke of their trades that had any, and others watching, fortifying and making brest-works about Church-yards, and stopping roads, high-wayes and bridges, so that we would hardly go to our enemies, and they would have but little joy in comming among us, for if they did go back, it must be with hungry bellies.

The 12. is formerly in part answered, for women would be helpfull to their husbands and family, and might be Centinels on Steeples, as also learn to defend with muskets from the Churches, where the enemies could not hurt them with muskets through the wals: and by the way, if you did cause some with a far greater bore, and half as long again as muskets, so to shoot from Churches and other places of safeguard. You might also by the leaning of a black cloth on a pole, or a torch, as aforesaid, East, West, North or South, discover which way the enemy goes, or by certaine sounds of great horns of brasse, which would be heard far, and he might give one Sound if they went East, two if West, three if North, foure if South, or the like. By the same also they might let their neighbouring townes know  
how



how far off they were by other distinctions of sounds.

13 When three quarters of the people were gone, then food and firing would last foure times so long.

14 If this course were taken, many would believe you would prevaile, and so would stay, that thinke they should die if the other prevaile. The 15. is answered in the 12. the 16. and 17. also are answered.

The 18. is, not to let any body passe toward the enemy or from him, but take the messenger, and let one of ours carry forth the approved letters.

These things propounded being considered, almost all would go, and not divide families, but wives, children, and servants with their masters, all would go, and that willingly, with courage, and hope to prevaile, and all folkes not in one place in a huge body to do nothing, but every one should have continuall employment, no horses almost kept at charge in City or Countrey, but those that should be employed in other labour, how joyfully would all imbrace, and so the city and those places should have continuall trading, and be a refreshing and a wal of defence each to other.

Consider again, when mens goods are secured out of their dwellings, so that they have nothing to lose in their houses, they may the better, and wil let helpers have roomes to subsist in, and use them kindly, seeing they know they cannot steale when all their goods are secured. And whosoever shal refuse to have his goods so secured, or any neighbour that should conceal him, or not help to plunder him, should be plundered: and whosoever hath a house wel walled for security against muskets, and wil not suffer it to be employed for your service, let him be plundered. And whatsoever town should refuse to help other towns, at the approach of the enemy, should be plundered, and have no food for mony.

Then get hoope-makers in every village, and teach all boyes



boyes and girles of any green sticks to make crosse hoopes, such as hang at Taverns, that they may have them to fill all high wayes with them, whereinto if a horse get a foot, he can hardly shift casting his rider, and when all is done, they are good fuell. Any boy or girle would learne almost in an houre to make them so as to serve that purpose, so that they should not march night nor day till they first did light and gather them up, in which time our helpers need not stand still, and which are soon cast out of the way for your owne good occasions. And who so should offer violence to any of your Officers, should have Martiall Law, and who so should speak against them should be punished: and if any of the Officers do any wrong, they should be severely punished. So they would make trenches and breast-works about the places of store, and make every place so strong, as you should shortly neither need to feare home bred nor forraigne enemies.

That no food might be bought or sold but at such places where every man might have money for his commodities, Then you need not presse men, or if you did, you need not feare they would take to the other side, for feare of starving, most will be willing to go with the multitude.

Many things for want of roome I am constrained to omit, many more I beleeve God would minde me of daily, if I could have recourse to any daily to declare the same.

The Authour hath a twentieth Proposition, conducing to the performance of the nineteene with much readinesse, which he reserveth for Authority in private.

One maine thing is left out, namely how corne may be threshed as fast as reaped, which he can declare to Authority, which will secure it from feare of fire.

Severall

29

# LETTERS

OF

Great Importance,

AND

Good Successse.

Lately obtained against the Fellowship  
of *Bristol*, by Captain *William Smith*, Captain of  
his Majesties Ship called the *Swallow*, now in  
service for the King and Parliament.

And likewise the Lord Admiralls design upon  
*Bristol*, and the Navy making ready there under the  
Command of Sir *Iohn Pennington*.

LONDON,

Printed for *Lawrence Blaiklock*, at the signe of the  
*Aug. 23* Sugar-loafe neare Temple Barre, 1643.



S I R,



According to my last unto you, I set saile on the third of *August* 1643. out of *Kinsayle* to ply to the Eastward, and between the *Saultiers* and the *Smales*, I made a *Sayle* some two leagues to the Eastward, on the fifth of the same moneth, in the Morning, and at Even fetch-  
ing her up, she proved to be a vessell belonging to *North Yarmouth*, and come from *Strangford* in *Ireland*, laden with wood, and bound for *Milford* in *Wales*, to deliver there: And in-  
quiring what newes, the Master told mee that hee met with *Captaine Jordan*, in the Expedition, who had taken a *Hamburger*, burthen about three hundred Tuns, of force, sixteene Gunnes, being laden with Salt and other provisions, she came from *Rochell* in *France*, and was bound for the reliefe of the *Rebells*, and was taken before *St. Davids* head on the Coast of *Wales*, the Master further informed me, that he did beleeve *Captain Jordan* was gon for *Milford*, and I having a great desire to meet with *Captain Jordan*, I bore in for that Harbour, not knowing how he might be engaged, and in case I found him not there, then to desire the Gentlemen of that Countrey to send Heu and Cry to apprehend divers pas-  
sengers who *Captain Jordan* had forced on Shoare before he got possession of the prize, and when I came before the Harbours mouth, a Fisherman came on board of me, who told me that in *Milford* there were two ships, men of War, the one was the fellowship of *Bristoll*, burthen about four hundred Tunnes, of force, 24 Gunnes, having in her Foure Captains, viz. *Captain Barnaby Bu-ley*, *Captain Brooks*, *Captain William Hayle*, and *Captain Banister*, the other was the *Hart Friggot*, wherein commanded *Captain Richard Nelson*, the said Captains had summoned aboard the Fellowship all the Gentry in those parts, and certified that the King had rassen *Bristoll*, and that all the Kingdom did now repaire unto his Maie-  
stie to seek for his gracious pardon, and that the Parliaments forces were all overthrowne, and that His Maieitie would suddenly march for *London*, all *Kent* being now in armes to assist the King, *Chattom* and *Rochell* were also taken, therefore they would advise that Countrey presently to present a Petition to His Maieitie, in tender of their service unto him, and also to raise such a considerable sum of money, as they in their wisdom should conceive

conceive meet to comply with His Majesties occasions, and so come aboard them, and they would present them to His Majestie, but in case they should not doe this, then they and their posterity were ruined for ever, for Prince *Rupert* would immediately come down and Plunder their Countrey: And his Majestie had sent them out to command all his Majesties ships, and other ships that were on that, or the Irish coast, that on their Allegiance they should repaire to *Bristoll*, and the Commanders & Martiners should have his Majesties gracious pardon, and the Commanders should receive from his Majestie both employment, honour, and great reward, and the Martiners should have a large gratuitie. Vpon this intelligence, I called to me all the Officers of the Swallow, and then the ships company, informed them, what I had heard, and that the ship was rich, having aboard her, divers goods belonging to the *Marchants* of *Bristoll* to preserve from plundering, all which the owners of the ship had trayterously delivered with their ship into the hands of the *Cavaleirs*, And that if they would fight for it, their love and zeal to Gods cause would be made visible to all men, and it would very much daunt the enemy, and be a good example for others to take them in the steps of valour and vertue, Also it would manifest their thankfulness to the Parliament, who had conferred such favours, as first a gratuitie, then the increase of their wages, all which must needs bring a blessing on them, and I doe not doubt, but that it should please God to deliver the Ships into our hands, but that the Parliament would acknowledge their constancy in gratifying their fidelity according to the value of the prize, and then demanding their resolutions, they cryed all as one man, God blesse the King and Parliament, and that they would stand by mee, to the last man, and then I bore in for the Harbour, it being monday the Seventh of August 1643. where I found the said Ship at Anchor, but the Commanders had made us from the top of a hill, before we came in, and had fitted their ships, and put aboard their Waysticloathes, and when I came within shot, there came off a Boat from the fellowship, towards the Swallow, and in it one Captain *John Brooke*, holding forth a white flag, who desired a parley upon condition I would let him return aboard the Fellowship if we could not accord, to which I consented, then he came aboard, and leaping down into the Wayst, he cryed, God blesse King *Charles*, to which we all said, Amen. The which being done, the said Captain desired to have some private conference with me, but I refused it, saying, I desire to hear nothing from him, but what the whole ships company might hear, but he pressed it the second time, and being denied the

said Captain turned himself to the ships company, relating unto them the words formerly specified in demonstrating the Kings grace and mercy extended towards us, in case we would comply and carry the ship to Bristol, but then I commanded him to silence, saying, it did seem strange unto me, that he should dare to take the Kings name in his mouth, in regard that both he and his confederates appeared unto me to be Pyrats, and Sea-Rovers, in that they had ta'en and rifled a double Shallop that belonged to his Majesties Fleet, now on the coast of Ireland, having five small Guns in her, but the said Captain replied, They had a Commission for what they had done, under the hand of Sir *John Pennington*, and that Captain *Hayle* had another under the hand of Prince *Rupert*, and that Sir *John Pennington* was High Admirall by Patent under the great Seal of England; I told him I had no such intelligence of any such Patent, either from the Parliament, or from the Honourable the Earle of *Warwick*, or any Order to obey it, and for that of Prince *Rupert*, he being a stranger, I could not perceive by what vertue or power his Highnesse could give Commission to any to rob or take his Majesties ships, or other ships belonging to any of His Majesties Loyall Subjects. And therefore untill I could be better satisfied; I would use my best indeavours to seize on their persons, and ships, as Pirats, or sinck by their side.

And in the interim of this discourse, the *Swallow* was come to Anchor on her broad side, and then Captain *Brooks* desired me to certifie so much in writing to Captain *Burley*; and while I went into the Cabine to write, the Fellowship had cut her Cable, and was under saile, intending to run a shoare; and being informed thereof by the Master, we came out, and I commanded the Gunner to give fire to a peece of Ordnance, the which was done; but within a Cable length the Fellowship came aground, and in pursuit of her, we cut and also came aground a little ahead of her, and then I gave her two peeces of Ordnance; whereupon Captain *Burley* appeared on the Poop, and cried, Captain hold, hold; then I commanded him a board, who when he came told me he would deliver up the ship, if I would promise on the faith of a Gentleman to set the Commanders and ships company on shoare, or give them a double shallop to carry them to *Bristol*, the which if I refused to doe, he had left those on board would set the ship on fire; then I replied unto him, that burne she should, for I was resolved not to part with any one man of them, for I valued them more then I did the ship: but in the meane time I had sent a letter to the Master & ships company, that if they would deliver up the other two Cap-



rains with their ship, I did promise them all a free entertainment, and that they should have their wages paid, and all such goods as they could make appeare justly to belong to any of them: upon the receipt of which letter, the Master and Marriners did deliver up the ship without the losse or hurt of any one man (God be praised) only when the Hart Frigor parted from us, to run a shoare, we gave her an unhappy shot, and killed two men, and hurt one; but Captain *Nelson* who commanded in her, carried her eight miles up the River, and ran her a shoare in a Creek; but she was pursued by Captain *Rew Williams*, and there was exchanged divers shot between them, but *Nelson* ran away with most of his men, and left her, and the next day Captain *Williams* brought her off, in which service, the Gentleman doth crave his Lordships Protection: Having perfected this service the next day, I set sayle in pursuit of my Admirall, to acquaint him with our proceedings, and also that Bristol was lost, and the fleet is now repairing there to command our fleet, wherein Sir *John Pennington* is to come out Admirall, that so we might use our best endeavours to nip these proceedings in the bud, and having acquainted my Admirall herewith, it is agreed on, that forthwith we repaire to *Milford* to endeavour to get our ships want of victualls supplied, the which if we shall doe I hope God will enable us to perform some good service in the preventing of the coming out of that fleet, either by inviting them to comply with us, or else to destroy them in the Harbour, And this is my Admiralls, and our constant resolution, if it shall please God to enable us with victualls to subsist on this Coast, to which I doubt not, but our God will give a blessing in that he hath been pleased to give such good successe in the surprising of one of their best ships, as also the Friggot, the which is a great encouragement to us, and doubtlesse as great a disheartning unto them who seek their King and Countreys ruine, endeavouring to upheld that Antichristian beast, whom God hath said, Must down, to whose protection I commit you, and take my leave, and rest.

From aboard his Majesties Ship  
the *Swallow*, making sayle for  
*Milford*, Aug. 17. 1643.

Your most loving Brother  
to serve you,

William Smith.



*Noble Sir,*

**T**He Character which Fame sounds in the eares of all men that come into the these parts of your worth, and the good affection you and the rest of the Gentlemen of this County beare to the publike Cause, whereon depends Gods glory, the Kings honour, and the peoples safety, is a sufficient motive to enduce me to present these, in discharge of the trust imposed. which is to keepe a compliance with all His Majestties loyall subjects, who in their refined judgements, have made no divisions or distractions betweene the Kings Majesty, and His great Councell the Parliament in England, and to engage my life in defence and preservation of such Worthies, is my duty, in which, I hope one day to appeare a loyall subject, and a faithfull servant, and if here I may doe my acceptable service, I desire to receive your instructions, with which to my power I shall not faile to comply & I shal also desire you and the rest of the Gentlemen of this County, to be pleased to send Hue and Cry to attach certaine wandering and Rebellious persons, who were lately forced on the shore by the Expedition on this County, it is thought some Priests and Iesuites were amongst them, and that they have jewels and money, the which I am informed they brought from Rochell in France, & were bound to the reliefe of the Rebels at Wexford in Ireland, the apprehending of these dangerous persons may happily prevent great evils which otherwise may ensue; and so every good man in discharging his duty to his God and his Countrey, it may be a meanes to hasten a speedy composure of these sad tragicall distractions, the which our good God in his mercy grant, to whose protection I commit you, and take my leave and rest,

*August the 7. 1643,  
aboard the Swallow.*

*Your friend to serve you,  
William Smith.*

*The Answer.*

*Allworthy Sir,*

**I** Much rejoyce at your constant perseverance and good successe, which I hope the Lord in his mercy will continue, and my prayers and meanes shall not be wanting, I have imparted your desire of supplying your wants of victuall unto the Gentlemen, whose willingnesse I presume will not be wanting, and this night I am assured to hear their answer, which I hope will give you reall content, what lyes in my power to assist you; I shall not be wanting, being really to corroborate my protestation with my life and means, not any way daunted with the poor flawses of ill fortune that hath lately

lately befallen us, God will not suffer his chosen to suffer in the superlative degree, but greatly to chastise them, lest they attribute too much to the arme of flesh, God I hope & make no doubt will make a period to these unnaturall civill Warres, and our Religion, Lawes, Liberties, preserved, in their desired purity, I desire to wait on you, but reserve my selfe till I receive your commands, in the interim I am your servant and present my service unto you and will remaine,

August 9, 1643.

Your friend to serve you,  
Griffith White.

*The Letter upon the same day.*

*Noble Sir,*

Since the last Letter I sent you this Post-noone, I understand by an honest Gentleman, who is as I am, that *Hayle* your now prisoner hath divulged in the presence of some Gentlemen of quality of this County, that the inhabitants of this County should not reape their Corne, in case they did, they should not enjoy it, my desire is, that you would be pleased to vouchsafe this courteous favour, to examine and fish out the cause and ground of this report, and withall, if you find this to be true which cannot but prove prejudiciall the publike good, that you would write a letter, and direct it in generall to the Gentry of this County ( omitting particulars ) which I verily beleeve will turne the hearts of such who are now in the way of colapsing, since the taking of unconstant Bristol, and unite their hearts with ours, who are constant to the Cause, I desire if your resolution comply with me ( which I doubt not of ) to hasten your Letter with all speed, which I know will be very thankfully received, and for my owne particular I shall and will remaine your very loving serve you,  
Griffith White.

*Most worthy Sir,*

To satisfie you, and the Gentlemen of this County, in the contents of your last unto me concerning the menacing speeches thundered out by *Hayle* and his Confederates, that the Corn now on the ground should never be reaped by the Gentlemen and Commons of this County, or if it were, you should never enjoy it, are I assure you only the Bravadoes of a proud insulting Enemy, and grounded neither on judgement, or religion; for who but our only wise God can tell what shall be hereafter, or what a day may produced; and I am confident the Gentry of this County are

not ignorant of the power of the Almighty, that he is able to deliver as well by few as many, as is manifested unto you by multitudes of examples in his revealed word : wherefore to remove your feares, the only comfort I can give you is this, That in your Makers cause you would behave your selves as becometh good Christians, and valiant Souldiers of Christ Iesus, that you would gird on your swords, muster your Forces, put your selves in battell array, and quit your selves like men, putting your selves under Gods protection, doubt not but his Divine Majesty is both able and also will deliver all those that put their confidence in him; but without faith our Saviour would doe no miracles while he was here on the earth: wherefore in confidence of his assistance, there can be no greater manifestation of our faith then to engage our lives and estates in the maintenance of his cause, which is the only meanes to preserve both. And I believe, that the Gentry of this County very well understand the condition of this warre, and that it is no other then between Christ and Antichrist, and that one day his Majesty will have great cause to acknowledge the fidelity of all such his loyall and obedient Subjects as have or do adhere unto his Majesty and his great Councell the Parliament of England, in the suppressing of that Antichristian Rout who have now taken up armes to destroy the Protestant Religion, the Kings honour, and dignities, the priviledges of Parliament, and the liberties of the Subject; in the preservation whereof the Parliament have been forced to take up Armes, in which as I stand engaged, I shall be ever ready to assist and comply with all such his Majesties loyall and faithfull Subjects, so farre as God shall enable me, and my abilities give me leave; and in tender of my service herein to all the well-affected Gentlemen of this County, I take my leave and rest.

*Your faithfull Servant to be commanded in  
the service of God, the King, and Parliament,*  
William Smith.

*FINIS.*

Numb. 9.

# THE PARLIAMENT SCOUT.

Communicating His Intelligence

TO THE

KINGDOM.

---

From Thursday the 17. of August, to Thursday the 24. of August. 1643.

---

**O**ur Scout, by reason the enemy is possesst of the West, is forced to passe in by-ways, he brings no other news from Exeter, but that it remains blockt up, and hath only relieved it selfe two or three times, and fetched in some cattell, beating up now one, and then another quarter of the enemy: Who pities not Exeter? Most constant, most faithfull, yet farthest from helpe, and neerest to misery: as he passed along, he understood of some ships taken in the Irish seas, and so went as

neere Gloucester as he could, but was not so neere, as to be able to tell, as some undertake, how many men the enemy hath lost, and who, and of what quality: nor is he able to say that any attempt had beene to storme the Towne the fourteenth past, or that the enemy then was come to neede as musquet shot: it is true, he heard the great Cannon play fiercelie for many dayes, but thinkes that the enemy will not be so prodigall of his men as he was before Bristol: as he was coming from Gloucester a back-way, he met with a woman, who had beene in Gloucester, she intreated him to bring a Letter to a friend in London, which he did, the Contents whereof was to this effect: and written by one of quality that is dangerously wounded.

*Gloucester 14. August. 1643.*

*Noble Sir,*

**T**here can be nothing more sad to a valiant and richfull heart then neglect, what would more provoke, then to see men and water enough, yet none take a bucket to quench a fire? They say in other Countreys the English are the worst at this of all Nations, we in the poore City of Gloucester are like to finde it true in the quenching that fire which so violently burns us: The enemy batters us continually with their great Cannon, making breach after breach, (for thank the losse of Bristol, they have powder enough) but God giving courage, we have hitherto made them up as fast as they beat them downe, but who relieves us? Nay, who comes and tells us we shall have relsefe? We can challenge it, for it was promised, and that largely: out of that confidence we have slighted all overtures: What is become of the Parliament? Where is my Lord Generall? What do the City of London? Where is Sir William Waller?



Walker? Must we perish? We are sensible of the miseries at  
 Bristol, and are not our friends so, if we have any? Sure there  
 is no enemy that the City, or my Lord Generall need fear, unless  
 those that are here? What people would fight for them that  
 will not send them reliefe when they have wherewith? Can it  
 be thus in such a Cause as we have, one party should draw one  
 way, and another the other? The God of heaven look upon us:  
 If the West be not regarded, once as able and ready to serve  
 the Parliament as any part of England, yet let our poore wives  
 and children be subject to the beastly lust of the enemy: our e-  
 states all to be lost, and many other estates brought hither; our  
 City threatened to be turned into ashes, and we put all to the  
 sword; work a little compassion, beget some reliefe: The City  
 of London we know are willing to part with their money, and  
 want of reliefe sticks not with them, there are souldiers enough,  
 hearts enough: we think that men should lay aside self-respects,  
 and what ever for the common good, we have done so, we are  
 yet able to hold out fourteen dayes, our souldiers and inhabi-  
 tants are courageous, and shall Gloucester be lost? The enemy  
 knowes where our defect lies, and as it puts courage into them,  
 so let us adde wings to our reliefe: Sir, send us reliefe, or send us  
 some body to tell us we can have none, that we may shift for  
 our selves; we are sure some are the cause reliefe comes not,  
 knew we them, we would name them, were they never so great:  
 and desire that those that can deliver us from misery, and will  
 not, may have miseries as great, as can here be inflicted: or if  
 any Counsell be against us, that it may be infatuated: The Ci-  
 ty of London were used to have power with the Parliament,  
 with the Lord Generall: Will they not now use their interest?  
 They may be the next, who shall pity them? Is this the reward  
 to those that take up armes for Religion and Liberties? Will  
 not honour protect the Cause, nor nothing fire those Cannons,  
 edge those swords, charge those muskets that must raise our ene-  
 mies?



mies: Shall relief come as to Gloucester, for our after the Town is taken: But if it must be so, we must perish: Sir, these are the last breathings of your dying servant.

Our Scout, was on Tuesday, upon Honslow Heath, where he saw his Excellencie the Earle of Essex: accompanied by divers Members of both Houses, and many Gentlemen, with many Officers, ride from Regiment to Regiment, viewing them: It will be variously reported concerning his Excellencies power: Take this from our Scout, who made it his work to view them all over; he conceives their number amounts unto two thousand five hundred Horse, and some three thousand five hundred foote; a brave traine of Artillery was there likewise; and many Waggons, one following the other neare two miles in length: If any conceive the number exprest to be all his Excellencies remaining Force, they are much mistaken, for it was not a Muster; but a Parade, and many hundreds of the common men, and divers Officers were absent: besides these, there are men that were prest to be added: and though it be a wonder, that men should not goe voluntarily to him, yet such things are insident to Armies: there are also divers Regiments gone, and to goe after his Excellencie from the City of London, all, its beleeyed, will amount to foure or five thousand, which will make him a brave Army, able to incounter his enemy, if the enemy hath a minde to fight, but that he seldome hath, unlesse it be in the night, stealing upon quarters: If any shall say that my Lord Generall takes a great Infantry and Artillery, and a redundancy of Officers, there is no doubt but he will so order things, that every one will have satisfaction in those particulars, as soone as time will permit, but the expedition for Gloucester calls for such haste, that it cannot now be done: the souldiers cryed for money, when they were in the Field, which also is going to them, and Clothes, Shooes, and the like, will be sent them also: His Excellency lay that  
night

night at Colebrooke, and so goes forward with all speed, of whose good successe, wee hope to give you a good account the next weeke.

As for Sir *William Waller*, the now Major of the City, and parts within the Line, he will this day, if hee have it not already, receive an ample Commission, and that had, there is no doubt but he will be a formidable Army suddenly, and be able to second my Lord Generall upon all occasions.

There is great circumspection in the choise of his Officers, both for valliant and faithfull men, that they be such as have beene approved in that which they are put upon. Hee intends most horse, which is the maine matter wanting, besides its probable, if his Excellencie should want power, either for the field or other way, that his Excellencie will have other supplies from other parts.

From the North we can say little, our Commissioners were lovingly, and Royally entertained, and are in consule of matters, but that any thing is concluded is not knowne, onely this is certaine, that there is nothing wanting but complementing the accord.

As for the Lord *Fairfax* he is rather in preparation, then action, onely the Manchester men, make a little disturbance in the parts next them, and get a contribution: for the Earle of Newcastle, he is sometimes upon one side the Trent, and some times on the other, his quarters are likewise on both sides the River, being conceived to be Country people, and all neere 10000: He puts the Commission of Array in execution in Lincolneshire about Borne, and other places, and hath his men quartered as farre as Lincolne, and Grantham, in the interim, My Lord Manchester, and Collonell *Cromwell* make all the speed they can to withstand his advance, having already some considerable number of horse and foot, they intend also to quit Cambridge, & fortifie the Ile of Ely, and carry all their Ammu-

nition, and Ordnance thither: there is no doubt but my Lord Manchester will have as brave an Army as any hath yet bene.

Our Scout hath made a second returne from Gloucester parts, he reports of severall Fights that hath been between the City and the besiegers Friday and Saturday, and that they not daring to storme the place, attempted to make Gallories, to facilitate their approaches, and to that purpose brought Faggots, but those were burnt, and the besiegers driven both from their Canon and ground, leaving many dead behinde them, some of which Ordnance they have got into the Towne, others lie, that neither part dare attempt the fetching: This not succeeding, there was order given to fetch in green wood, but whether these things be true in the circumstances, we will not be over confident, yet of this we are, that there hath been a Fight those daies before mentioned, and from hence we cannot but conclude, that Gloucester hath done bravely, and deserves to be recorded for posterity, whereas some other places had need to have buriall in the grave of oblivion, and shall not the valour of this City of Gloucester, edge all the souldiers spirits now in service for the Parliament, and put them upon these, or such like resolutions? What, shall such brave men as are in Gloucester be destroyed, be prisoners? Shall these Citizens and Souldiers that have stood out thus bravely, given the enemy so many repulses, slaine so many of their enemies, wasted their Ammunition, not be assisted, relieved: Weele not regard money, nor stand upon this terme, or that, but goe and fall upon the weary enemy, and utterly destroy his power: when Sir William Waller had bene fighting many daies, they by fresh supplies overcame him: we will now put both together, and goe on, and revenge both at once; so shall we haste an end of these present troubles, then which, nothing can be more acceptable to God and men that stand for true Religion and Liberty.

As

As for the City of Bristol, besides the savage usage of the women and virgins there, he tells us that there are such impositions laid upon friend and foe, that they cry out, and some have sent to his Majesty to get ease. So that they that were so willing to have the town surrendered, are like to think as well as the other party, but that which sets that loss at so high a price, there are liberties come, that say, that the Dutch, had not Bristol been taken, would have adventured great summes upon the former act, for the recovery of Ireland, but under standing of the loss of the aforesaid place, will doe nothing.

There is this weele come but an Ordinance for sending money upon the Cities Common Seale, is to be done for each mans parr, according to the rate of Lands and goods; This its to be hoped will not be so binding, but that it will admit of alteration, according to the discretion of the Raters, to whose consideration, are offered these particulars following.

First, that some men worth five thousand pound, were but three pound goods, and hundreds not worth one hundred pound a man were as much, and some were foure pound goods, not worth foure pound small the world.

Secondly, that since that time, many that were men of estate, are for want of trade become beggars.

Thirdly, that divers that were pious men then, are since become rish men, and many of them were not subsidie men at all, that are now far better able then those that were: for War enriches some and beggars others.

Fourthly, that many men are able to give and pay little summes weekly, but are not able to pay a great summe, nay see not so much money together in their life time, and for credit they have not so much, nor never had, for though a trades man may have credit for commodities, yet its rare to have it for money. This is not exprest to retard the service, but that it may be so imposed, as none may be grieved.

There is one thing our Sebar more with by the way, which he makes bold to acquaint his friends with, and that is, that the friends of the Parliament are much troubled about taking up of horses, it being left to the discretion of a Quarter-master, or his man, to take what horses he please, and if he account a man a malignant, he takes away his horses, and if he be drunk, or have but a crossie word, he takes all that a man hath, nor leaving him any to Inne his harvest; these are sad things, and so much the sadder, when a little care might prevent them. There is another inconvenience that the poore citizens undergoe, and that is, they know not a true warrant from a countrey, and Lord Generall being easily counte fected; and you shall see how some will never wronged his selfe, nor bores to his selfe with

nition, and Ordnance thither: there is no doubt but my Lord  
Manchester will have as brave an Army as any hath yet bene.

Our Scout hath made a second returne from Gloucester parts,  
he reports of severall Fights that hath been between the City  
and the besiegers Friday and Saturday, and that they not daring  
to storme the place, attempted to make Gallories, to facilitate  
their approaches, and to that purpose brought Faggots, but  
those were burnt, and the besiegers driven both from their Ca-  
non and ground, leaving many dead behinde them, some of  
which Ordnance they have got into the Towne, others lie, that  
neither part dare attempt the fetching: This not succeeding,  
there was order given to fetch in green wood, but whether these  
things be true in the circumstances, we will not be over confi-  
dent, yet of this we are, that there hath been a Fight those daies  
before mentioned, and from hence we cannot but conclude, that  
Gloucester hath done bravely, and deserves to be recorded for  
posterity, whereas some other places had need to have buriall  
in the grave of oblivion, and shall not the valour of this City of  
Gloucester, edge all the souldiers spirits now in service for the  
like resolutions?

PRINT

FADED

terly destroy his power: when Sir William Waller had bene  
fighting many dayes, they by fresh supplies overcame him: we  
will now put both together, and goe on, and revenge both at  
once: so shall we haste an end of these present troubles, then  
which, nothing can be more acceptable to God and men that  
stand for true Religion and Liberty.

As



As for the City of Bristol; besides the savage usage of the women and virgins there, he tells us that there are such impositions laid upon friend and foe, that they cry out, and some have sent to his Majesty to get ease. So that they that were so willing to have the towne surrendered, are like to thinke as well as the other party, but that which sets that losse at so high a price, there are Liberties come, that say, that the Dutch, had not Bristol been taken, would have adventured great summes upon the former act, for the recovery of Ireland, but under standing of the losse of the aforesaid place, will doe nothing.

There is this weeke come out an Ordinance for lending money upon the Cities Common Seale, is to be done for each mans part, according to the rate of Lands and goods; This its to be hoped will not be so binding; but that it will admit of adieration, according to the discretion of the Raters, to whose consideration, are offered these particulars following.

First, that some men worth five thousand pound, were but three pound goods, and hundreds not worth one hundred pound a man were as much, and some were foure pound goods, not worth foure pound small the world.

Secondly; that since that time, many that were men of estate, are for want of trade become beggars.

Thirdly, that divers that were poore men then, are since become rich men, and many of them were not subsidie men at all, that are now far better able than those that were: for War enriches some and beggars others.

Fourthly, that many men are able to give and pay little summes weekly, but are not able to pay a great summe, may see not so much money together in their life time, and for credit they have not so much, nor never had, for though a trades man may have credit for commodities, yet its rare to have it for money. This is not exprest to retard the service, but that it may be so imposed, as none may be grieved.

There is one thing our Seductor with by the way, which he makes bold to acquaint his friends with, and that is, that the friends of the Parliament are much troubled about taking up of horses, it being left to the discretion of a Quarter-master, or his man, to take what horses he please, and if he doe count a man a malignant, he takes away his horses, and if he be drunk, or have but a crosse word, he takes all that a man hath, not leaving him any to live his harvest; these are sad things, and so much the sadder, when a little care might prevent them. There is another inconvenience that the poore citizens undergoe, and that is, they know not a true warrant from a countie, and have their generalls name being easily counterfeited; and you shall see a warrant from the countie of Middlesex, not bores to his leg with



a pistoll hanging in his scarffe; his sword by his side, and he shall bright the poore country-man, and take what he please from him: and besides all this they that have warrants take many and make money of them, and besides take bribes in stead of horses: this is not the way to have men long above afford reliefe to the war.

Our Scout brings us newes from Ireland, that there is a Compofure of things at Dublin, and that the treaty of which you heard before hath had like effect, as was expected: viz. That the City of Dublin is committed to the care of good honest Romanists, and that the confiding Protestant, so far from having that trust that the temporizing ones are; and for those that were in the least kinde for the carrying things according to his Majesties Act of Parliament, so often declared not to be reputed of, but to be kept irrevocable, they are put in prison; but in regard Ireland is far off, and discretion teaches not to believe in evil hastily, and this Act is so inconsistent with State policie, and the present state of things, give us leave to question the truth of it, untill we have a further confirmation, and in the meane time to rest content that certaine ships are taken coming from Ireland, and brought into Low poole.

There are Articles of a very high and dangerous nature against Master Hetham drawne up and presented, if they be proved, it will appeare that all is not gold that glisters.

Just now our Scout comes in, and tells us that they begin to be afraid at Oxford, hearing of my Lord Generalls advance, having but two thousand men-souldiers in the towne, and three thousand women.

*This is Licensed, and Entered into the Hall-Booke according to Order.*

Printed by G. Bishop, and R. White.

## An Alarme for London :

To awake and mourne for Sin, before God make her  
weepe for Judgements.

Plainly shewing what Sins tend to the breach of every  
one of Gods Commandments, whereby Gods peo-  
ple may see what cause they have to mourne, both  
for their own and other mens sins, considering what  
miseries they have brought upon this Nation, but  
especially because so gracious a God is thereby of-  
fended.

A Subject very soafenable for these times, in a Dialogue  
betweene *Archippus* a Minister, and *Philemon* a god-  
ly Christian.

JOEL 2. 12.

Blow ye the trumpet in Zion, and sound an Alarme in my holy moun-  
taine : Let all the inhabitants of the land tremble, for the day of the  
Lord commeth, and is nigh at hand ; therefore also now, thus saith  
the Lord, Turne ye even unto me with all your hearts, with fasting,  
weeping and mourning.

Imprimatur,

*John Downham.*


Aug: 24<sup>th</sup> LONDON,


Printed by G. B. and R. W. MDCXLIII.

## An Alarme for London :

To awake and mourne for sin , before God make her  
weepe for judgements.

In a Dialogue betweene *Archippus* a Minister, and *Philemon*  
a godly Christian.

*Arch.*  H my deare friend *Philemon* , how do you these sad  
times ?

*Phil.*  Alas, Sir, my heart is troubled within me, I cannot be  
still, for my soule hath heard the sound of the trum-  
pet, and the Alarme to battell, destruction upon de-  
struction is cryed, for the whole land is wasted, and  
feare is on every side; and yet methinks I cannot weep and mourne as  
were meet for me to do at such a time as this.

*Arch.* Indeed this day is great, none hath been like it, it is even the time of  
*Jacobs* troubles *Jer.* 30. 7. and therefore I wish we could all do as the Apostle  
*James* Adviseeth us, that is, Turne our laughter into mourning, and our Joy into  
heaviness, *Jam.* 4. 9.

*Phil.* That is the point indeed but alas what shall I doe to bring my heart  
into such a mourning frame.

*Arch.* Surely it is not in your owne power to bring your heart in to such a  
frame, and therefore you must go unto God in the name of *Iesus Christ*, and  
begg it of him who onely hath power to doe it, and Graciously promised to  
doe it, saying, *A new heart Will I give you, and a new spirit Will I put into you,*  
*And I will take away the stonie heart out of your body, and I will give you an heart*  
*of flesh,* *Eze.* 36. 26. *And I will power upon you the spirit of grace and supplication,*  
*and you shall mourne,* &c. *Zech.* 12. 10.

*Phil.* And must I use noe other meanes besides prayer ?

*Arch.* Yea, for God worketh by meanes, and therefore you are to use the  
best meanes you can, and Pray unto God for a blessing, upon the meanes,  
without whom all meanes will be uneffectuall.

*Phil.* And what doe you Conceive is the best meanes to get such a heart ?

*Arch.* The best meanes that I know, is to get a true sight of your sins, for  
there

*An Alarme for London.*

there is no true cause of mourning for any thing else but sin; and indeed that mourning which God requires is a mourning for sin, because it is sin, a breach of his Commandements, and an offence to his Majestie; and sin must be seen before it can be sorrowed for; we see in nature, the same eye that sees weepes, to shew that weeping depends upon seeing, he that sees well, weepes well, he that sees his sins thorowly, will bewaile them heartily.

*Phil.* But is it utterly unlawfull to mourne for any thing else besides sin?

*Arch.* No, it is not simply evill to mourne for those losses and afflictions which do befall either our selves or others, for it is a sin to be without naturall affections; but yet you must know, that true godly sorrow makes a man grieve more for the offence of God by the sin, then for the offence of the flesh by the punishment: godly sorrow makes a man lament after the Lord, (as it is noted in those Israelites, 1 Sam. 7. 1.) not after his own ease and freedom from the punishment.

*Phil.* But what course should I take to get a true sight of my sins?

*Arch.* To get a true sight of sin, there is required a narrow search after it, *Law. 3. 39, 40. Man suffers for his sin,* saith the Prophet: But how shall we know for what sins? The next words shew, *Let us search and try our ways.*

*Phil.* I pray you give me some direction about this search.

*Arch.* In this search of sin, you must first labour to finde out originall sin, and in it you are to consider your guiltinesse of the first sin of *Adam* in eating the forbidden fruit; for in *Adam*, as the root of all mankind, we all sinned, so that if we had no inherent sin of our own, this imputed sin of his were enough to damne us. Secondly, you must consider that which necessarily follows upon the former, and that is the generall corruption and depravation of your whole nature, consisting in these two things: First, the whole man is in evill, every part and power of your soule and body is infected with this leprosie. Secondly, whole evill is in man, that is to say, the seeds of (and so a fitnessse to) all sins, even the most odious sins: This, I say, you must consider concerning originall sin.

*Phil.* And what must I do concerning actuall sin?

*Arch.* For actuall sins, you must search out what you can, touching the number of them, by examining your selfe by the *Law*, according to every Commandment.

*Phil.* I pray Sir helpe me herein, and first tell me what sins tend to the breach of the first Commandment?

*Arch.* The first Commandment requires the inward worship of the soule; understanding, memory, will, heart and affections, and therefore these sins following

### *An Alarme for London.*

following tend to the breach of it: 1. Ignorance and forgetfulness of God, too little love of God, manifested by your unwillingness to good duties, and too little delight in them when you are performing of them, also loving your selfe, your friends, your profit, your pleasure and your credit, either more then God, or equall with God. 2. Fearing the threats of a mortall man more then the threats contained in Gods Word, manifested by your apatness to be obedient to mans commands more then to Gods; also fearing to displease a friend who either hath been kinde to you, or you hope will be kinde to you, more then the Lord and his goodness, whence ariseth presumption to offend God. 3. Carnall confidence in wit, learning, wealth, strength or friends, thinking your selfe the better, or the safer, simply for them, whence ariseth pride and security, also distrusting Gods power, mercy and promises. 4. Worldly sorrow, shame, discontentment and impatience, occasioned by any act of Gods providence, also want of godly sorrow, for our owne and others transgressions, and not mourning for the miseries of Gods people. Lastly, immoderate carnall mirth, and too little spirituall joy.

*Phil.* And what sins tend to the breach of the second Commandment?

*Arch.* The second Commandment requires outward worship of God, and therefore these sins tend to the breach of it: *viz.* Omitting of prayer, hearing the word, reading it, meditation in it, conference about it, receiving the Sacrament, or making of vows when occasion hath required.

*Phil.* And what sins tend to the breach of the third Commandment?

*Arch.* 1. Abasing Gods word by fruitlesse speaking of it, framing jests out of it, or applying it to chimes. 2. Abusing the titles of God, by way of admiration, in saying in your common talke, O God, O Lord, or O Jesus, &c. 3. In swearing vainly by the creatures; by your troth, faith, or swearing by the true God falsely. 4. Praying without faith, feeling, reverence, fervencie, not waiting for an answer, asking evill things, aiming in your prayers at the relieving of your owne necessities, more then at the advancement of Gods glory. 5. In hearing, reading, meditating, conferring, singing of Psalmes, and receiving the Sacrament, without preparation, attention, reverence, delight and profit. 6. Lastly, light passing over Gods great work of Creation, Preservation, Redemption, as also of other his mercies and judgements.

*Phil.* And what sins tend to the breach of the fourth Commandment?

*Arch.* 1. Neglect of preparation for the Lords Day before it come, and of fixing your hearts for holy duties when it is come. 2. Profane absence from, or unfruitfull presence at Gods Ordinances. 3. Excessive eating  
and



### *An Alarme for London.*

and drinking, thereby making your selves unfit for holy duties. 4. Vaine and worldly thoughts and speeches. 5. A desire that the day were at an end. Lastly, a neglect of calling our selves and others to a reckoning after the end of the exercises.

*Phil.* And what sins tend to the breach of the fifth Commandment?

*Arch.* Children break this Commandment, either by disobedience, or murmuring at their parents corrections, or contemning them for any defect either in body or minde, or by unthankfulnesse in not relieving them if they be able, and their parents stand in need.

Parents break this Commandment: 1. By neglecting to instruct them in due time. 2. In not correcting them till it be too late, or doing it with bitterness, without compassion, instruction and prayer. 3. In giving them ill example. 4. In not bringing them up in some honest and lawfull calling. 5. In light behaviour before them, and too much familiarity with them, whereby they become vile in their eyes.

Servants break this Commandment: 1. By idlenesse in their callings. 2. By unchristianesse and unfaithfulnesse in dealing with their masters goods and affaires. 3. By disobedience to any of their masters lawfull commands. 4. By being eye-servants.

Masters break this Commandment: 1. By unadvised entertainment of fittall servants. 2. By omitting to use religious exercises with them, by omitting to admonish and correct them, or doing it in an ill manner, or in being more displeased with them for failing in their businesse, then when they are sick in Gods service. 3. In not recompensing their services in giving them a due reward. 4. In neglecting them in their sicknesse, or stopping part of their wages for that time.

Wives break this Commandment: 1. By failing in reverence, which appeareth in froward lookes, speeches and behaviour. 2. By disobedience in the smallest matters.

Husbands break this Commandment: 1. In not dwelling with his wife. 2. In not edifying her by instruction and example. 3. In denying her comfortable maintenance and employment.

Both of them break this Commandment: 1. In want of love, manifested by discovering each others secrets and infirmities. 3. By being jealous and contentious.

*Phil.* And what sins tend to the breach of the sixth Commandment?

*Arch.* 1. Rash anger, envy, hatred, malice, brawling, reviling, threatening and provoking others, fighting, cruelty in punishing, oppression. 2. Mur-

dering



*An Alarme for London.*

dering either our selves or others, or consenting thereunto. 3. Immoderate worldly sorrow, neglect of Physick in sicknesse, or any thing that tends either to the preservation or recovering of health.

*Phil.* And what sins tend to the breach of the seventh Commandment?

*Arch.* 1. Adultery, fornication, incest, rape, sodomie. 2. All wantonnesse, secret or open, alone or with others. 3. Nocturnall pollutions, lustfull dreames. 4. Unholy marriages, in regard of Religion, age, nearnesse of blood, or want of parents consent. 5. Abuse of the marriage bed, either by excesse or unseasonablenesse. 6. Nourishing the causes and occasions of wantonnesse, surfeiting, drunkennesse, idlenesse, lascivious apparell, lewd looks, songs or speeches.

*Phil.* And what sins tend to the breach of the eighth Commandment?

*Arch.* 1. Covetousnesse, and all desire of our neighbours goods. 2. Robbing of our selves by wastefulnesse, in diet, apparell, gaming, by idlenesse, or unadvised suretship. 3. Robbing of others, by taking away the smallest thing. 4. Deceit in buying and selling. 5. Withholding either things committed unto us, or things found, or things lent, or otherwise due. 6. Not making of restitution. 7. Counselling or consenting to others in theft.

*Phil.* And what sins tend to the breach of the ninth Commandment?

*Arch.* 1. False-witness-bearing, in publique or private, or consent thereunto. 2. Raising, spreading abroad, or listening to false reports of tale-bearers. 3. Rash suspicion, hard judging, interpreting things in the worse sense. 4. Aggravating and discovering others infirmities, without care of their credit, others edification, or our owne good. 5. Flattery, lying, whether in jest, or to a good end, boasting. 6. Lastly, want of care of our own, and others good name, that God might have more glory.

*Phil.* And how is the last Commandment broken?

*Arch.* The tenth Commandment is broken, if you have in your heart but the least evil motion or thought of failing in any of the aforesaid duties, either to God or your neighbour, although you consent not to it, but do abhorre and reject it presently, or if you do any of the aforesaid duties with any spice of vaine-glory, or any other by-respect, and not in perfect zeal of Gods glory, and the good of your neighbour.

*Phil.* Well, I see now that a man may be free from grosse evils, and yet guilty of the breach of all Gods Commandments: O what a sinfull wretch am I! O what cause have I to weepe and mourne for my sins!

*Arch.* Certainly, every poore soule that truly beholds himselfe in the glasse of Gods Law, shall finde matter enough to cry out, even when grosse sins

## An Alarme for London.

are far off. O wretched man that I am, O how backward are we to good duties, and how feeble and lazie in the performan<sup>e</sup> of them; as in hearing the word, what want of waking, attendance, reverence, and mixing the word with faith is there, in prayer what formalitie, commonnesse and distrust is there? O how corrupt and selfe-feeling are we in duties, forgetting both Gods honour, and the good of others, and all for want of love and self-deniall? O how hard a matter is it for us in worldly businesse, to go betwene loose carlesnesse, and extreme carking? O how apt are we either to be wholly improvident, or buied in the earth? Who observes Gods administration towards him, and his in crosses and mercies? What want do we finde in quietnesse of spirit, in taking up and bearing our crosses, if any thing be tedious? O how hard is it to finde a man whom neither prosperity puffs up, nor adversity casts downe? O how few are there that rule inferiours wisely, that live with wife lovingly, meekly and purely? O how wastifish and conceited are we? O how unprofitable are we in company, neither doing, nor receiving the good we ought? O how unable are we to hold our hearts close to God one day together? These and many other such like sins have the people of God cause to mourne for yea, and for grosse sins also, though they themselves be free from them, because they are also committed by wicked men in this kingdom.

*Phil.* And must the sins of others be also cause of mourning to a Christian?

*Ans.* Yea indeed, and we have the example of the Saints of God for our warrant, both for the mourning for our own sins, and the sins of others; the Scripture hath registered a whole Catalogue of mourners in this kinde, look into it, and you shall see *David* fainting, *Psal.* 6. 6. *Herodias*'s chattering like a Crane, *Isa.* 34. 14. *Job* abhorring himselfe in dust and ashes, *Job* 42. 6. *Ephraim* smiting upon his thigh, *Jer.* 31. 19. *Peter* weeping bitterly, *Mat.* 26. 75. *Mary Magdalene* washing Christs feet with teares, *Luke* 7. 38. There shall you also finde *Saul* mourning for *Saul*, *1 Sam.* 31. 35. *David*'s eyes gushing out with teares, because men kept not Gods Law, *Psal.* 119. 136. *Eggs* renting his clothes, and plucking the haire off his head and beard, when he heard of the peoples sin, *Eggs* 9. 23. The soule of *Jeremie* wept in secret for the pride of the times, *Jer.* 13. 17. *Leis* righteous soule was vexed for the wickednesse of the *Sodomites*, *1 Pet.* 2. 9. Who would not wish to be one in the company of these mourners?

*Phil.* But if Gods people be assured of the pardon of their sinnes, what cause have they to mourne for them: and as for other mens sinnes, they neede not be troubled at them.

*Ans.* Though Gods people be assured of the pardon of their sinnes, yet I conceive there be two reasons why they should mourne both for their owne and other mens.

*Phil.* Let us heare them I pray you.

*Ans.* First, though they be assured that their sinnes are pardoned, yet have they cause to mourne, and be grieved in kinnesse towards so mercifull and forgiving a Father that is offended, yea the truth is, whosoever hath this assurance cannot chuse to mourne and be troubled, because the love of God is thereby shed abroad in their hearts; and then they love him because he hath loved them first, and this love makes them to hate and grieve for sinne, because it is so displeasing to so good a God and Father, Against thee, against thee, faith, *David* have I sinned, against thee O Lord, whose favours towards me are without number, and whose mercies towards me are unexpressable, this is it which melteth my soul into grief & sorrow, so the Prodigall, *Luke* 15 at the return unto his Father hath these words of acknowledgment, *For I have sinned against heaven and before thee; the spirit* (small thing) that touched him even in the quick, was, that he had abused and wronged the bountie and kindnesse of so good a Father, neither can they chuse but grieve for the sins of others upon this ground also, for Gods children are called the friends of God, *John* 2. 23 and if God be

then

## An Alarime for London.

their friends, as you know it grieves a friend to hear or see his friend disgraced, or wronged, even so doth it grieve them to heare or see any dishonour done to God by the finnes of others, and this is the first Reason.

2. Secondly, Gods children, though they be assured that their finnes are pardoned, yet have they cause to grieve and mourne, both for their owne and others finnes, for thus through the Justice of God sinne brings miseries upon the times, which thing now ought seriously to be laid to heart: The Prophet *Jeremy* wished his head full of water, and his eyes a fountaine of teares that he might weepe day and night for the slaine of the people, *Jer. 9. 1.* and that sinne was the procuring cause of it, as the same Prophet testifieth, *Lam. 3. 37.* Seeing man suffereth for his sin, O let us, and all Gods people conclude, that this common calamitie, this heavie judgement of warre hath beene procured by our owne and other finnes.

*Phil.* Well, I doe now plainly see that Gods owne people have great cause to mourne, both for their owne and others finnes, but yet alas, notwithstanding all that hath beene said, I cannot mourne.

*Arch.* Deare friend you judge amisse of your selfe, there is no question but you doe mourne; yea, and you mourne because you can mourne no more. O that all the Inhabitants of the City were but such mourners as you are! But alas, I feare me, that is now verified in this City, which was complained of old; The Lord calleth to mourning, and behold joy and gladnesse, *Isa. 22. 2.* Truly, it appears to me that we are not affected with the tokens of Gods wrath against sinne; Alas, you know there are stormes abroad which have lighted upon divers places of this Kingdome, whereby they are become *Audomars*, houses of blood, fields of blood, townes of blood; and though, blessed be God, we in this City weepe, have onely heard of them, and not felt them, yet ought we, as the Apostle exhorts, *Rom. 12. 15.* *Weepe with them that weepe:* And alas, who knows where these stormes shall light in the end; and yet the face of things as now they stand is sufficient to bewaie the iron deadnesse of peoples hearts in this particular: we neede but look upon the behaviour of people on Fastting dayes, for if we should but goe into some houses, we should finde some at worke in their Callings; if we looke into the streets and fields, we shall see others walking up and downe, even in the time of the publike Exercise; if we goe into the Congregations, we may see some fast asleepe, and others a gazing about even when the Minister is confessing their finnes, and crying to heaven for mercy; And doe not people, especially Gentlewomen come to the Assemblies on those dayes with their best Apparell, with their Nufegaits in their bosomes? Alas, me thinks when I consider these things, I thinke our Assemblies are very unlike the Assemblies of those that have either beene affected with their owne finnes or the finnes of others, or with the miseries of their Kingdome; but let us in the name and feare of God consider how many wayes Gods Commandements have beene broken, both by us and others, and let us mourne for that our gracious God hath beene thereby offended; and let us also take notice of the tokens of his displeasure, and mourne for that we have provoked him unto it, and yet let us looke to Iesus Christ, and crave mercy at Gods hands for his sake, both as touching the pardon of sinne, and power against sinne, that so sinne may be taken away, and then we may be assured wrath will be taken away; which the Lord grant for Christs sake Amen. Fare you well.

*Phil.* The Lord be with you sir, and I give you many thanks for your paines.

FINIS.

A

32

# LETTER

FROM  
MERCVRIVS CIVICVS

TO  
MERCURIUS RUSTICVS:

OR,  
LONDON'S CONFESSION  
but not Repentance.

S H E W I N G,  
That the beginning and the obstinate  
pursuance of this accursed horrid Rebellion  
is principally to be ascribed to that  
*Rebellious City.*

---

*En quo discordia Cives?  
Perduxit miseros. Virg. Egl. 1.*

---

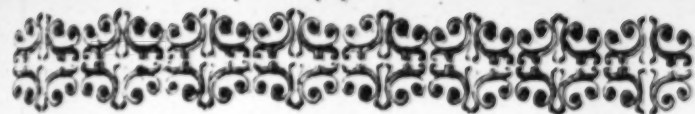
*Aug. 25* <sup>*1643*</sup> Printed, 1643.



M



know  
don v  
City  
trach  
here  
vante  
have  
I wa  
dom  
part  
our b  
scien  
table



A LETTER  
FROM  
MERCURIUS CIVICVS  
TO  
MERCURIUS RUSTICVS.

*Good Brother RUSTICVS,*



Hough there have been some unkind jars between my brother *Aulicus* and me, yet my earnest desire is to keep a good understanding between your self and me: I cannot but congratulate your happinesse that breathe in so free an ayre, wherein it is lawfull to heare and speak *truth*: O *Truth*, sacred *Truth*, whither art thou fled? if you at *Oxford* did not give her entertainment, I

know not where she would find a place of aboad, for here at *London* we fortifie against her to keep her out: Nay with us in the City it is come to that passe, that it is almost as dangerous to speak *truth* as *Love the King*: you know how famous we have been here for publishing and printing Lyes, he that will not lye to advantage the great Cause in hand, is not amongst us thought fit to have accessse either to the Pulpit or the Presse. And therefore when I was first set on work to communicate Intelligence to the Kingdom to indear my self to them that imployed me, I played my part reasonable well, I Lyed my share; but at last admonished by our brother *Aulicus*, and to confesse to you, touched a little in conscience, I began by degrees to take off my self from that unwarrantable course, and did here and there sprinkle a little truth, yet very



sparingly lest I should be thought to be turned *Malignant* or *Cavaleer*: but as little as it was, it was distastfull: for hereupon Mr *Pim* and the Remainder of the *five Members*, assisted by Mr *Martyn*, illiterate *Serjeant Wild*, *Peard* (that hath lesse Law if it be possible then the Serjeant) & some others that have sworn never to indure truth again, since they have thriven so well by Lies, moved at the Close Committee to have me silenced: yet to blind the world, as if their ayme were not at me alone, they involve others in the same doome, and for Intelligencers, by an Order they bung up all our mouths at once: yet knowing how much it concerned them that the old trade went on, though since they have permitted another to make use of my name, yet at first they gave authority to one man onely to lye for all the rest: him they call the *Parliament Scout*, not *Bulmore* the Scout that was slain at *Whetley* bridge neer you at *Oxford*, I meane not him, yet if you look into his weekly Pamphlets, you would sweare that he had no more braines in his head, then *Bulmore* had when they were shot out.

This man indeed tels you some truths, but such antiquated ones that they were stale newes above a Thousand yeares since, as that on the borders of *Scotland*, there dwelt a People whom they called *Picts*, that there was a Wall built between *England* and *Scotland*, and the like: while he keeps at this distance and comes no nearer, he never needs feare that the heeles of the times may chance dash out his teeth: he may write on! but if once he come to publish any Moderne truths, as that his Excellency durst come no nearer *Oxford* then *Thame*, that *Fairfax* is beaten in the North, and *Waller* and *Warwick* in the West, or the like, he were best looke to himselfe, he may read his fate in us: These new Reformers will never Brooke it.

Since therefore we are here enslaved either to Lies or Silence, that the world may not for ever be kept hoodwinkr, goe on (I pray) as you have begun to let her see the Miseries under which she daily suffers. But me thinks it would be a work well worthy your endeavour, to let the Country see not only their miseries, but to point them out the fountain & source from whence they flow: This discovery hath beene within me as wine that hath no vent, ready to burst like new bottles, yet as full as I am, I dare not vent my thoughts concerning this here, but have chose rather to whisper them

them to you: for it is in vaine to dissemble it, your sad stories of the Ruine and devastation of the Countrey are ecchoed in our Streets, and though we beare it out in a Vaunting way, as if these things concerned not us, yet I assure you there are many soules that mourne in private, (for in publique we must be as mad as the rest, or else we suffer as *Malignants*) as knowing how justly we stand charged with all those Calamities, which the sword of Rebellion hath brought upon you: I never heare that of the *Prophet* read, *Woe to the bloody City, it is full of Lies and Robbery*, but I cannot choose but think of *London*.

It is too too manifest, nor can it be denied, but that all your Sufferings have been derived from us: when Common-Prayer was in use amongst us, I remember such a Query in one of the *Prophets*, *Is there any evill in the City and the Lord hath not done it?* But you may aske, *Is there any evill in the Countrey, and the City hath not done it?* You have made us Rich and Populous, and we in soule Ingratitude have prodigally powerd out both our Wealth and Strength to make you and our selves miserable.

Well might the Incendiaries of this present Rebellion (so I dare call it to you, though I dare not speak so plain here) bring violent affections, eager endeavours to set this flourishing Church, and Kingdom in Combustion, but alas! all this had signified little or nothing, had they not gained our consent, and we resigned up our persons and estates to their disposall to be made the base instruments to compass their most Trayterous designes: Could *Say* or *Pim*, and their beggerly Confederates have found money to Levie an Army against their Leige Lord, that had not money to pay their own Debts, had not we furnished them? If we shall without partiality consider the severall helps which this City hath Contributed to this Rebellion, we must confesse that both the beginning and continuance of this unnaturall Warre may be ascribed to us: So that in all England there is but one *Rebell*, & that is *London*. To reflect a little & look back on those times when this Rebellion was but an *Embrio*, or else did begin to creepe into the world, (for we may not think that this Monster was a Brat of a suddain birth) though it were conceived (some *Say*) neere *Banbury*, & shaped in *Grays-Inne-Lane*, where the undertakers for the life of *Providence* did meet and plot it, yet you know it was put out to Nurse to *London*.

For first you may well remember when the *Puritans* here did as much abominate the *Military-yard* or *Artillery-Garden*, as *Paris-Garden* it self: they would not mingle with the Profane: but at last when it was instill'd into them, that the blessed Reformation intended could not be effected but by the sword, these places were instantly filled with few or none but men of that Faction: We were wont you know to make very merry at their Training, some of them in two yeares practice could not be brought to discharge a Musket without winking; We did little imagine then, that they were ever likely to grow formidable to the State, or advance to that strength, as to be able to give the King Battle, but after a while they began to affect, yea and Compasse the chief Offices of command, so that when any prime Commanders dyed, new men were elected, wholly devoted to that Faction; and it became a Generall Emulation amongst them who should buy the most, and the best Armes.

Secondly, that they might fill all places of authority with such as should advance the designe, all care is taken to fill the Bench of Aldermen, and the Common-Councel, with men disaffected to the Government, both Ecclesiasticall, and Civill. To this purpose if London did not afford men bad enough, they would call them from other Corporations, as *Alderman Atkins* from *Norwich* and the like: but if he had seen *Amsterdam* or had been an Adventurer to *New England*, or been the host of the silenced Ministers, he was a jewell: Nay some will tell you, & I am much of their opinion, that the Faction have had so great a Care of this, that they have chosen some men to places of the best esteem in the City, whose estates were not able to defray the Charges, but have been supported by a Common Purse, and if you have not forgotten it, there was a Motion you know made, That *Honest men*, so they call themselves, might beare the *Magistracy*, and the City beare the Expence: some men thought that this proposall had especiall Relation to those two beggerly Captaines, *Ven* and *Manning*, who having nothing either within or without them to render them fit for government, yet in this Rebellious City, were thought most fit, because most averse from what was by Law established.

Thirdly, because all this could not compasse the end they aimed at, unless the *Clergy* did conspire with them and contribute their

their help, and because they found very few of the *Settled Clergy* here in the City, (except Dr. *Gough*, M. *Jackson*, *Votier*, *Simons*, *Walker*, and a very few more) Compliant with their indeavours, they laboured by all means possible, to introduce that *Gibbus* or *excreſcency*, of the Clergy called *Lecturers* over their *Parochiall Ministers* heads, whose maintenance being dependent (yet a portion by double *Leases* and other *Sacralegious* devices stolne from their owne *Parsons*, so that the barren *Mountaines* of *Wales* afford not so many poore, and as Sir *Benjamin Rudyer* was wont to call them, scandalous *Living*s together, as are to be found within the walls of *London*) must preach such *Doctrine* as may foment *disloyalty*, and instill such *Principles* into their *Auditors* as may first dispose them so, and after engage them in *Rebellion*, when things were ripe, or else they shall want bread to put into their heads: The Truth is, Brother *Rusticus*, these *Military* preparations had effected Little, had not the fire been given from the *Pulpit*.

And because they saw how *Successfull* this Course was, and what strange effects it wrought in our City, a *Fourth* design was, to place some of their *Emissaries* in all *Corporations* (those *Nurseries* of *Schisme* and *Rebellion*) and in the most eminent parts of the *Kingdom*; for this purpose a most specious and pious pretence is held out to the world, the buying in of *Impropriations*: *Feoffees* are appointed, men of publique *Callings*, as *Clergy-men*, *Lawyers*, and *Citizens*, whose employments must needs render them knowne to many, and men of noted *Zeale* in the *Opinion* of the *World*, (such as it was) thereby to gaine the reputation of *Religion* to the undertaking: the *Lecturers* (and others too) deceived by the outside of this *Project*, stirre up the *Rich* and well affected to *Contribute* *Librally* to this so religious an *Act*, of redeeming the *Lords* portion out of *Lay-hands*, and amongst the last *Counsell*s given to the dying (and then commonly they make deepest impression) This was never forgotten: by this meanes great *Summes* were advanced, and the *World* stood at gaze to see the great *returne* which would be made to the *Church* of that which *Sacraledge* had made a *Lay-Fee*: after any were redeemed how long the revenues were held in the *Feoffees* hands, what *pittances* were allowed to the *Incumbents*, how they robb'd *Pe-*

ter to pay *Paul* and established a Lecture perhaps in *Cornwall*, with the Tith of a Parsonage in *Yorke-shire*, or the like, appertains not to my present purpose.

The thing that I shall observe unto you is, the great care and art used in fitting men for their service, and then disposing and securing them in their Employment, from any Molestation of Ecclesiasticall Censures. To this end, *First*, they account it necessary to plant two *Seminaries*, the first an *Initiary Seminary*, to this purpose they project the buying of a Headship in one of the *Universities* for some eminent man of their own party, under whose Influence their *Novices* might be trained up in their *Mysteries*: though some houses in both Universities were notorious enough in this kind before, and might have saved them this Labour, as *Magdalene Hall* and *New-Inne* in *Oxford*, and *Emanuel Colledge* and *Katherine Hall* in *Cambridge*.

The second was a *Practique Seminary*, and that was at *St. Antholines* here in *London*, and did in *Spiritualibus* answer to the *Artillery Garden*, being a place to traine up their young *Emissaries*, where they might take an Essay of their affections and abilities, and by the bewitchments of *gaine* and *popular applause* deeply ingage them in their Faction: and from this *Seminary* were most of their new bought *Impropriations* fill'd. And as they had their Salary from, so they were subordinate to a *Classis* or *Clero-laicall Consistory*, who had power to transplant their most hopeful Imps either into their purchased *Impropriations*, or else into a Lecture in some of the most populous places of the Kingdom, maintained by a borrowed portion from an *Impropriation* elsewhere: yet this *Consistory*, did not in their choice, strictly tye themselves to the plants of their own Nurceries, but if any man had been a *Pseudo-martyr* for their cause, or had been sentenced by the high Commission for Non-Conformity, or by some Notorious undertaking had evidenced and declared himselfe, and irrevocably without apparant note of Infamy and Levity (if he retracted) ingaged himselfe to their party: or had Letters Testimoniall from *Patriarch White* of *Dorchester*, *Mr. Cotton* of *Boston*, or the like, (for *Calamy* and *Marshall* were not, as it is said of *Dathan* and *Abiram*, as yet famous in the Congregation.) This man was a choice plant and fit for their Soyle.

Secondly,



*Secondly*, being planted abroad, their second care was, that whatsoever they Preached, though never so derogatory to the Government either *Ecclesiastical* or *Civill*, yet they might be free from molestation, and Preach on, without danger of loosing their maintenance by Ecclesiasticall censure. To this purpose they attempt the buying a Commissaries place *there*, where they intended to make any speciall plantation: who being after their own hearts, might winke at their irregularities, and though the Church-wardens should by chance be so honest to regard their oathes, and present them, yet by the purchased or bribed Commissary they may secure them from the danger of the Court.

*Lastly*, for feare least any of their Creatures should fall from them, and desert the Cause as some had done, when they had got what they looked for; wisely they provide, that their maintenance shall be dependent, on the pleasure of their good Masters the Feoffees, alterable by addition, or subtraction, according to their merits, or demerits, and their persons subject to be Cashed if they Preach not to the advancement of their holy cause, and according to the directions sent unto them from the Conclave of their Elders at *London*: That so as much as humane Policy could invent, they might (to use Mr Foxlies own words speaking in this argument) *Establish the Gospel by a perpetuall decree.*

When all things were now ready, their *Emissaries* having prepared the hearts of the people to Rebellion, first alienating them, by frequent slandering the footsteps of Gods annoynted, decrying the Government both of Church and State, fomenting the causelesse discontents, and aggravating the necessities of State, with the odious names of *Tyranny*, *Arbitrary power*, *Violation* of the Subjects *Liberty*, and *Property*, and likewise possed the credulous multitude, that the conformable *Clergy* had made a Revolt from the *Protestant Religion*, and had an earnest intention to introduce *Poper*y: at last was fulfilled that Prophecy of Iudicious M. Hooker, toward the end of the Preface to that incomparable work of Ecclesiasticall Policy, that after the Puritans have first resolved that attempts for Discipline are lawfull, it will follow in the next place to be disputed, what may be attempted against Superiors who will not have the Scepter of that discipline to



rule over them? Which *Prophecy* we see exactly fulfilled in our dayes, for the Puritans having first rebelled by a *Proxey*, they then thought it seasonable to take an essay what an entertainement the doctrine for taking up *Armes* against the King would find amongst their Disciples.

To this purpose Doctor *Downing*, a man fitted for any base employment, and one that (what ever he counterfeited) ever looked awry on the Church, in which (being settled and in peace) he could never hope to advance farther then *Visar of Hackney*, was to feeble the Pulse of the City: while therefore discontents runne high in the *North*, the *Scots* having in a hostile manner entered the Kingdome, the People every where, especially in *London*, stir'd up by some agents to Petition the King for this Parliament, D. *Downing* Preaching to the Brotherhood of the *Artillery Garden* positively affirmed, that for defence of Religion and Reformation of the Church, it was lawfull to take up armes against the King.

He having thus Kindled the fire in the City, for feare of being questioned (for as yet it was not lawfull to Preach Treason) retired privately to the Earle of *Warwicks* house in *Essex*, the common Randevouz of all Schysmaticall Preachers, this Sermon in every place administring matter of discourse, People censured it, as they stood affected, which gave occasion to the Ringleaders of this faction to enter upon a serious examination, and study of this case of Conscience: and it seems, consulting the Iesuites on the one side, and the Rigid Puritans on the other, or indeed, because without admitting this doctrine, all their former endeavours would vanish into smoak, they stood doubtfull no longer, but closed with these two contrary Factions, yet shaking hands in this poynt of Rebellion, and subscribed to D. *Downings* doctrine, as an Evangelicall truth.

And that in this I may not be thought to speak as if I were a Parliament intelligencer still, for the truth of this, I appeale to M. *Stephen Marshall* himselfe, who being pressed by M. *Simons*, that heretofore he was of another opinion, ingenuously confessed it, but withall affirmed, that on D. *Downings* Sermon, having a hint given them, the Brethren did enter upon an examination of the Doctrine, and upon examination found it true: Though the  
truth

truth is, they whispered this doctrine long before in their Conventicles, but never durst proclaime it in their Pulpits, before they saw an army in the bowells of the Kingdom to make it good by the sword, and a Faction in a Parliament coming on, that would Authorize Rebellion under this pretence, by their Votes and Ordinances.

After it was once owned as a Truth, and a Truth, first scann'd, and then avowed by *Marshall, Calamy, Downing*, and Colonel *Cornelius Burges*, and the rest of their Elders, That for the cause of Religion it was lawfull for the Subject to take up Armes against his Lawfull Sovereigne, good God! how violently did the People of London rush into Rebellion? how plyable did the Faction in Parliament find them, to raise Tumults? make outcries for justice? call for innocent blood? subscribe and preferre Petitions against the holy Lyturgy? and the Hierarchy, Root and branch, as Doctor *Burges* did but hold up his finger to his *Mermidons*? or Captain *Ven* send his summons by his Wife, to assemble the Zealots of the City?

But because all other attempts had been to little purpose, while the power of the sword remained in His hands, into which God had put it, the Heads of this Rebellion consider, that it was more feazable by secret practises, to render the King unable to withstand them, then for them openly to oppose the King; therefore their main indeavour is to wrest the power of the Militia out of the Kings hands by degrees, and to put it there, where they might place the greatest confidence.

But this was a work not easily effected, great Changes could not be ushered in but by great preparations to make way for them; hereupon the Faction in Parliament make it their first work to make this City wholly theirs, that one soule as it were might animate both representative bodies, That of the Kingdome, and this of the City: knowing that it was in vaine for the Faction in Parliament to contrive unless the Faction in the Common-Councillin London would execute: for though there were some flourishes made from *Buckingham-shire* in the behalfe of M. *Hampden*, and from *Leicester-shire* in the behalfe of Sir *Ariher Haslerigge*; and the like, yet the standing Guard, and power of the Faction in Parliament, on which they relied, to affront the King, and save themselves

selves from the justice of the Laws, was that fixed here in London.

And because where feare doth possesse the multitude, it makes them work not like agents, but like instruments, and moulds them to a Temper, fit to receive impressions, from those, in whose wisdoms or Loves they repose themselves, making them pliable to all directions and Counsells, which shall be given by them, whom they esteeme Patriots of the Common-wealth, and Assertors of the Liberties, and safety of the People, all possible art was used to possesse the Kingdome, but especially the City with strange lealousies and Feares, and therefore besides the often inculcating the fained intention of introducing Popery, great preparations in France, and Denmarke to invade the Kingdome, to inable the King to governe Arbitrarily, to the subversion of the fundamentall Lawes of the Kingdome, together with the Liberty and Property of the Subject: (Theames that did continually possesse both the Pulpit and the Presse, which how true, though most impudently affirmed, the World now sees: ) each day did produce a discovery of some new Treason, and to incare the City the more it must be so contrived, That in these monstrous fictions you shall continually find the Parliament and City fained to be involved in the same danger.

To possesse the Kingdom how mortally the Parliament and City (the two vitall parts of the Kingdome as Pym calls them) were threatned; in the time of the Recess they take opportunity of the Petition delivered by the Troopers from the North, and by an order from the Committee, they appoynt strong watches to be kept in all high-ways, Villages, and Townes within twenty miles of London, that Travellers into all parts of the Kingdome, passing through these Guards, might report when they came home, in how much danger the Parliament and City were for their sakes.

And that the Credulous People might not think but that this was done on good grounds, a Letter is written from the Parliament Commissioners in Scotland, M. Hampden, M. Fiennes and the rest to M. Pym and the close Committee here, to inform them of a strange conspiracy discovered in Edenburgh, to seize on the persons of the Marquesse Hamilton and the Earles of Argyle, and

and *Lauricke*: the Committee wisely considering that it was no strange thing for Treason to make a step out of *Scotland* into *England*, instantly provided against it, (at least so they would be thought) by publishing an Order commanding the Iustices of Peace of *Middlesex, Surrey, and Southwarke*, to secure the City and the places adjoyning from all danger by strong guards, well armed, and give this reason for their Order, *Because the Mischievous designs and conspiracies lately discovered in Scotland against some Principall and Great men there, by some of the Popish Faction gives just occasion to suspect, that they may maintain correspondency here and practise the like mischief.*

~ Presently upon the neck of this *M. Pim's* life (to the great detriment of the Kingdom and Nation) is indangered by a contagious plaister of Plague sore, wrapt up in a letter and directed to him: but God be thanked, the infection did not take, though throwing away the plaister only, he put the letter in his Pocket: he being reserved for another manner of death (we hope) then to dye privately in his bed, with a few spectators to bear witness of this end.

Then comes a Tailor out of a ditch in *Finsbury* fields, having miraculously escaped, being runne *nine times* besides the body, (for like a wise Tailor, wheresoever he made ilotholes, he would be sure to make none in his own skinne, though to gain credit to the relation:) and he tells a strange discovery of a Treason, which he overheard two men talking of, a Conspiracy against the life of the Lord *Say*, and some of the chief Members of both Houses: A thing so improbable, indeed so Ridiculous, that had they not thought that the world stood prepared to receive any thing for truth which came from them, 'twas a wonder how they durst own it. And now I have named a Taylor it puts me in mind of *Perkins* my Lord *Say's* Taylor, who at a Common-Councell produced a copy of a Letter from an I know not what Irish Lord in *Paris*, to such an other Irish Lord in *London*, intimating some strange designe against the City, which took as passionately with the People, as if it had been certified from *M. Strickland* his worship himselfe, *Embassador* for the two Houses unto the States-Generall of the united Provinces. But the most monstrous of all the rest, and that which if the people had not been accursed

to believe Lies, was the invisible Army quartered under ground at *Ragland Castle*, discovered by *John Davis*, servant to *Mistria Lewis* an Inne-keeper at *Rosse*, to Alderman *Allens* Coachman: except the blowing up the *Thames* with Gunpowder to drown the City, one of the most dangerous plots that ever affrighted *London*.

And as by their own fictions they endeavoured to possess the People with Icalousies, so whatsoever the King did never wanted a sinister interpretation, glossed to the multitude, to traduce His actions, as if in them there were ever some evill intended to the City and Parliament. When the King removed *Belfore* from the Lieutenantcy of the Tower, and placed *Sir Thomas Lunsford* in that charge, the Citizens and their Wives could not sleep quietly in their bedds, for feare of having their houses beaten down about their eares. To satisfy their Clamours, though nothing were objected against him, the King reassumes the Trust, and presently deposite it with *Sir John Byron*: the Faction were as ill satisfied in him, yet it was not easy what to object against him: nay it was a Query that did not a little trouble them in what to quarrell him: at last Lieutenant *Hooker* the *Aquavise* man, and *Nicholson* the *Chandler*, complaine in the Common-Councell, that since *Sir John Byron* came to be Lieutenant of the Tower, the Mint (to the great prejudice and dishonour of the Kingdome) stood still. Those that knew what trade these men drove, by the poor retails of Broomes, Candles, and Mustard, their chief merchandize, to improve brass farthings into Groats and Sixpences, accounted the Objection as inconsiderable as the Authors that alleadged it, yet as meane and false as it was, it served some mens turnes to slander the King to His People, and raise a Clamour. The King out of the abundant goodnesse of His Nature, hoping to winne them by some condescendments, (which now the world sees is impossible: Puritans being of another manner of Temper then to be overcome with kindnesse) removes *Sir John Byron*, and confers this great trust on *Sir John Coniers*, a man of whom the Faction it seems conceived better hopes, and indeed hitherto if you consider his exaction upon the Kings friends in his custody, or retaining the name of Lieutenant, but resigning the power contrary to his expresse oath, and that on his own Petition



to the Train bands of the City, he hath not given them any occasion to repent them of their acquiescence in him.

It were endlesse, *Brother Rusticus*, to relate all the meanes used to heighten the fears of this miserable City, and by consequence of the Kingdome: especially after the Faction in Parliament, had shewen them the way by publishing that great Buggbeare to affright the People, the *Remonstrance of the state of the Kingdome*.

At last to make experiment what good effect all these arts had produced the maine Engineers resolve on Twelue night to see what partee they had in the City, and what assistance they might expect (if occasion served) by giving a false Allarme. To this purpose in the night a Rumour is divulged and suddenly dispersed through the City, That the King and *Cavaleers* with fiftene hundred horse were coming to surprize the City: you would wonder to consider how this report prevailed, insomuch that in an instant *London* was in Armes, no lesse then 50000 or 60000 men ready provided to incounter they knew not what: the Women (who as *M. Peters* did instruct the in the Pulpit, have huggd their Husbands into this Rebellion) provide hot water (besides what they sprinkled for feare) to throw on the *Cavaleers*: joynt-stooles, foornes, and empyr tubbes are throwne into the Streets to intercept the Horse. Had you been at the Lord Majors that night, as I was, you might upon the Aldermens coming to him, to consult against the common danger, easily perceive which of the Aldermen were privy to this designe, and who were not thought fit to be intrusted with so great a Mysterie: some of them (and when time serves I can tell you their names) came so neat as if they had spent the whole day to be trimme at midnight, their beards put into a feasting posture, not a haire awry, a cleare demonstration that they had not consulted their pillows that night: Their Ruffes set as compleatly as if they had beene to dine with the Masters of their Companies, or were prepared to beare a part in my Lord Majors shew: but the rest that slept in the simplicity of their hearts, and went to bed, so farre from misconceiving their gracious Sovereigne to have any evill intention against the City, that they thought themselves safe under his Protection, these came in a farre different garbe, one came in his nightcap & forgot

forgot his Hat, another had his Hat, but did not remember to take his Ruffe, one trots along in his slippers, another for haste not staying to garter his stockings, had lost them had not his shoes been on: so that it was easy to distinguish who were *Confiding Aldermen*, as they call them, and who *Malignants*.

And as by degrees they wrought the people to this height of Jealousie, so by degrees too, proportionable to their Jealousies did they disarm the King, and Arme themselves. At first they did only wrest the Sword out of the Kings Hand, but as their party grew stronger, they turned the point upon him. When their Feares were but young, the Faction of the City desired no more, but a strong guard of the Train-Bands, and this they called *The Safety of the City*, when their Feares grew Stronger, then in a Common-Councell they move for *The Posture of Defence*, which was the Egge of which afterwards was hatched that *Cockatrice of the Militia*.

But because it was impossible to disarm the King, as long as the Lord Major stood firme in his Loyalty, and invetted in his power; their maine work therefore was, first, to pack a Common-Councell of men of their own Faction, and then by advancing the power of their Common-Councell (by the assistance of the *House of Commons*) above the Lord Majors, to draw the Voting of all Queryes, and the Resolution of all doubts, or matters under debate, unto the decision of a *Major part*; and if any Obstacle lay in their way to these ends, which was not in their power to remove, presently at a dead lift, *Penington* or *Ven* or *Vassels* bring an order from the *House of Commons*, which never failed to determine all things, for their own Creatures. And because the Practices of these men deserve not to be buried in Silence, I shall give you a short account, how the power of the *Militia* of the City, came to be taken out of the Lord Major, and *Courts of Aldermens* hands, and seated in a *Major part* of the *Commons*; In which you shall see how a Faction in the City conspired with a Faction in the *Parliament*, and this Faction in the *Parliament* with that in the City, untill between both, the King was enforced, for fear of their tumults, and Insolencies, to withdraw himself into the Country.

The time of Election of Common-Councell men comming on

on, at *St Thomas* day 1641. when these feares and Jealousies had distracted the City, it was no difficult matter, for this active faction, to instill into their fellow Citizens how much it Concerned them to make choyce of *Godly men* (so they miscall themselves) and such as would oppose the *Popish Party*, under which notion, they comprehend all such as stand well affected to the Government established, whether *Ecclesiasticall*, or *Civill*. They accuse the Old Common-Councill-men, as men not Zelous for Religion, Ready to comply with the Court for loanes of Monies, and which was worse, many had not only set their hands to, but were active in promoting the intended Petition, for *Episcopacy*, and the Booke of *Common Prayer*. These Objections (which duly considered had been so many convincing arguments for them) so prevailed, with these silly men, (who thought all to be in danger, vlesse the government were put into new hands) that in most Wards, the old Common-Councill men were turned out, and new chosen in, wholly devoted to the *Puritan faction*; especially in those Wards, where their *Aldermen* inclined that way: amongst these, the most remarkable were *Arkins*, *Wollastone*, *George Garrat* the Draper, *Wardner*, and *Towse*. Now outgoe all the grave, discreet, well-affected Citizens, as *St George Benyon*, *M. Drake*, *M. Roger Clarke*, *M. Roger Gardner*, *Deputy Withers*, *M. Cartwright*, and others, and in their stead are chosen *Fowke the Traynor*, *Ryley the squeeking Bodyes-maker*, *Perkins the Taylor*, *Norminton the Cutler*, young beardless *Coulson* the Dyer, *Gill* the Wine-Cooper, and *Impe* the *Laten-man* in *Crooked-Lane*, *Beadle* of the Ward, in the place of *Deputy Withers*. So that a man would swear, they meant to fulfill, what a wise *Lord Keeper* once spake to a Recorder of *London*, dying with him, upon occasion of a *Wood Cock-Pye* brought to the Table, with the heads looking out of the Lid, *Mr Recorder, you are welcome to a Common-Council*.

These new men, though chosen on *S. Thomas* day, are never returned by the constant custome of the City, before the *Munday* after *Twelve-day*: nor have power to sit in the Common-Councill, or concur in doing any act, before the Indentures of their Election be returned from the Wardmote Inquest to the Town-Clark, and a Warrant is sued forth from the *Lord Major*,

to the Serjeant of the Chamber to Summon them. Yet in the Year 1641. the small space of time betweene *S. Thomas* day, and the day of this Returne, was a very *active* time: and that which laid the Ground-work, of that Revolt of this City, from their Loyalty to Rebellion, which presently followed. Therefore Impatient to stay the time of their ordinary calling, and knowing the Necessity of their presence for the advancement of the work in hand, when the King, gave order to the *Lord Major*, for calling that Common-Councell held *December, 31. 1641.* when the *Lord Newburge* was sent from the King, to give the City notice of the late Tumults at *Westminster*, and *White-Hall*, and to recommend unto them the Care of preventing the like disorders, for the time to come. To this Common-Councell, comes *Fowke*, and with him, all the Tribe of this new choice, and mingle with the old; which being an Intrusion, without precedent, was earnestly opposed by *them*, that loved the ancient order, and honour of the City; and foresaw the Inundation breaking in upon them, yet out of Respect to the Kings Message, and that *Lord* that brought it, the controversie for the present was hushed up, and generally, they applied themselves to give dispatch to the Answer, which they were to returne to the King, which was accordingly done, and the Answer presently after published in Print.

So, on the 5. of *January*, being the day after the King went to the House of Commons to demand the *Five Members*, a Common Councell being called by the Kings direction to the *Lord Major*, to which himselfe in Person came, to impart unto them, the reasons that induced him to goe to the House the day before, and to admonish them, not to harbour or protect these men in the City. Thither came *Fowke* and his new Elected, but not admitted Brethren. *Fowke* having prepared a Saucy, Insolent Speech, to make unto the King, concerning *Feares*, & *lealouses*, touching the *Members* accused, The *Priviledges of Parliament*, and that they might not be tried but in a *Parliamentary* way. The King heard him with admired patience, and whereas so disloyall expressions, justly deserved his Royal Indignation, to have sent him to *Newgate*, or *Bride-well* (specially interposing in that Representative body of which, as yet, he was no member.) The King only

onely returned this short, gracious Answer, bidding him and the rest, so assure themselves, That they should have a lust Tryall, according to the Lawes of the Land; adding, that they were dangerous men, and that neither he, nor they, could be in safety, as long as these men were permitted to go on in their way.

It was observed by some, very wise men, there present, that the King at His coming to the Common-Councell, was received with Joy, and acclamations; not much Inferiour to those, at His entrance into the City, on His returne from Scotland. But after the reason of His coming was knowne, and the Puritan Preachers kindled into the peoples heads, that the great Patriots of this Kingdome were in danger, to be called to a Legall Triall, for Libelation, at His returne, there was a new face on the Multitude, and instead of *God save the King*, there was nothing echoed in His eares, but *Priviledges of Parliament*, *Priviledges of Parliament*! *Great is Diana of the Ephesians* was never roared louder. The King dined that day at Sheriffe Garrets, and the Faction of the Sectaries, Brownists, and Anabaptists having time to assemble, after dinner, the house was beset, and the streets leading unto it thronged with people, Thousands of them flocking from all parts of the City: and the clamour still was *Priviledges of Parliament*; which cry first taken up that day, and that, with so good successe, never failed to be Objected to the King, and inculcated to the People, even unto this day, in all their appeals unto them.

This Tumult sweld to that height, that the King in His returne was in great danger, the people in a most undutifull manner, pressing upon, looking into, and laying hold on His Coach: nay, in defiance of His sacred Person, and Authority, that seditious Pamphlet of *Walkers, To your Tents O Israel*, was throwne either into, or very near His Coach: Insomuch, that those few friends, which the King had in the City, were heartily glad when they heard that the King was safely arrived at *White-Hall*: for I assure you, His fast friends here in the City, as the never enough honoured Sir Richard Gurney, and Sir Thomas Gardner the Recorder were in great danger, being pursued with outcries, as Remember the Protestation, others calling them halfe Protesters;



may the *Lord Major* had his *Chaine* torne from his neck by a Zealous sifter.

This very day, the two Houses (the leaders in both) thinking themselves unsafe at *Westminster*, affrighted with their own guilt, resolve to take Sanctuary in *London*, knowing, that what ever they had done, or ever should doe, though never so derogatory to the King, never so contrary to Law, yet the Puritan Faction in the City would afford them not only protection, but power and assistance. Both Houses therefore adjourn, untill the *Tuesday* following, and cast themselves into a Committee, to meet at *Guild-Hall*, or *Grocers-Hall*.

To the Committee at *Grocers hall*, come the *Five Members* in great Triumph, guarded, and attended by the Train-bands, and a strong guard set to secure the place of their sitting. Now, if ever, was the fatall conspiracy of *Time* and *Place*, for Coyning new unheard of *Priviledges* of *Parliament*, not only to the securing the persons of Traitors, but Iustifying Treason it selfe: For here was (before this day) the unheard of Priviledge of *Parliament* declared, That no Member of *Parliament* ought to be arrested by any warrant whatsoever, without consent of that House, whereof he is a Member, and by the same Ordinance it was declared, That they that shall arrest those Members are enemies to the State: with free liberty granted for all persons to harbor or converse with them: In all which, it is evident, that the power and strength of *London* were made the first obstruction of the free course of Iustice, and the City made the *Asylum*, and Sanctuary of those, whom the King had justly declared Traytors.

And now, having undoubted experience of the affection of the City, all eyes being turned from *White Hall*, to *Grocers Hall*, where the *Darlings* of the People were pompously feasted, and fawningly courted: on Saturday the eight of Jan. 1641. the Committee consult, how the accused Members might come to *Westminster*; the Tuesday following, and without any long debate, it was resolved upon the question, That the *Sheriffs* of *London* should, and might raise a guard of the *Traine-bands*, for the defence of the King and *Parliament*; and that they might warrantably march out of their *Liberities*, and that you may see that the Scene was right layd, there were some ready at that instant to make a tender

render of the assistance of the *Seamen* and *Mariners*, whose power should guard them by Water, as the *Train-bands* by Land. Next day being Sunday, every Pulpit that was at their devotion, sounded nothing but the praise of *Kimbolton* and the *Five Members*: inciting the People to stand up in the defence of these *worthies*: else if they permitted the King to take away these to day, he might goe on to seize on as many more to Morrow, untill he had left the Parliament naked of all good *Patriots*, and *Zealous assertors* of Religion, the Lawes, and Liberties of the Kingdom.

On Munday the tenth of Jan. 1641. the King hearing of these great Preparations, an Army by Land, and a Navy by Sea, which was to cast ancre against *White-Hall*, suddenly, (and certainly guided by an immediat providence, which in a peculiar manner watched over Kings) resolved with his ever glorious *Queen*, the *Prince*, and the *Duke of York*, to withdraw to *Hampton Court*, which accordingly He did: not leaving (though well he might) His curse behind him upon *London*, as *Henry the third of France* did on *Paris*, sowlly provoked in the like manner; who flying from the City and the *Holy League* the Parallell of this Treason here, at *Chalioz*, turning towards it, said, *I give thee my Curse, disloyall, and ingratefull City, a City which I have alwayes honoured with my continuall abode, a City which I have enriched more then any of my Predecessors, I shall never enter within the compasse of thy walls, but by the ruine of a great and Memorable breach.*

The  
French  
Hist. p.  
805.

The King, now, no better then fled from *London*, and the apparent dangers there, the whole strength of the City remained at the disposall of a Faction of Puritans in the *Parliament*, and a Faction of Puritans in the *City*. That very Munday, on which the King for his safety from these Tumults, withdrew himselfe (and 'tis a wonder that any man should be so frontlesse to deny, that for that reason, and that reason only, he withdrew himselfe) was the returne made of the Indentures of the Election of the Common councill-men, and if any election was questioned, as some were, and that most justly, 'twas truly observed, that the decision, never failed to goe on their side, who were last elected, whether it were right, or wrong: for whereas formerly all controversies of this Nature were submitted to the determination of the *Lord Major* and *Courts of Aldermen* only, now by the impetuoussesse

tuoufneffe, and Clamour of *Fowke*, and his adherents, it must be referred to a *Committee* of the Common-councell, the same *Committee* which was for the *Safety*, the first step which the *Puritans* made towards the *Militia*.

Having thus put the King to flight, and by most indirect unwarrantable Practices, turned most of the discreet able men of the City, out of the Common-councell, they beginne to put the City into a *True Posture of Rebellion*, which they called, the *Posture of Defence*, and was the *Second* step to the *Militia*: and for the Committee of this *Posture of Defence*, they nominate *Six Aldermen*, and *twelve Commoners*, most of them being of this last election. And to have a leader for the intended Rebellion, upon *Ven's* Recommendation; *Skippon* for his Councell, and advice, is added as an *Appendix* to the *Commistee*. And though a great debt lay on the Chamber of London, which was often complained off, but never paid, yet *Serjeant Major Generall Skippon*, (so many are the Syllables of his new honours) is ordered by act of Common-councell, to have 300<sup>l</sup> a yeare, out of the Treasury for Orphans, during his life, if he should so long continue in the City service.

A strong Party being thus made, they beginne to make all manner of Warlike Preparations, and provide Ammunition of all sorts: they increase the number of the Train-bands, from sixe, to eight Thousand, and appoint over them sixe *Aldermen*, to be *Colonells*, each *Colonell* to have his Captains, Officers, Colours, and Regiment, to be assigned him by the Committee for the *Posture of Defence*: and yet as if all this had been to no purpose, unless they can make the *Lord Major* (a shrewd rubbe in the way) a meer Cipher, and reduce their *Governour*, to so mean a condition, as to be only their *instrument*, they intrench upon his power, and invade it many wayes.

*First*, therefore, whereas the power of summoning Common-councells, resided only in the *Lord Major*, who, with the advice of some Aldermen, was to judge of the Reasons inducing him, to assemble this Representative body, now by Orders from the House of *Commons*, at the instance of *Pennington, Ven, & Vassells*, the *Lord Major* is not left to his own judgement, when to call or  
not

not to call a Common-councell, but must doe it, as oft as the Men of this Faction shall command him : which usurp'd power, both *Ven* and *Fowkes* have used with that insolency, that when they have required *Sir Richard Gurney* to call a Common-councell, and he hath demanded a reason, they have vouchsafed him no other answer, then this saucy one, *that when he came thither he should know.*

Secondly, as the power of calling Common-councils was trusted by their *Charter & Long prescription*, with the *Lord Major*, so the power of dissolving them, was put into the same hands, he might rise in the midst of a debate, and dismiss the assembly, and yet was not bound to give them an account, why he did so ; but now, partly by violence, and partly by pretended orders from the House of Commons, he is fastned to his seat, there he must sit, untill *Ven* and *Fowkes* and the rest have no farther use of him.

Thirdly, heretofore, when a Common-councell was called, nothing could be put to the Question, or proposed as the Subject of their deliberation, but what the *Lord Major* by the *Recorder* did offer unto them ; but now, when they could not prevaile with the *Major* to command the *Recorder*, nor with the *Recorder* without the *Lord Majors* consent, to propose what the Faction pleased, by the Omnipotency of an order, from the House of Commons, they make the *dumb to speak*, what *Ven* and the rest will have them : or else the *Lord Major* and the *Recorder* must answer it at a Committee.

Lastly, whereas the *Lord Major* and *Aldermen* sit apart, from the Commons, and are *Covered*, when the others are *bareheaded*, and have a *Negative Voice*, the irch of incorporating two in one, hath been as great in the *City*, as ever it was at *Westminster*, and with better successe ; for the faction *here* (upon the point) have cast all into a common huddle, blending the *Court of Aldermen* with the *Comons* : *Vpper*, and *Lower*, sound as harshly *here*, as *Westward* : And though in outward appearance, they remain two distinct Members, of one body, yet, in power, they have made both, *Levell*, Involving the Votes of the *Major* and *Aldermen* in the major part of the Commons.

The *Puritan Faction*, by the assistance of the *House of Commons*, having thus gotten the power to call Common-councils, power to  
continue

continue them, power to put to the *Question* what they please, and power to determine all by a *Major part*, my Lord Major having no more sway then *Perkins the Taylor*, *Rily the Bodys maker*, or *Nicholson the Chandler*, they may dispose of the Wealth and Power of the City as they please: now the two Factions openly communicate Counsills, walk hand in hand, that 'twas a question, which was the Parliament, that at *Westminster*, or this at *Guile-hall*.

Towards the end of *January 1641*. the Commons house Petition'd the King touching the *Tower*, the *Fortts*, and the *Militia*, and as two strings set to the same tune, though on two severall *Viols*, at a convenient distance, if you touch one, the other by consent renders the same sound, so, the *House of Commons*, and the *Common-councell* of this City, were now grown to such a Sympathy, that the motions, and endeavours of one, were the work of both: that you would sweare, *Fowkes* was as much a Parliament man here, as *Ven* at *Westminster*: for before *February* was tenne dayes old, there was a *Common-councell* held, in which many things were debated: the Court was continued long, untill one of the Clock: at last, tired out with long sitting, and willing to rise, *Ven*, taking advantage of the present indisposition of the Court, to sit longer, ready to admit propofalls, without any strict scanning, (especially since whatsoever passed that *Common-councell*, was to undergoe a second consideration at the next, as their constant custome is) produceth an Order from the House of *Commons*, by which, they were desired to returne such mens names, with whom the City thought fit to intrust the *Militia* of London.

The Court, surprized with so unexpected a Message for the present, not piercing into the reason of it, nor understanding that the Houses were in so great forwardness to settle the *Militia*, as afterwards they found they were, nor imagining that the men, whose names they returned, should have absolute power to execute any thing of themselves, but only as a Committee to consult, and prepare, and report to the *Common-councell*, as the limited power of all Committees is, and, considering that the *Posture of Defence*, and the new *Militia*, though two names, were in effect but one and the same thing, Ordered that the names of the Committee



*mittee*, for the *posure of defence*, should be sent to the House in returne to their order. The Intention of the House, (as some think) in this Message, (though for my part, if I were put to my oath I dare not swear it) was, to indeare the City, and to lay an Obligation upon them by giving them power to nominate their owne men: But *Ven* (instructed by some, that had more wit, but as little honesty as himselfe) his purpose in the carriage of this businesse was, to make the Lord *Major*, the *Sheriffes* and *Courts of Aldermen*, by their owne voluntary, but Inconsiderate act, to renounce (as it were) their owne Interest, and so, to place this great power of the *Militia* on the *Committee* for the *posure of Defence*, whereof the *Major* part, if not all, were of his owne Faction.

Many dayes had not passed, before it was generally knowne, to the great Regret of all Loyall discreet men, That the *Militia* of *London*, was put in the hands of the *Committee* for the *posure of Defence*. Not long after, a common-Councell was called, at which, when the orders made the last meeting, (as the Custom is) were read, at this, many men seeing the snare, into which unwittingly they had cast themselves, beganne to retract, and speake against that order, whereby the *Committee* for the *posure of Defence*, were invested with the power of the *Militia*: nay, some of the *Aldermen*, whose names were returned, for the new *Militia*, utterly protested against it: affirming, that when they passed that order, they had not the least Intention, to exclude the Lord *Major*, from having power over the *Militia*, nor had any thought, to place so absolute power in their *Committee*, as (they found) the two Houses had done: and hereupon, by some that stood well affected to the honour, and peace of the City, it was earnestly moved, that the Houses might be Petitioned to reverse their Order, but all in vaine: the Faction in the common-Councell being instructed by their Leaders, at what advantage they had the City, were resolved, not to Lose it, by giving way to such a Motion: but on the Contrary, to make all sure, *Ven* produceth another order from the House of *Commons*, That *Skippin*, whom the *Committee* for the *posure of Defence*, had associated to them for his advice, and assistance, should, by their Assent, be added to the same *Committee* for the *Militia*: which was no sooner



ner moved, then assented unto, the Major part of the Common-Councell (who now rule the rest) will have it so.

The Court of Aldermen finding (but too late) that this settlement of the *Militia*, would be no small derogation to the *Mayor* in particular, and the *Government* of the City in general; and being out of all hope to find the Commons ready to Joyn with them, in such a Petition, resolve (without them) to Petition, that this Order of so dangerous Consequence might be recall'd, and the *Major* and *Sheriffes* be nominated of the Committee. To this end petitions are framed, and delivered, but to no purpose; the Lord *Majors* Loyalty, was too well knowne, to be admitted, to have any share in that power which was intended to be employed against the King.

Notwithstanding this Repulse, divers Citizens, very Considerable for their numbers, but more considerable for their *Quality* and *abilities*, out of a sence of that great Contempt, and prejudice, which this would bring upon that ancient Government, under which their City had so long flourished, joyned in a petition in their owne names, to the two Houses, to the same effect, but with worse Success; for the House of Commons, having Information what was in agitation in the City, send *Wm. Long* to seize on the Petition, and the Subscriptions; by which meanes, the Names of the Subscribers being knowne, there wanted not arts to make them retract their owne voluntary act: some by perswasions, and private solicitations, others intimidated by threats, and Menaces, are Compell'd to recant, &c. because it was a Note of Levity, if not worse, so suddenly to protest against their owne voluntary Act, therefore the *Decoy* to bring on the Rest, to so base, sounworthy a Revolt, was *Lenthall* the *Speakers* Brother, which Example (he having broke the Ice) was followed by many, that Loved an Ignoble quietnesse, before freedom with Trouble.

This last Petition was that which they call *Benjons* petition, and indeed Sir *George Benyon* was (and he needs not be ashamed of it) a Frammer, and a chiefe promoter of that most reasonable, most equitable Petition: which notwithstanding was made that great crime, that afterwards drew on his Impeachment, and heavy Censure in Parliament. In which Sentence, the World may see,

see what grosse Injustice and partiality was used by them, that would be angry, not to be thought the most upright, unblemished Justitaries in the world. The *Christmas* before (which wee now must call *Nativity Tide*) the Lord Maior, and the Recorder, were convened before a Committee for obstructing the Apprentizes petition, against Episcopacy; and learned *Peard* (who hath no more Law then what was made this Parliament) sitting in the Chayre, told them, that it was against the freedom and Liberty of the Subject, not to permit them (without any Let or Interruption) to present their grievances in paper to the Parliament, Nay for feare they should want worke, there was an order published in print by the *House of Commons* to that very purpose; yet Sir *George* for making use of the same Liberty, which themselves had proclaimed, is sentenced thus: First, fined in three Thousand pounds. Secondly, disfranchized, utterly deprived of the privileges of the City. Thirdly, never to beare any Office in the Kingdome. Fourthly, to be committed prisoner to *Colebatch* Gaole for two yeares, and lastly, at the expiration of that term to give security for the good behaviour, such, as the Parliament if they then (ate) should then thinke fitting, and in case the Parliament were dissolved, such as the *Lord Keeper* for the time being should approve of: how will this *Sentence*, for ever justifie the severest, that were ever given, either in the *Star-Chamber*, or *High Commission*, That did doome a man to ruine, for no other fault, then what themselves had authorized, and judged it against the Liberty of the Subject, to oppose it, even by their owne Order.

The Committee for the posture of Defence, being by these dishonest practices made *Lords of the Militia*, and being armed With as much power as will, to serve the most desperate, Treasonable designs, which either *Jay*, or *Pym* should suggest, they now goe on without checke or controule, and beate downe all before them that stand in their way. On Triviall pretences, or for necessary obedience to the Kings Just Commands, they remove honest Sir *Richard Gurney* (whose name in after Chronicles will outshine famous *Walsworths*, and upbraid this Rebellious City to all posterity) from the Governement of the City, and in his place substitute *Little Jface*, rejecting the *Olise*, and ad-

vancing that *Examble*, out of which I feare will come that *Fire*, which will consume this seditious *City*. Now the People are authorized by Ordinance of both Houses, and encouraged and pressed even in point of Conscience, by their *Bouteveau* Lecturers, to List horses in *Moorefields*, send in money and plate to *Guild-Hall* for the service of the *King* and *Parliament*, and because they would be sure to have an Orator in every Pulpit to quicken the people, to poure out their wealth Liberally, to further the Rebellion intended, they cause the very dregs, and scum of every Parish, to petition against the *Orthodox* Clergy: who being imprisoned, or else, they sequester their Livings, for the use of their owne Levites: so that at this day, there is not a true *Orthodox* Minister left, freely speaking his Conscience, and exercising his Ministry in the whole *City*: so that whatsoever they pretend, that they take up Armes for the defence of the Protestant Religion, if they meane the Protestant Religion, as it is by Act of Parliament established in the *Church of England*, I assure you, *Brother*, were you here, you could no more see a face of the Church of *England*, then you can at *Amsterdam*.

They have not onely banished all *Decency* and *Order*, together with the established *Liturgie* out of our Churches, but in stead of the Gospel, our new Preachers entertaine their Auditories with newes, which upon examination prove but fictions and Lyes to blind the people, or else with bitter invectives against the King and his Governement: and as for *Faith*, *Charity*, and *Repentance*, they are laid aside as impertinent arguments: all their exhortations now, are to *Treason* and *Rebellion*: So that, as in the *Holy League of France*, as my Author speakes, our pulpits are made the Chaires of *Inglers*. Nay, the very Sacraments escape not their Blasphemy and Prophanation to these vile purposes: I doubt not but you have heard of *M. Case* his Invitation of the Congregation to the Lords Table, who in stead of *you that do truly and earnestly repent you of your sinnes, and be in Love and Charity with your Neighbours, and intend to lead a new Life*. &c. bespake them thus: *You that have freely and liberally Contributed to the Parliament, for the defence of Gods cause and the Gospels, draw nere*: To the rest he threatned Damnation, as coming unworthily to the holy Sacrament: it were endlesse to write  
unto

unto you, ( it deserves some mans labour in particular ) to acquaint you, and the Kingdome, with the *Blasphemies*, *Prophaneities*, and *Absurdities*, which he and his *Brethren in Evil*, vent every day in their *Extemporary Prayers* and *Sermons*.

Yet were a'l this *Treason* set out mix'd with *wis*, or did they preach *Rebellion* aduantage'd by the alluring helps of *art* and *Eluquence*, it might perswade some amongst us not to turne *Reculants* from their *Assemblies*: but they are the *deyest*, and the *dullest* beasts that ever peepd over a *pulpit*: while these remaine in the *City*, *Rotherham* the *Lecturer*, never needs feare to be heard in his deprecation, that we might never see such a famine here in *London*, as was once in *Samaria*, where an *Asses head* was sold for *four score pieces of Silver*, Thanks to him and the rest, wee have great plenty here, and while we have so many, there is no feare that they will ever rise to so high a price.

But when people are disposed unto a *Rebellion*, small helps will serve their Turne, a *Rams-Horne* is as good as *Shebabs Trumpet*: yet they have one art (and I may not forget it, because it takes much with the People) and it is this, you shall have one, and the same argument possesse most of our *Pulpits*, on the same day, the same matter, is the Subject, either of their rayling *invectives*, or *Rebellious Exhortations*. The undiscerning multitude, not piercing into this *Imposture*, fondly are perswaded, that this is no lesse then the *inspiration* of the *Holy Ghost*, when God knowes, this is no more, then an *Intimation* given from the *Heads* of the *Faction*, to *Calamy*, and the *Iunto* that meet at his house, from whom their *Emissaries* receive directions, what concernes the present opportunity, and is necessary to be preached unto the people.

By these and the like Arts, 'tis a wonder to see, what Forces have been raised, what summes have beene advanced, and poured out, to further this *Rebellion*; It is the Opinion of very wise men amongst us here, that have observed the severall helps, which the *City of London* hath contributed to this present unnaturall Warre, that they have supplied the *Treasury* of the *Rebells*, with no lesse, then *Three Millions* of money, and their *Army* with *three score Thousand men*, first raising, then recrewing their mangled, beaten *Regiments*, at so great *Expence* both of

*Treasure and Blood hath this proud withbankfull City loon, so distroned the King, and ruine the Kingdom.*

And that they might not want supplies of men, to keepe this Rebellion on Foot, they have cancelled, or dispensed with all the *Obligations and Tyes of Religion, Nature and Lawes*; They have given the *Some* power not only *without*, but *contrary* to the *parents* commands to Lift himselfe, and take entertainment in their *Army*, the same liberty they have given to *Apprentises*, and *Servants*, to take *Armes*, not only *without*, but *contrary* to the command of their *Masters and Mistresses*. How many poore *Parents*, how many poore *Trades-men*, nay, how many poor *Widowes*, and their distressed *Orphans*, be here in this *City*, that had no other *Subsistence* but what was hardly earned, by their *Children*, or *Apprentises* industry and labour, are now all like to starve, or are necessitated to fly to the *Almes* of the *Parish* (though the *poores* stock it selfe be invaded and spent in this *Warre*) while those that fed them are left in this unnaturall Rebellion? Nay how many disconsolate *parents* have you in the *Country*, that sent their *Children* hither to this *City*, and gave great summes with them, to bind them *Apprentises* to *Trades, & Manufactures*, hoping that hereafter they might live like men, nay, perhaps some of their *Mothers* out of an overweaning opinion, might fancy to themselves, hopes, that they might live to see their sonnes *Lord Majors of London*, (and why not?) that now sit mourning, and wringing their hands, and curse the day not onely in which they sent them hither, but in which they were borne, not because they have lost a *Legge* or an *Arme*, or returned maimed, to that all they can hope for is to have entertainment in an *Hospitall*, and that no longer neither, then till the *Kings* maimed *Souldiers* shall come, and tell them that that *Charity* was never provided for men disabled fighting against their *King*, but because they have lost their *lives*, and not onely their *lives*, but their *precious souls* too, dying in a grievous sinne, in the very act of Rebellion: methinks you in the *Country*, (if there be any bowels of compassion yearning over the fruit of your bodies; if there be any *sense* of that eternall condition that doth attend them after this life, if there be any hope of the *joyes* of *Heaven*, or feare of the *Torments* of *Hell*) should be very sensible of this.

[ And



And though God hath manifestly fought *against* them, for the King, giving him victory in many Battailles, when all humane helpees, and advantages were on the the Rebels side, though God hath miraculously, and beyond the hope of man restored unto Him, the *hearts* of the people, (which the heads of this Rebellion, by slanders had stolne from Him:) though from small, and contemptible beginnings in the eyes of His enemies (few or none standing for Him but God, and the justice of His Cause) God hath prospered Him into many mighty Armies, which render him formidable to the proudest, and stoutest of the Rebels; though every Victory hath beene seconded by a tender of peace, and with an overture of pacification, so that as himself speakes in that Declaration Published July, 30. 1643. He could not probably fall under the Scandalous Imputation which hath usually attended His Messages of peace, that they proceed from the weaknesse of His Power not love of His People. Lastly, though like an indulgent Father of Rebellious Children, He hath courted this City, and Wooed it, by many pardons, many and often repeated Acts of Grace and Favour to recall us to our former Loyalty, (if ever we were Loyall) yet, inconsiderate, unthankfull wretches as we are, we overlooke, or sleight all these invitations; for in stead of returning, we have added this, as the complement of our other Rebellions, that (whether more unthankfully or undutifully I cannot tell) we have cast dirt in our Sovereignes face, and slandered the footsteps of Gods Anointed, as if he were guilty of all those Miseries, which at this time threaten the subversion of this Nation: we will no longer wrong our King secretly, through the sides of His evill Counsellors, or Cavaliers, but chrage him directly, and *pointe blanke*, as in that most seditious Declaration, or what ever you will call it, presented by Sir David Watkins, and that broken Citizen, our at elbowes, called Satten Shute, to the Common-Councell, and by them to the remainder of the Lower House, if it be not breach of priviledge to call it so.

How willing have we obeyed every Commandement, except God, and the Kings? How forward have we beene, to imploy the large Revenues of our severall Companies, and Brotherhoods, (as heretofore to excesse, and gluttony, so now) to support this, Rebellion? how ready, even beyond our Abilities, have we bin

to submit to every *Tax*, and *illegal Imposition*; even to the bondage, and slavery of *Exeise*, by which we are not so much *Proprietaries* of our owne, as *Stewards*, or *Cashiers* to the heads of the Rebellion: and all this to noother end but to keepe up the Rebellion: wee have not only protected, & supported the Kings *Mortal Enemies*, but as much as in us lay, have persecuted all His *Friends*, or, if our suspected to stand well-affected to Him, and the Justice of his cause, not sparing the effusion of *Innocent blood*, as that of M. *Tomkins*, and M. *Chaloner*, which like the blood of *Abel*, calls loud to Heaven for vengeance, on this bloody City, and Questionlesse will in time be heard; For not Content to buy these mens bloods with great summes of monies which could not be advanced but on this Condition, that M. *Tomkins*; and M. *Chaloner*, be delivered up to their pleasure, and murdered for a strange *Conspiracy* called *Obedience* to the King: but being dead, in an unheard of barbarousnesse they presse into the houses, where their dead bodies lay, before their Funeralls, and thinking they could never be *sure* enough, of so great a *guilt*, they will not beleve that they are dead, unlesse they force the houses to see the bodies of them whom themselves had murdered; Insomuch, that to avoyd further violence and rage of the Citizens, they were faine to set open the doores where their bodies lay, and expose them to the view of all, that so they might glut themselves with beholding that sad spectacle which themselves had made.

*That* the Kings Gracious offers of Peace have beene slighted, and rejected, with scorn, and Contempt, and His Messengers that brought them, (contrary to the Law of Armes, and Nations) Imprisoned; *That* those miserable distractions, which have rent, and torne this flourishing Kingdome, are so farre from being closed, that they are rather made wider; *That* the sword of Warre, so long devouring, is not yet sheathed, except in one anothers bowells, *That* this Kingdome is still made, the Scene of Murthers, Rapines, Oppression, and Punderings, and whereon all the horrid acts of rage, and Injustice are every day acted, and the Nation put almost out of hope, ever to enjoy her former Peace, and plenty, is *our* fault and *ours* wholly: Had not the heads of this Rebellion beene animated by this City, and Incouraged by  
promises

promises of more supplies of men, and *Moles*, They had long before this layd downe their Armes, and come with halts about their necks, and cast themselves at the Kings feet, submissively begging those Pardons, which they have presumptuously rejected: Time was, when the *two Houses* gave a Law to the *City*, now it is come to that passe, that the *City* prescribes to the *Reliques* of the two Houses; They must not Conclude of *Warre* or *Peace*, without consulting the *City*; if they doe, they reckon without their Hoste.

Nay, though *Fairfax* be utterly routed in the *North*, and *William*, once surnamed *Conqueror*, be totally defeated in the *West*, yet they can neither be *perswaded*, nor *beaten* into thoughts of Peace: on the 20 *July* last, no longer agoe, many Thou'ands (as the printed Paper tells you) preferred a Petition to the House of Commons, presented by *M. Norbury* of the Curfitors office, and *John Hat* an Atturney of *Guild-Hall*, both pernicious men: which as it evidently shewes their Obstinate averfion from Peace, so it is the most desperate divellish slander, that ever yet durst looke the World in the Face; for first they tell the House of Commons, and in them, the World, *That the King without any touch of Conscience, and in defiance of God, hath raised an Army of Papists, Out-lawes, and Traitors, for the Robbing, Burning, Murdering, and destroying of His Religious, Honest, and well meaning People*, And then knowing not onely their Interest in, but their power over the House of Commons, they doe not so much *Petition*, as *Command* them to accept of their assistance, for the raising a new Army, and in expresse Termes prescribe unto them, and limit them to a *Committee* of their owne nomination, for the seizing and receiving of such Summes; as the *willing* shall thinke fit to offer, or they shall thinke fit to extort from the *unwilling* for this service: And that you may Judge of the whole Bunch, by some, they name *Parvington* the pretended Lord Major, *Sirado*, one of the five Members, *Harry Martin* Plundermaster-Generall, and *Dennis Bond* Burgesse of *Dorchester*; and *Parvinsch Whites* owne disciple, a man of a double Capacity to be a Rebell, and finding themselves more alone in these undertakings then they did imagine, like desperate Traitors, they call on the whole Kingdome, as one man according to the

E

intent

intent of the late **Covenant**, to joyne with them in this Rebellion. And having thus taken a course to raise new forces, on *Saturday* the 29 of *July*, at a *Common Hall*, they voted Sir *William Waller*, *Generall* of their new intended Army, whom to indeare the more, they interest him in the Governement of the *City*, hoping that being as mad as his Lady, he will hold up the Rebellion, as long as he can, and then be one of the last to runne away; I meane not from *Battell*, for in that hee shewed himselfe as forward as the foremost, but from *Iustice*, and the due reward of his disloyalty. By all which it is most evident, that this *Languishing Rebellion* had before this day gasp'd its last, and given up the Ghost, had not this *Rebellious City* by its *wealth*, and *Multitudes*, fomented it, and given it life.

If therefore Posterity shall aske, who broke downe the bounds, to those streames of blood, that have stained this earth; if they aske, who made Liberty captive, Truth criminall, Rapine just, Tyranny and Oppression Lawfull: who blanch'd Rebellion, with the specious pretence of defence of Lawes, and Liberties, Warre with the desire of an established Peace, Sacriledge and Prophanation, with the shew of Zeale, and Reformation; Lastly, if they aske who would have pulled the crown from the *Kings* head, taken the governement off the hinges, dissolved Monarchy, enslaved the *Lawes*, and ruined their Countrey; say, 'Twas the proud, *unthankfull*, *Schismaticall*, *Rebellious*, *Bloody City* of *London*, so that what they wanted of devouring this Kingdome by cheating and contending, they meane to finish by the Sword.

That therefore these dangerous *fluxions*, and continuall; not small *distillations*, but *floods* of Men, Money, Ammunition, and Armes descending from the *Head City*, and *Metropolis* of the Kingdome, may not for ever dissolve the nerves, and *luxate* the Sinewes of this admirably composed Government: it will highly concerne this Nation to looke about them, to undeceive themselves, and to consult their owne peace and safety, by joyning with their Gracious Sovereigne, in *chastizing* these rebellious Insolencies, & reducing this *Stubborne City* either to Obedience or *Apostasy*.

Yet that the World may not thinke, that this inundation of wickednesse wherein the *Devils* of *Rebellion* rage in the *Chil-*

*children of disobedience*, hath involved all of us in the same disloyalty, let not (*good Brother*) the name *Rusticus* neither deterre you, (as if it were a *Solecisme*) to tell the *Murthers*, *Robberies*, *Plunderings*, and other *Ourages*, committed in the *City*, nor deprive us (a handfull of faithfull Subjects in comparison of the Rebels, the *Parisians*, *Brownists*, and *Anabaptists*) of so great an Opportunity, to justifie our *Innocence*. Let the *Country* know, that we have been at the charges, to undoe, not onely them, but our selves too, the *Collesse* which we have built, is fallen on the *builders*, the *Fire* which we have kindled, devoures the *bellows*, which first *blowed* it up; some of us repent of our fond *credulity* to be deceived, and fooled by the empty name of a *Parliament*, God grant it be not too late; yet how ever, let *Posterity* know this too, that the *King* hath his *Martyrs* in *London*, all are not in the *Country*; And to make this good, secretly (as much as the close obstructions of the wayes of conveyance will permit) you shall not faile of Intelligence from

*London, Aug. 5.*

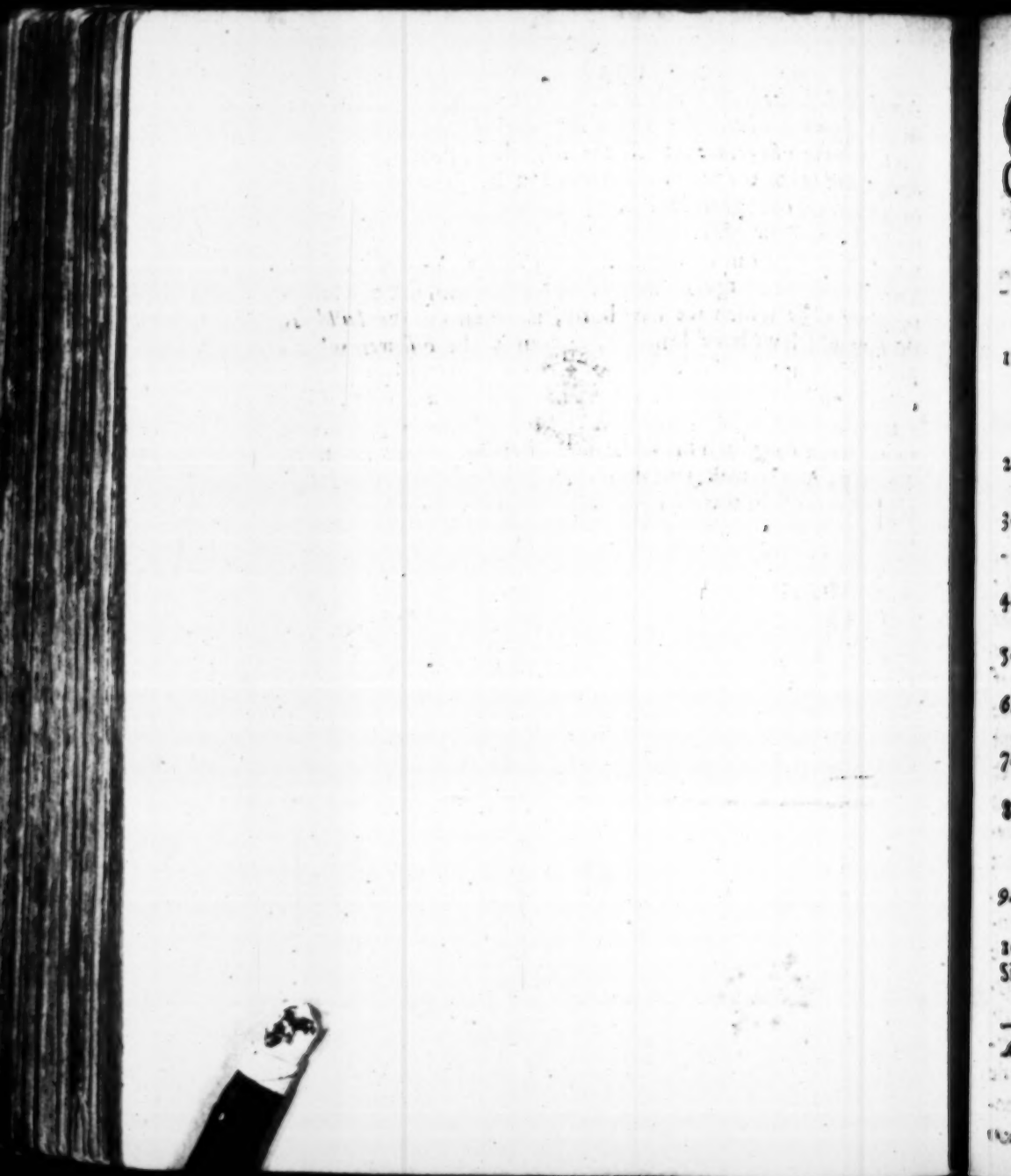
1643.

*Your affectionate Brother*

MERCURIUS CIVICUS.

---





## CONTIN VATION

Of certain Speciall and Remarkable passages

informed to the PARLIAMENT, and otherwise from

divers parts of this Kingdome. from Thursday the 17. of

August, till Fryday the 25. of August 1643.

*Containing these Particulars, viz.*

1. An Exact and punctuall relation of the latestt news from *Gloucester* certified the Parliament on Saturday, and Wednesday lastt, making a full discovery of the two great fights on Tuesday, Saturday, and Sunday following, and the certaine number slain on both sides.
2. Some speciall news from *Oxford* touching the siege at *Gloucester*, and other matters of note.
3. The whole proceedings related betwixt the Parliament, and Earle of *Essex* touching his advance to *Gloucester*, and of his Excellencies Muster on Tuesday lastt upon *Bunslow Heath*.
4. A punctuall and Exact relation of the present state of Sir *William Wallers* forces and their preparation for a speedy advance.
5. A true and Exact relation of some late proceedings of the Parliament touching the adjournment of both Houses for a certaine time.
6. A new Order of Parliament touching the departure of any of their Members in the Countreyes without leave.
7. Excellent newes from *Yorkeshire*, and of the Earle of *Newcastles* summing *Nottingham* Castle, and since that his retreatt backe towards *York*.
8. A true and Exact relation of some late letters to the Parliament from their Commissioners in *Scotland* of the proceedings of the Treaty with the Scots for the sending of forces into this Kingdome.
9. A true relation of some late letters from *Dublin* in *Ireland* informing divers matters of consequence from thence.
10. Lasttly, more letters on Thursday from the Governour of *Gloucester* to Sir *William Waller* informing the present state of things there, but more chiefly of a great defeat given to the Kings forces on Sunday lastt.

Aug 25. Printed for F. Coler and F. Leach, at the Old-Baile.

A CONTIN VATION OF  
 Certaine Speciall and Remarkable  
 passages informed to the Parliament,  
 and otherwise from divers parts of  
 this Kingdome.

From Thursday the 17. of August till Friday the  
 25. of August 1643.



Some occasions more then ordinary, hath caused an inter-  
 mission of the Diurnall these two weekes past, for which I  
 must Apologize my Excuse, and promise a more constant  
 and elaborate continuation for the time comming. In the  
 meane while I shall briefly informe you of some passages of  
 note, the part of the last and this weekes Occurrences, And first of all the  
 brave exploits of Colonell Mussy in defending of Gloucester against  
 the great body of the Kings army at this time challenge their  
 chiefest thoughts, and of which the Parliament on Satterday last  
 received a punctuall accompt by two of the inhabitants of Glou-  
 cester that came with letters from the Governour, signifying that  
 his Majesty had drawne most of his forces from Oxford, Bristol,  
 Worcester, Ragland Castle, and what other supplies from the coun-  
 tryes could either by intreaty, or compulsion, be procured to the  
 siege against Gloucester, and on Friday, Satterday, and Sunday the 17.  
 of August made sundry violent assaults, but were as bravely re-  
 pelled through the Prudent courage and valour of the Gover-  
 nour, with the losse of many hundreds of their men, which made  
 the Ladies and Court Parasites at Oxford make such heavy lamen-  
 tation

33  
tation, crying and bewailing the losse of their deere lovers and Sweet hearts, that the whole Court for two or three dayes together was turned into so dolorous and disconsolate a Passion, that the news of gaining of *Brissoll*, was scarce so much joy to them, as the repulse at *Gloucester*, hath beene a terrour, nor could the presence of those late runaway Lords any whit alwaie their discontent, but give those Lords cause rather in a sad Dilemma to wisse themselves back with the Parl. but this by the way: the loss on Sunday struck such a terrour to the Cavaliers (where doubtlesse many of their worthies were slain though their names not yet certified) that they drew their forces somewhat back, and lay very quiet all Munday.

Yet loath to leave *Gloucester* with so shamefull a repulse they resolved once more to trye the fortune of the Dice, for *Exilis Belli incertus*, and (as we say) either winn the Horse or loose the Saddle, and on Tuesday morning they entered upon a more desperate designe to storme the Towne by falling upon it in all parts at once which (as tis informed) they attempted with wonderous great resolution, and with the losse of many hundred men, entered part of the Suburbs, where they had no passage but upon the very mouth of the Cannon, and the Governour so thundred with his great and smale shot about their Eares, that he soone beat them from all their advantages, and kept them play till they were weary of it, securing the Towne and Outworkes in dispiight of them, and forced them to a shamefull Retreat. The King in that dayes service (it is credibly beleeved) loosing near upon 1500. of his men, 1 g eat number wounded & others that conveniently could, made escape and ran away, amongst the rest slaine at that time, these are for certaine enformed to be the cheife, viz. the L. *Herbert* Governour of *Ragland Castle* a great Papist Sir *William Russell* Governour of *Warcester* a Rank Papist, Master *Russell* Brother to the Earle of *Bedford* Colonell *Edwards* and divers other Captaines and Gentlemen whose names are not so well knowne to me.

Lastly it is certified that since this hot service on Tuesday, the Cavaliers are so well cooled in their storming assaults, that they

new

now being to intrench themselves before *Gloucester*, (as well as that watry lowe ground will give way) and to take more leasure in the gaining of it then at first they intended.

That on Wednesday his Majesty went back to *Oxford* with Prince *Rupert*, in company to fetch more forces if they could be procured, and tis reported, that the Friday following, Prince *Rupert* returned towards *Gloucester*, with some fresh supplies but left *Oxford* very naked, from Tuesday till the Satterday following, the enemy lay very quiet before *Gloucester*, but on Saterdag and Sunday they made severall assaults, and were beaten off with much losse and forced from their ground, leaving three peeces of Ordnance behind them and the Cannoneers slaine, one of which peeces the defendants brought into the Towne, but the other two peeces were left in the Field, neither partie daring to attempt the fetching back thereof what persones of quality were slaine, I shall omit to nominate (though I heare divers named) till I heare the certainty confirmed by a further relation.

But (tis said) Colonell Massy by his owne letter datted on Tuesday, intimates to the Parliament that he doubteth not for 14. dayes longer to keepe *Gloucester* Maugre the fury of the enemy and all their plots, if no supplies come unto him, which hee desires for more security may be hastened.

And the Parliament upon serious consultation of the affaires at *Gloucester*, sent twice the last weeke to the Earle of *Essex* to treat with him about the relieving of *Gloucester* on Saterdag morning last there went from both Houses the Earl of *Rutland*, Lord *Gray of Marke*, Lord *Say*, Lord *Feilding*, Sir *John Clotworthy*, Mr. *Pym*, Mr. *Salicester*, Mr. *Recorder of London*, and foure others of the Commons House to *Kingston* to his Excellency to treat with him touching that businesse, to whome his Excellency declared the true state of his Army viz. that hee had 7000 foute about 2000. whereof were sick, ill, and unfitt for present service, and not full 3000 horse, but if the Parliament would reciewt his Army in that manner as they formerly promised, viz 4000 foot and 2000 horse, he,



he would be ready to attend the whole body of the Kings Army upon their removes; and in respect of the present necessity would advance with what forces they thought fit to send him presently to reliefe of *Gloucester*, and either raise the siege or lay his bones there, and to that purpose appointed to Muster his Army on Tuesday next upon *Hounslow Heath*, and to ioyne with such forces as should by that tyme come from *London*, and presently advance.

Which answer of the Lord Generall was made knowne to the Parliament by the Committee that returned the same day, and that night the same Committee met at *Guild Hall* with the Common Counsell of *London*, & acquainted them with the whole business, whereupon it was agreed that there should be 2000 men pressed within the City of *London* and Suburbs to bee sent to his Excellency by Tuesday, and two Regiments of the Trained Bands of *London*, viz.

The red Regiment, and the blew Regiment, and two other Regiments of the Auxilliary forces, and the Regiment of Red Coates were designed by Lot to advance with his Excellency to *Gloucester*, a great part whereof marched away on Wednesday last, and the prest men the day before were sent away by water to his Excellency.

And his Excellency accordingly Mustered his men on Tuesday on *Hounslow Heath*, whereat a great part of the Members of both Houses were present, at which Muster there appeared about 8000 able stout fighting men Horse and foot, besides the prest men that were not then come to him, and they marched away with much cherefulness towards *Gloucester*, the City Regiments as you have heard, being also upon their march to ioyne with his Excellency for better expedition whereof and that all men within the City might the better apply themselves to the furtherance of so necessary a work Proclamation was made throughout *London* by the sound of a Trumpet, that all men should presently shut up their Shops, and continue them so shut up until *Gloucester* bee relieved, and

And that the Officers of the Regiments which by Lot are appointed to goe in this expedition doe returne the names of all such persons of the said Regiments as shall neither march with the rest, nor appoint other sufficient men to goe in their roome, that such course may be taken with them, as this testimony of their disaffection Iustly deserveth: And doubtlesse upon the expedition of these forces with the Lord Generall, Sir *William Waller* will not be many dayes behind of his advance, his forces being in a great preparednesse, and on Munday last hee received his Commission from the Lord Generall, wherby he hath absolute power to march into any part of the Kingdome for the ease of his Majesties good Subjects against the cruell oppression of the Kings Army as hee shall see cause, &c.

The houses of Parliament also, that in their respective persons they might the better aply themselves to the publike safety have lately had serious consultation about adjournment of the Parliament for some short time, onely appointing a Committee of both Houses to sit daily, during that adjournment, and the rest of the Members to go downe into the respective Counties, for which they serve and stirr up the People to a Generall rising with the Parliament and City of *London* to defend their Religion, Lawes, and liberties against the Popish Army and other forces that endeavour their subversion and Ruine of the Kingdome, And there was a Committee of the Commons House appointed to draw up instructions, what businesses should be insisted upon by the Committee in case both Houses do adjourne, as a foresaid.

And on Saturday last the Commons taking notice that some of their Members were too forwards to absent themselves from the service of the Parl. & take their liberties abroad in the country, without leave made an expresse order, that none of their Members now attending the House should absent themselves from the service of the Parliament, or depart out of the City without leave from the House.

From *Noringham* the Parliament have received certaine intelligence, that about the beginning of the last Weeke the Earle of

*Newcastle* with a great force came against that Towne and Castle and summoned a surrender of the same, up unto him for his Majesties use, but the defendants returned answer, that they knew better how to preserve that Towne and Castle for his Majesties use, then to surrender it to a Popish Army, the Head whereof was an Atheist, so much they slighted his summons and is further certified that after he had layne before the Castle full foure dayes after the said summons, receiving notice (as it appeares) from *Yorkshire* that the Lord *Fairfax* forces have againe taken the Field and were about to summon divers Townes now in the Enemies hands, he againe retreated back towards *Yorke* without making the least attempt against *Noringham* Castle.

From *Scotland* about the end of the last weeke the Parliament received Letters from their Commissioners, giving them to understand of their safe arrivall at *Edinburgh*, and extraordinary welcome by the *Scotch* Lords, and that they hoped in short time to expedite the businesse they came about, which letters bore date the very next day after the Commissioners comming to *Edinburgh*. But in respect they gave no accompt of any forces already levied in *Scotland* how the Malignants in *London* reioyced, and boasted up and downe that the *Scotts* would not stirre at all, and that all our hopes of their comming into this Kingdome were but as strange *Chymical* Castles in the aire, &c. But observe now how soone their vaine boastings is come to nothing, whose tongues indeed have a long time beene the forge of daily lies, for on Tuesday last the Parliament received more letters from their Commissioners their, giving them accompt of their Treaty with the *Stets* of *Scotland* for the sending of forces hither, & that the States were of so willing a compliance in that businesse, and matters in that forwardnesse that they doubted not within a weekes time after the date of these letters (which is above ten dayes since) fully to end the worke.

From *Ireland* the news at present is but badly reported, there is a faction at *Dublin* (it is said) prevayles so farre on behalfe of the Rebels, that the true hearted Protestant Councillors are much dis-

discourtenanced, and for free declaring of their consciences committed to prison, and the great favourers of the Catholique cause these rulers urging the Cessation with the Rebels againe very st. fly and tis much feared the Ordering of affaires there will too much evidence to the world what the great designe is both upon that and this Kingdome, and from what authority all our miseries have beene but derived, but for my owne part till matters are more publicly voted, I shall omit to write further of the affaires there.

For better confirmation of the businesse at *Glocester* Sir *William Waller* on Thursday last received letters from Colonell *Mossy* the Governour dated on Munday, informing the true State of things there, but more chiefly of the defeate given to the Kings forces on Sunday to this effect, That the Governour after some skirmishing on Saterdag, perceiving that the enemy began to be more eager in their assaults against the Towne on Sunday, issued out with a party of Horse, and fell upon a wing of the enemies Horse, and after a slight skirmish with small losse on either side, the Governours forces being much to few in number for the other, and the better to effect his intended Stratagem made a disorderly retreat into the Towne, were pursued by the enemy, the Governours men (as hee had before taught them there lesion) crying out we are all lost, the Townes lost, &c. which made the Cavaliers with such eagernes follow the pursuit, that about eight Troopes of them on a sudden hurried into the Towne, but when the Governour perceived there were as many entred the Towne as he could well deale withall, he caused the Gates to be shut, and Percullisse let downe, discharged some peeces of Cannon that he had placed in Ambuscado charged with Mulquet bullets, and so well seconded them with his Musquetteeres, that he made a bloody execution amongst them, and killed and tooke prisoners the whole eight Troopes not one escaped, there were divers persons of quality (it is said) amongst them slaine whereof one is said to be the Lord *Grandison* & I heare divers others of note named, but I shall forbear to recite them least they live againe as others whom formerly were supposed to be killed.

*This is Licenced and entred into the Register Booke of the Company of Stationers according to Order.*

34

ANOTHER  
EXTRACT OF SEVERALL LETTERS  
FROM  
IRELAND,

Intimating their present state.

WHEREIN IT APPEARES,

That if supplies of Viſuals and Ammunition be preſently ſent, there is great hopes of ſuddenly reducing thoſe Rebels.

With the Reaſons given at *DUBLIN* againſt a Ceſſation of Armes with the Rebels, and the Oath lately made by the Rebels at their ſupream Coun'ell at *Kilkenny*, for the maintenance of the Romiſh Religion with their lives and eſtates.

*Wherein further appears*

The falſhood of a ſcandalous Pamphlet lately ſet forth, Intituled, *An Apologie made by an Engliſh Officer of Quality, for having the tenth Wars: When no ſuch Officer appears.*

And that no ſuch thing was there ever intended as the ſeizing of the Parliaments Supplies hath been ſatelly divulged.

Wherein appears, how free the Marqueſſe of *Ormond* is from thoſe calumnies unworthily caſt upon him by that Pamphleteere.

WITH

Severall other Letters from *Dublin*, ſhewing the Popes Nuntio to be with the Rebels now at *Kilkenny*, and is ſaid to have brought them 80000<sup>lb</sup>. to ſupply the ſaid Rebels.

With a Letter lately ſent from the Lord *Inſiquin* out of *Munſter* informing the ſtate of that province at this time, and that if they ſhall be ſupplied from hence, there is good hopes of a ſpeedy ſettling of that Province.

As alſo, An exact Relation of the good ſervice of Sir *Frederick Hamilton* ſince the Rebellion begun.

This is Liſenſed and Entred according to Order.

*August 26<sup>th</sup>*

*London*, Printed by *George Miller* dwelling in the *Black-Friers*, 1643.



34  
ANOTHER  
TRACT OF SEVERAL LETTERS

TO THE  
HONORABLE  
THE LORDS OF THE  
COUNCIL OF THE  
CITY OF LONDON  
AND  
THE COMMONS OF THE  
SAYE CITY OF LONDON  
IN PARLIAMENT ASSEMBLED  
IN ANSWER TO A  
RESOLUTION PASSED  
IN THE HOUSE OF COMMONS  
THE 14TH OF APRIL 1701  
RELATIVE TO THE  
PETITION OF THE  
MAYOR AND ALDERMEN  
OF THE CITY OF LONDON  
IN RELATION TO THE  
RIGHTS AND PRIVILEGES  
OF THE SAID CITY



PRINTED BY  
J. STURGEON  
AT THE SIGN OF THE  
CROWN IN ST. MARTIN'S  
LANE

1701



E



ye  
Ba  
qu  
Si  
Co  
in  
tic  
pl  
ap  
th  
ch  
ta  
  
or  
C  
w  
re  
fi  
n  
I

A N O T H E R  
EXTRACT of more LETTERS  
sent out of *IRELAND*, Informing  
the condition of the Kingdome as it now stands.

SIR,



thence my last to you, that is to say, the 23. of June, the Marquesse went to meete the Rebels at *Castlemarten* neare *Killcullen* Bridge, where for the Rebels, there met for the Province of *Leinster*, the Lord Viscount *Gormonston*, and Sir *Robert Talbot*; for the Province of *Munster*, the Lord Viscount *Muskerry*, and *John Welsh* the Lawyer; for the Province of *Connaught*, Sir *Lucas Dillon*, and *Jeffery Browne* the Lawyer; for the Province of *Ulster*, *Tirlogh o Neale*, Sir *Philem o Neales* Brother, and *Ever*, M. *Gennys* of *Killwarlin*. There went with the Marquesse, the Earle of *Roscommon*, the Lord *Moore*, Sir *Francis Willoughby*, Sir *Thomas Lucas*, Sir *James Ware*, Serjeant *Enspace*, Colonell *Muncke*, Colonell *Gibson*, and many others; Our Commissioners and others were in severall Chambers, and as I heare, Treated by writing, onely sometimes Messengers went betweene them: The Lord *Taafe* was at that place and very busie, they continued there till the first of *July*, and appointed the 18. of *July* to meete againe, but being better advized upon the unreasonableness of the Rebels demands, they met no more but brake off the Treaty, as 'tis reported, and are now preparing with all speed to take the Field.

In my last Letters that miscarried at Sea, I wrote you word of a great overthrow given by Sir *Robert Stewart*, Sir *William Stewart* and Sir *William Coles* Forces, against *Owen Roe o Neale* the Rebels Generall of *Ulster*, where after a long fight they beate them, and killed 1000. of them as is reported, tooke a very great prey of Cattell, above 6000. Cowes as it is said, many prisoners of note taken, and *Owen Roe o Neale* escaped very narrowly, so that in *Ulster* appears no Army of the Rebels, and those *Irisb* which are left there, are eating up of one another through famine.

About a weeke before the Treaty for a Cessation, here was a report that *Preston* the Rebels Generall with some Souldiers was come into *Meath*; about *Tetrohan* and those parts, but with how many, and for what cause, we had not so good intelligence as to know yet, Colonell *Muncke* then ready to goe for *England*, was intreated by the State to goe out towards him with a party of men, who yeelded to it; he should have had 1500 Foote at the first, and 3 or 400 Horse, but they were so scattered here and there, up and downe in the Countrey, that he had but 1200 Foote, and about 150 Horses, he relieved Castle *Jordan*, and some other parts thereabouts, and comming homeward by *Clancarry*, about 15 miles from *Dublin*, *Preston* meets him with about 6000 Foote, and 600 Horse, some that were present there and had seene all the Armies on both sides since the Rebellion first began, doe affirme, that this of *Prestons* was the greatest; both sides did strive for a straight passige which *Muncke* was of necessity to goe over, for which they disputed the matter a good while, but Colonell *Muncke* gained it; then they encountred and fought a good while, till *Preston* and his Army very stoutly ranne away, having lost about 150 of his men killed in the place, as 'twas reported to me, and tooke many of their Armes, and some Colours; and of our side not one man killed, onely one man shot but not dead; thus God yet preserves us miraculously, and why we should distrust him who deales thus for us I know not.

It is thought by some, that *Preston* had a designe upon *Dublin*, comming so neare it with such an Army, and having no Enemy, or other place to looke for thereabouts.

*Dublin*, July 5, 1643.

---

*Written againe from thence by the same hand, being a man of credit and worth in the City of Dublin.*

I Wrote in my last how Colonell *Muncke* had beaten *Preston*, but not being able to pursue him, he having so small a party and wanting meanes, he marched into the Counties of *Wickloe* and *Wexford*, and as he returned burnt most of the Towne of *Arckloe*, but the Castle there was too well fortified for him to deale with, he returned home to *Dublin* the last Munday, and brought with him about 500 Cowes, which he gave amongst the Souldiers: In the meane time *Preston* tooke in *Crohan* and *Edenderry* in the Kings County, and is now marching againe towards Castle *Jordan* to besiege it.

Though

Though Captaine *Bartlet* came to us the last weeke with that provision which the Parliament sent us, yet our Commanders say, they cannot stirre without 5 or 6000<sup>lb</sup>. to provide for their traine of Artillery, for Carriages, for Shooes for the Souldiers, and such like necessaries, which money when and how it will be gotten here none knowes, the Protestants especially are so drained, that they have little or nothing left, and the Papists will lend nothing.

The Rebels agree well together, so doe not we, and if we spend time about private differences one with another, and seeking to charge and undermine our selves, what must become of the publike.

It is still confirmed, that there are no Rebels to be seene in *Ulster*, and that the *Irish* that are there, are so miserable that they eat their children, and one another, a just judgement of God upon them for their cruelties.

*Owen Roe o Neale* their Generall in that Province, with all his men are said to be gone into *Connaught*, and that the *Scottish* Army is gone after him, but I heare of no message sent by them to our State here of it, so that what they will doe we know not, onely of this I am sure, if things were now well followed by them, as they might be, and that we had but some money for the Officers, Victuall and Ammunition, and that well ordered and governed as it should be, we might by Gods help breake the heart of this Warre in a very short time.

*Bartlet* came in a blessed time, for in that time upon a strickt search in *Dublin*, there was but 400 Bartels of Corne found in the whole City for all the Army and Inhabitants here, multitudes of the poore *English* come still from *Ulster* and other parts, as they get from the Rebels, which fills us with famine.

*Dublin*, 11 July, 1643.

---

*From the same hand;*

THAT provision of Victualls brought by *Bartlet* was a meemes of keeping us from a desolation which then was falling upon us; but that is almost spent, and we shall suddenly fall into the same case againe, if we be not supplied; and if we shall be supplied in time with necessaries, there is no doubt but by Gods blessing we may have a quick end of the Warre for the maine of it; for *Ulster* is already upon the matter conquered, and no Rebels in a body to be now seene there. The *Pale* is so wasted, that scarce a Cow, Garron or Man is to be seene in many miles together.

and the eares of the Corne which is now growing in many of these parts, is so generally cut off now before it is ripe, by the hunger-starved Rebels, that very little of it will be reaped, so that if we could have reasonable supplies for the present, that we might be able to take away this harvest from them, and destroy that which we could not take, a great part of this Warre would be ended this Winter, which otherwise may long trouble us.

You must know, that Souldiers which serve in a Countrey onely for their pay, and have no interest in it, will not care so much what becomes of it, and will exclaime more for the want of their pay if it be wanting, then those who are interested in it, and have hopes to recover their antient possessions and rights, of which sort I would we had more here.

Do not forget what I now write, that the sending of help to us now in time, will be more, then ten times so much when it is late, and when matters are brought to that exigent, that we shll be like to those in a deepe consumption which cannot be recovered.

*Brent* the Popish Lawyer is suddenly expected here from *Oxford*; and at his coming some alterations and changes amongst us here to follow.

*Preslon* we heare is about *Tecrohan*, threatens the Garison at *Trim*, our Army is gone that way, my Lord Marquesse in person is to follow presently, God blesse and prosper him.

You will sell good bargaines of our Cities and Townes here certainly when they shall be gained. I doe not thinke it will be two yeares purchase: and I thinke if things may goe on roundly, before this summer is spent, the worke would easily by Gods help be done, but if you loose time a little longer, instead of getting any thing, both you and we shall be sure to loose all, two Moneths more of such times as we have had the two last Moneths past, will doe much to bring us into a heecticke Fever, which Phisitions say is irrecoverable.

*Dublin, July 19, 1643.*

*From another good hand from Dublin.*

**W**E know not how to live, there are now here such an infinite number of poore people come to this Towne, which have bin sent by the Rogues from the Garrisons which they have taken from us, that it would grieve the heart of any Christian to see them lye in the streetes starving, and no means to help them. Our Army is now going forth, God prosper them. Our Souldiers are in great distresse, not having either Meate, Money, Cloathes or Shoos to their feet, it is a lamentable thing to see what distresse they are in. The North is cleared, I wish their Forces were with us.

Reasons



## Reasons delivered in Ireland, against the Cessation of Armes there so much pressed by the Rebels, the Treaty now broken off.

1. **W**Hereas a Cessation is treated of, and the only reason thereof, because by that we must seek our subsistence; This must infallibly starve us and the Army, Now there being many hands and active Wits in severall places, who doe often get something by force and so live, then they must take nothing, but must only trust to the dale of the false Rebels who themselves are poore and Wanting.

2. Now our Souldiers grow in martial exercises and action, then they shall grow dull, sick and idle to their destruction, sell their Armes not cared for by their Officers, who doe so ill looke to them now as they lose them and embesle them daily.

3. The English Souldiers will runne away into England, and Irish will be taken in their roomes, all will be Irish in a yeares space, Which is the time of Cessation, especially a peace being expected, and so we shall have no Army English Horse or Foote, whereby we shall be altogether at the Will of the Irish as is desired, or else the English will straggle to their old dwellings, and so be murdered here and there.

4. The Churles shall murder us in every corner, and the prime men not secure in, where shall we have remedy, their being no judge nor party answerable, the Law not current, the Irish faithlesse and really tied to nothing.

5. The Garrisons in severall places have neither Corne nor Castell, they must take none by force, how shall they live? the contribution cannot or will not come in, what remedy? The Rebels will have all the Corne this harvest, we must buy it of them, and are not able for want of money, how then?

6. The Rebell is now in great Want of Corne, Ammunition, &c. this harvest and a whole yeares time, by the Sea will provide them of all things, and so if we shall have men to fight with them (which we may well doubt) they will by this furnish and enable themselves for 2 or 3 Yeares further at least, and so tire us and England, whereas it were our wisdom to lose no time.

7. The Irish will come into Dublin, and very likely surprise us, if not, they will sue us for any thing we owe, if we sue them, there is no Law nor Officers to execute judgements, and if they doe not surprise us or pinch us with suites, they will starve us.

8. Our little Ammunition we have will be spent before winter in ordinary Dutches, we have nothing to acquire more, so that if England helpe us not one wayes or other, this next winter we shall be at the will of the Irish as is desired.

9. Now

9. Now they see our Army and Dublin only stands in the way, these two must by this devise unfailibly be destroyed by what is above said. So no helpe but a new conquest upon most extreame disadvantages if not impossible.

10. The Cessation is for a long time, and able to give scope to all manner of practises wherein they will never sleepe, and we by authority or inherent negligence utterly lull asleepe; The blood of so many innocent English now in the heate of action being almost growne cold, by this devise a whole yeare will be given to wrap it into more oblivion, and so the Irish shall have their Will both in Religion and possessions of our goods and Lands.

11. When our Army by this long idlenesse is made Irish or unserviceable, if it be said we will have new Armies, and not trust the Irish, Then must we fight with raw Souldiers against experienced and better armed men, which will be dangerous, besides the great increase of the charge more then now it would be.

12. Can any man expect that the Rebels whose onely aime is to extirpate the English and Religion, will keepe better faith with us now, when the English are wonderfull few and disabled, then they did when the English were in all parts, the government strong, and the English inhabitants rich and in vigour.

13. The advantage is apparently now on our side, the Irish are every where beaten, they are distressed in Victuals and Ammunition, they have no Forraigne aides, they feare our Armies every where, and undoubtedly by a little subsistence out of England, we are able to consume them, but by this devise all will be turned the other way.

14. If a peace should ensue this prologue, which is certainly expected, then the English are certainly destroyed, for the Irish continuing in their full multitudes and fully armed, will be masters both of government and interest both of King and Subject, the English cannot inhabite here.

15. This Cessation cannot give us Corne till harvest, in the meane time we starve, though they strive to send us in Carrell, which is much doubted they can very hardly doe.

16. The Cessation will provide onely for the Army, and that in a scant measure, not enough to serve halfe the yeare, what shall the poore English robbed subjects doe, they have neither money nor meanes to buy foode, but the English must all be gone, which is the principall labour of the Irish and of those that have promoted this Cessation.

17. If all the Armes of the Irish might have bin delivered up, and the Towns rendered to us, we might perhaps have had a little breathing, but no security, so long as such huge numbers of the Irish remaine, and the English in such paucity and weaknesse.

18. This Cessation will utterly deface our Religion, and set up Popery in the full height.

19. The least saved to them and lost to us, will be of much greater value to them for the subsistence and advantage, then all that they can give us can be to us, besides the lengthening of the Warre for many yeares.

20. Their malice is now more and their power more then at the beginning, can we thinke they will hold longer with us then they see their time.

21. This Cessation leads to a peace, and being as is principally pretended by reason of our extreame necessities and the faile of the Parliament, even to save our lives: Whereas in truth our lives are not worth the dishonour and detriment it will bring to the Crowne and English Nation, and it must worke to base ends, even to give the Irish all the Lands, and for ever keepe out the English, which is the thing mainly affected, and to worke the dissolving of the Act for the Adventurers, and to smother all the cruelties, murders and rapines committed by the Irish.

22. It doth utterly discourage all the English, and makes them forsake the Kingdome all they can which will soone be done.

23. The Rogues of this Rebellion (though not seemingly countenanced by the great ones) being needy and in want, will steale all our Cowes, &c. from our garisons and no remedy.

24. The Cessation hath in pretence an aime at our subsistence, and to be founded only on our necessities, which truly is a dangerous ground of peace, amongst so perfidious a people: but the inward meaning is the preservation and restitution of the Irish, and keeping out the English and English government, neither doth it seeme to be a thing so resolutely commanded by the King, for he hath bin said openly, if we would send 10000<sup>l</sup>. there should be my Cessation, and yet the King should be satisfied, or if we would propound any other way for maintenance, the like should be done.

25. It is a certaine way to lose Ulster, which is now in a manner intirely in our hands, and we in a faire way to Connaugh.

26. Now the Castell which we gaine though they be sold deare here, yet our Souldiers have the money who spend it amongst us, but if the Cessation proceed, then we must buy Corne and Castell from the Rebels who will have all our money.

27. Lastly, Although we are truly in a most miserable case for subsistence, gasping daily for the last breath by famine or our owne enemies Sword, seeming for a time to be left by the Parliament through the intemperate exclamations of a wanting Army, and our Sovereigne Lord the King not able at the present to helpe us, Yet doubtlesse it is lesse dishonourable and shall render us lesse scandalous to posterity to die with our Swords in our hands, yet expelling Gods mercy, then by a craved Cessation and in a certaine destruction, to tie up our hands now helping us a litle, and yeild up our selves and the Kingdome against his Majesty

*and the Crowne of England, into the hands of barbarous Rebels, who thirst only to riot in the blood of innocent English, and the utter abolition of the Protestant Religion.*

*The new Oath made by the supreme Councell of the Rebels of  
IRELAND at Kilkenny.*

**V**Hereas the Romish Catholiques of this Kingdome of Ireland have bin enforced to take Armes, for the necessary defence and preservation as well of the Religion plotted, and by manifold practises endeavoured to be quite suppressed by the Puritan faction, as likewise the lives, estates and liberties, as also for the defence and safeguard of his Majesties regall Powers, just Prerogatives, Honours, Estates and Rights invaded upon, And for that it is requisite that there should be an unanimous consent and reall union between all the Catholiques of this Realme, to maintaine the premises, and strengthen them against the Adversaries; It is thought fit that they and whosoever shall adhere to their parties as a confederate, should for the better assurance of the adhering fidelity and constancy for the publike cause take this ensuing Oath.

**I**A.B. Doe promise, swear and protest before God and his Saints and Angels, that I will beare faith and Allegiance to our Sovereigne Lord Charles, by the grace of God, King of Great-Brittany, France and Ireland, and to his Heires and lawfull Successors. and that I will to my power during my life, defend, uphold and maintaine all his and their just Prerogatives, Estates and Rights, the Power and Priviledge of the Parliament of this Realme, the fundamentall Lawes of Ireland, the free exercise of the Catholique Romish Faith and Religion throughout this Land, and the Lives, just Liberties, Possessions, Estates and Rights of all those that have taken or shall take this Oath, and performe the contents thereof: And that I will obey and raise all the Orders and Decrees made and to be made by the supreme Councell of the confederate Catholiques of this Kingdome concerning the publike cause. And that I will not seek or receive directly or indirectly, any pardon or protection for any act done or to be done touching this generall cause, without the consent of the major part of the said Councell: And that I will not directly or indirectly doe any act or acts that shall prejudice the said Cause, but will to the hazard of my life and estate, assist, protect and maintaine the same. So helpe me God and his holy Gospel.

*Killmore Castle in Ireland, June 23, 1643. A Letter from Sir Robert Stewart Knight and Colonell to the Earle of Eglington.*

Right Honourable, and my very Noble Lord,

Y Our Lordships I received the very same day before Sir *William Stewart* and I, with the rest of the Forces here, tooke our march upon a late expedition to the Counties of *Monaghan* and *Tirone*, for the which and all your Lordships kind expressions unto me, I give your Lordship many hearty thanks, and am your Lordships most humble servant; and for what happened in the same expedition, your Lordship shall have the true Relation of it as followeth; and first when Sir *William Stewarts* Regiment, Colonell *Mervins*, and mine owne, with five Companies out of *Derry* had marched a day or two together, we had intelligence that *Owen Mac Art & Neale* the Rebels great titularie Generall had drawn all the Forces in *Ulster* together, with their whole Cowes, and was upon their march for *Connoght*, of purpose as we were informed to leave his weake people there and all their Cattell, and to returne himselfe with a strong Army to assault us and the rest of the *British* Army in *Ulster*, upon which intelligence we hastned our march to a place where we heard that he was to march through, a place called *Clownys* in the County of *Monnoghan*, being upon the roade way from *Tirone* to *Connaught*, and about some 25 miles distant from *Charlemount*, and through Gods providence it fell out, that upon the 13 of this instant *June*, a Scout of Horse which I sent out (I having the Van that day) discovered the *Irish* Army, upon the which I gave order that our Army in regard of their hard march formerly, should refresh themselves with one houre or two's rest, which was done accordingly, and so we strengthened our Forlorne guard, and so continued our march towards them; whenas we advanced neare unto them, we discovered their Horse drawne up upon a peece of ground of advantage, and from them were commanded out a party of their best Horse very well mounted, which in a daring insulting way came up and charged some of my Troope, which they received very resolutely, and after a whiles dispute they were put to a retreat, in this interim, a party of the Rebels Foote had drawne up into a place where was a narrow stone causey and straight passe, where they thought to keepe up our Horse, but was put from it by our commanded men, and so the passe was cleered, and my Troope being seconded by Sir *William Stewarts* Troope and Sir *William Belfores*, advanced forward upon their Horfes, and our commanded men on both sides gave very good fire upon one another, the way where the rest of our Army marched was very narrow, so that none of them came to doe service,



vice, except only the first division of my Regiment, which I led on my selfe, and before ever the second division came to my service, notwithstanding that there was 11 Colours of the Rebels upon service all the while, the Rebels was routed both Foote and Horse, and our light wings and Cannons did very good service, and many of the chiefeft and best of their Forraigne Officers were either killed in the fields or taken prisoners, for our Horse had the killing of them for 8 or 9 miles together upon all hands, and our Foote for 5 miles or thereabouts, where was done great execution upon the best of their men, *Owen Mac Art o Neale* himselfe very narrowly escaped, for the Captaine of my Troope was in gripes with him, but his Horse stumbled and he was hurt with a shot, and *Owen Mac Art* was releaved by one of his Captaines, One *o Mellane* who is now prisoner with me, severall other prisoners I have, as one Colonell *Brother*, sonne to *Owen Mac Art* and bred a Souldier, borne in *Brussels*, another Lieutenant Colonell who hath bin an Officer abroad this 24 Yeares, called *Shane o Neale*, 3 Captaines, Named *Art o Neale*, *Shane o Neale* and *Patrick o Mullin*, and 3 Gentlemen of quality, Named *William o Clenton*, *Manns o Skeale*, and *Con o Neale*, great store of Armes we had both for Horse and Foote, and I beleieve they carried few with them, for my Regiment had 300 Muskets for their share; besides many Swords, Petronels and Pistolls, besides all that the rest of the Regiments had. That night *Owen Mac Art* himselfe betooke him to a Wood, where was a Friery within 7 or 8 miles to *Charlemount*, where he lodged that night with six only in his company, as I was informed by a party of mine which I sent out the next morning to that same Wood, but before they came they were unfortunately escaped, and my men burnt the Friery and brought away a great prey of Cowes with them, and so spent 7 or 8 dayes in ranging the Countrey, good numbers every day of scattered Roagues we killed in woods, Boggs and Mountaines, the strength of the Rebels Army was neere 3000 good men, by relation of some of themselves who now are Prisoners, besides those that were with the Cowes, thus giving glory to God Almighty in whose power it is with few to defeate a great many, this being the true Relation, wishing your Lordship all health and happinesse, I rest

Your Lordships loving and obedient servant

*Robert Stewart.*

They had 42 Colours, with 3000 Foote, and 300 Horse.

A Letter written by Owen Mac Art & Neale the day after they lost  
this Battell, unto Sir Robert Stewart.

I Should intreate you to be pleased for to certifie unto me by this bearer  
what prisoners you have taken or have in restraint of ours since the other  
day, together with your demands, whether you will exchange them for  
any Prisoners wee have, or if for Ransome, how much, wherein you  
shall doe us a curtisie, and to your selfe no hurt, for now though Fortune  
be favourable unto you, it may chance fall out hereafter, that your kind-  
ness and fauour therein may be required, if ever it comes in the way of

Your assured Friend as I find you  
From our Campe the  
16 of June, 1643. Owen & Neale.

This Campe was only himselfe and 5 or 6 more.  
I pray let this bearer see the Prisoners.

By a Letter dated the 20 of June, 1643. From London-derry it is  
thus written by Captain Henry Finch of the said City.

THAT upon the twelfth of the said June, 600 chosen men out of that  
City, and 60 Horse joyned with the Regiments of Sir Robert and  
Sir William Stewart, and Colonell Audley Merwin, who met with Art  
Mac & Neale the Generall of the Irish Forces in Ulster, and all his strength,  
neare a Towne called Glenties, about 50 miles from our said City of Lon-  
don-derry, where but a part of our Army being drawne up had a glorious  
day, slew 500 of the Rebels in the place, whereof 150 Commanders and  
Gentlemen of their prime, who fought courageously for their lives:  
We tooke prisoners who are now in our Jayle, Hugh & Neale Colonell,  
Shane & Neale, Lieutenant Colonell,

Art & Neale,

Shane & Neale,

Patrick & Mullin,

} Captaines.

William Oclinton Lieutenant.

Mann & Sheile,

Con & Neale,

} Gentlemen.

All men of prime note and very considerable, we lost only 6 or 8 Pro-  
pers, but many dangerously hurt, whereof Sir William Stewart's sonne was

one, and Captaine *Garskours*, Captaine of Sir *Roberts* Troope, and other men who came bravely on that day: It was a great Victory, and neere a breake-neck to the *Northerne* Forces of the *Irish* Rebels, It was Gods doing, 500 of our men did not fight for it, the greatest part of our Army not so much as seeing the Enemy but upon the flight, and dead, we had the chase 6 or 8 miles in good ground, in the march out and home we killed above 500 more of the Rebels. We have now no considerable Enemy within 40 or 50 miles of us, but we are so straightned for provision Viſuals and Match, Powder and all other Ammunition, that we cannot keepe the Fields long, had our Army bin there or provided, we had cleared *Tyrone* before our returne, but we had no bread in three dayes, and our Match, Powder and other provisions were spent; so against our wills, for want thereof, were forced to returne home. We have made so many marches this Summer into *Donagale*, *Tyrone* and *London-derry*, that there is little or no provisions left in the Countrey, and few or no Rogues to be seen, all either killed or fled into *Connought*, but great store of women and children, whereof few Cabbins in our march was empty, in some 5, in some 10 and in some 20 found dead in a Cabbins, part of them eaten by the living, it is a most lamentable case they have brought themselves unto.

Dublin 12 July, *From another hand.*

I have bin out with the Army this 5 Weekes, or els I had written unto you before now: whiles we were abroad we tooke the Lord *Dempsey* Castle, and blew it up, which was a very strong hold and nurseries of Rebels, and one *Fitz Garrets* Castle of *Clarhaly* we tooke and blew up, and one other of the *Fitz Garrets* yeilded his upon quarter, and had halfe his Armes, and as much goods as he could carry away, we got above 2000 Cowes in *Wicklow*, the Lord *Moore* hath gotten 7000 Cowes another way, the poore Rogues are starving, for they have nothing in most parts hereabouts, but Hedges and Weedes to live on.

---

*A Letter from Dublin of the 12 of July, 1643. from a man of worth to his Friend in London; Concerning the Earle of Ormonds carriage in the matter of Cessation desired by the Rebels.*

SIR,

Some Letters of yours I have received, but divers I beleevve have mis-  
Scarr'd, through the Sea Captaine Mr. *Plunkets* mistake, or knowing.

for to both he is very subject. I am shrewdly tempted to tell you, that mine to you have runne the same fortune, but the truth is, this is the first I could find time or reason to write since you went, I know you have heard gallant things of the Lord Marquesse of *Ormond* there touching a Treaty he had with the Rebels about a Cessation of Armes; and I make no doubt he is set forth from hence in the true shape and colour of a Rebel, or at least a lover of Rebels, there is no man to whom he hath more cleerely declared himselfe, touching his thoughts of, and intentions towards them, then my selfe: And beleeve me, hee is just where you left him, nothing changed, either in good will or bitterneesse towards them, when he went to Treat with them, he had by the favour of the Lords Justices and Counsell, some of the Board to goe with him, and he desired some chiefe Officers of the Army with them, to be witnesses of his carriage through the whole matter, which what ever end it take, I beleeve it will be printed, when first some of his good friends here, have written their conjectures of it; in the meane time, the maine matter that is like to be suggested to his prejudice, is, that this Treaty was not only performed, but desired and wholly gained from the King by his meanes and advice: His Lordship hath learnt by Sir *Benjamin Rudyards* speech, about the beginning of this Parliament, how unhansome it is to justifie displeasing things, by putting them upon the King, and therefore I should say nothing of that in his behalfe, but that to you, I desire to give satisfaction, that there is nothing falser, except him that shall write it, and having said this, I shall trouble you no more in that point.

One other thing is so much talked of here, that I owe his Lordship the right, and you who are my friend the satisfaction; To acquaint you with his carriage in it. Very soon after your departure hence, the Captaine of the *Swallow* and others of that company came ashore, amongst the rest the Master, who stayed late at the *Globe Tavern*, so late, that the Master of the house against his owne profit, desired him and his company to depart, which when they refused, he likewise refused to give them wine, and at length being desirous to be quit of them, he sent for a guard to take them away, which accordingly was done, and the Master sent to the Main-guard, where the Captaine being in like disorder, as I heare, not only misused the man, but spoke disgracefully of the Parliament, the Earles of *Essex* and *Warwick* as is alledged, now his Lordships share of the matter is as followes, the Captaine came to him and complained of this usage, and when his Lordship told him he was ready to doe him justice as soone as the matter would give him ground for it by petitioning, he said he tooke it to be the better way to passe it over, since he found the Officers were

were generally so discontented, as that the stirring of this might prove the occasion of more disorder, and be a meanes to spread the matter further: then hee desired, so that his Lordship answered, that hee knew best what hee had to doe, but that hee was ready upon complaint as afore-said, to doe his part towards the vindication of the justice of this place, and of any person injured here, but approved of his inclinations to smother a business of that unpleasing nature, this discourse past betwene his Lordship and him in my hearing, when it was ended he went away as I thought, resolved to say no more of the matter, but a little before his going hence, when he had taken other advice, he preferred an Information into the Martiall Court against him who was the Capitaine of the watch that night, but there left it without any man to follow it, where it still remaines ready for further scanning, when any man shall call upon it, and so much for that. If I should take upon me to answer all the lies raised on his Lordship here, by the father of lies and his hopefull issue, I should become the greatest writer of this age, and therefore I leave them to the shame I know will one day overtake them, resting

Your most faithfull friend and humble servant

J. B.

*Another Letter from the same man from Dublin, 20 July, 1643.*

SIR,

I Have according to my improvident custome, deferred writing till this last minute of time, having bin for some dayes employed in setting on a present march, which hath bin infinitely retarded and distracted through the miserable want of all things, now at length the business hath proceeded, that together with some Forces appointed to meete from *Drogheda, Trim and Dundalke*, and a party sent hence afore, there will be about 4000 fighting men, Horse and Foote, the latter pittifull poore, but as they are, I hope they will stop *Preston* in the course of his proceeding against our Garrisons, whereof he hath possessed himselfe of one, which was deserted by the men and burnt, other places where there were wards belonging to private persons, were rendered without resistance, as *Edenderry* and *Techoban*, and now *Castle Jordan* and another place is in danger, which to prevent, my Lord Marquesse doth goe after the Army to morrow, but his proportion of victuall not being for many weeks, he is tyed to a very short time for the worke which his Lordship will attempt, and leave



leave the successe to God, this I tell you, that your expectation be not raised above what is possible to be effected: two packquers from hence were taken by the *Wexford men*, wherein they boast to have found great miseries; and I feare by those Letters they have found too much of division amongst us, for calumnies, complaints and accusations are so frequent Theames of some dispatches thether, which may incourage the Rebels, and dispose them to unite in much the worser cause, for even now I have advertisement that *Preston* hath posselt himselfe of all the passages into that fast Countrey, except what lyeth behind him, whereto I feare his Lordship shall want bread to march, nor were it fit to leave him neerer this Towne then our selves, the condition of the inhabitants duly considered, and Castle *Jordan* for *Dublin* being but a bad exchange, so that upon the whole matter, hard are the tearmes his Lordship goes upon and in this harder then any mans, in that the good shall be imputed to others, if it please God to blesse the Army with successe, and if any mischance happens (which is not impossible) his Lordship I feare must beare it, with all the malitious constructions that can be made, these have bin his Lordships incouragements since he had the honour to serve the King in these employments, but I can assure you that doth not discourage him, nor will any thing else, that can be raised or done here or there, I am

Your very faithfull friend and servant

J. B.

---

*Another Letter from a very good hand in Dublin, dated 19, July, 1633.*

YOUR Letter lately received here and some small quantity of victuals sent hither, perswades me, that we are not wholly deserted by the Parliament, though I must tell you, so barely and coldly remembred, that if a better and ferventer regard be not timely had of us, nothing in humane reason can be expected but absolute ruine, and destruction of the best parts of the Kingdome.

*Preston* with his Forces of 7000 Foote and 800 Horse, superiour unto us in Cavelry, and Armes doubling our strength that is here, or that can conveniently be drawn together from our neerest Garrisons: is now in the County of *Meath*, hath taken Sir *William Coolies* Castle, and severall other holds, have endeavoured to block up Castle *Jordan*, and is quartered at this time about *Tecrohan*, Sir *Lucas Fitz Gerralds*, with intention, as our intelligence brings us to take in *Trim*, *Manoosh*, or both of them, per-adventure vaster purposes.

Ten dayes we have travelled in all the faire and foule wayes that can be invented to raise a small summe of money to set forth our Army, but are not yet at the end of our journey, two dayes more I hope will finish it, and then my Lord Marquesse goes forth in person, I pray God prosper him.

The harvest is now beginning, but before the sickle comes to the Corne, most of it is devoured by the starving people, and that in truth is the best expedient to end this Warre, and soone will doe it, if our Army, and the small remnant of our Nation remaining here may be ascertained of food from *England*; and Poudre and Armes are almost as necessary; labour these two as you love the peace of *Ierusalem*, such is the fate and desire of

Your humble Servant

T. H.



A true Relation of the manner of our Col-  
lonell Sir Frederick Hamiltons returne from *London-derry*  
in *Ireland*, being 60 miles from his Castle and Garrison,  
where he was at the beginning and breaking out of this Re-  
bellion, with the particular services performed by the  
*Horse and Foote Companies Which he commandes*  
garrison'd at *Maur Hamilton* in the County of  
*Leitrim* in the Province of *Connaught*.

October 24

**T**He Iron workes called the Garrison within six miles to *Hamilton* Castle, was by the *Oslannigans*, of the County of *Fermanagh*, and the *Mac Laughlins* and *Mac Murrajes*, of the County of *Leitrim*, set on fire and all burned.

October 24

Seven or eight score men, women and children, most of them *English*, belonging to those Iron workes, were divers of them sore wounded, all of them robbed, came flying for reliefe to Castle *Hamilton*, where the Col-  
lonels Lady charitably received them, himselfe and his two sonnes at that time being at *London-derry*.

October  
27.

This newes coming this day fortunately by a messenger from his Lady, he desperately adventured homewards with 10 or 12 Horse of his owne servants, passing over *Barnesmore* in the night time with every Horse-  
man his Calliver and his Match light at both ends, with sound of Trumpet  
most

most part of the night as we marched, making a great shew and a noyse as if an Army had followed us. Thus it pleased God we passed 30 miles of our way that night, coming to *Donegall* the next morning.

At *Donegall* we found *Sir Raph Gore*, *Mr. Brooks*, and all the *Briars* October 29 of that part of the County, robbed of their Cattell, shortly expecting themselves to be destroyed, much admiring if we had bin 500 men, how we durst have past *Barnesmore*, advising our Colonell to adventure no further homewards, *Ballyshannon* Castle in his way homewards being block't up with a great many *English* in it, and that Towne burned.

That night neverthelasse did we passe with a Convoy only of 20 *Scottish* Horsemen to *Ballyshannon*, relieving that Castle, presently calling out Captaine *Folys* with some few men for our guides, went a hunting for the Rogues, who had beene lately about the Castle, where that night ere we lighted we killed some of them, and brought home 22 Prisoners. That night our Colonell dispatched a messenger to his Lady being 12 miles. It pleased God so to blesse his messenger, that the next morning by day his Lady sent him a good guard of his owne Souldiers and servants, before the Country could heare of our being upon the way, which otherwile it had bin impossible for us to passe, having the borders of 3 Counties to march through, and that the most dangerous way in *Ireland*.

Our Colonell is visited by *Connour & Rourke* the High Sheriff of the October County of *Leyrim*, congratulating his safe returne beyond expectation, 31. then professing much loyalty and neighbourly love which not long lasted.

Came from *Dublin* with the Lords Justices passe six of our Colonells November Souldiers from *Carlisle*, who miraculously passed without losse of Armes, 6. Cloathes or what else they carried, to our Colonells great joy and comfort, being five *Scottish* men and one *Irish* man good Musketeers bred with himselfe.

The Colonell makes up amongst his servants and Tenants, a Troope of November 50 good Horses, which doe duty day and night about the Garrison and 7. Castle.

It is discovered to the Colonell, that one *Connor Mac Shane*, *Glas* November *Mac Laughlin* a most dangerous active man, and the chiefe of that name, 9. was drawing of a Boare 8 miles over mountaines, thinking to have manned an Island in the *Lough* of great consequence, being in a great glynne called *Glevedin*, which Island in former Rebellions had much galled the *English* Forces, it lying convenient for the bordering Rebels both of *Ulster* and *Connaught*; Vpon this information a party of able Foote-men were sent out, who met with the said *Connour* upon the top of a great

Mountaine, with a many Horse and Foote, drawing of his Boate, where himselfe was taken Prisoner, and his Boate broken all in peeces upon the Mountaine.

Novemb: 1. The Colonell received two Letters, one from *O'Connour* of *Sligo*, the other from *Ballagh o'Rourke*, both professing much loyalty, excusing their not waiting upon him, and congratulating his late and unexpected returne from the *Derry*. These Letters were kindly answered, with encouragement from the Colonell to persevere in their loyalty, though he little expected it, as it afterwards came to passe.

Novemb: 4. *Con Mac Ternan bane o'Rourke*, the most active and most dangerous man of that name: It is informed that he and others had lately robbed an *English*-Minister called *Mr. Bushe* apprehended by the Colonells order.

Novemb: 15. *Bryan o'Rourke* another prime Gentleman of that name, and Brother in law to the fore-said *Con o'Rourke*, was likewise apprehended upon Information that he had rob'd another *English*-man, *William Browne*.

Novemb: 20. Being informed that many of the Rebels of *Donegall* and *Firmanagh*, had their daily randevous at an Ale-house kept 6 miles from our Colonels Castle neare the borders of *Firmanagh*: A party was sent thither in the night, where the Ale-house keeper *Cahir Mac Caba* with six Rogues more were apprehended and brought to our Colonell, with 60 Beeves from the County, who were all in Rebellion as all the other Counties about us, only the two *Barronies* neare to our Colonels, where his owne *Irish* Tenants lived, made shew of loyalty, hoping thereby to have gotten greater advantage afterwards.

Novemb: 24. A Court was to have beene held by the Colonells Seneschall, expecting his *Irish*-Tenants should have made their appearance, as till that day they duly did, hee using all the meanes he could to preserve his owne in their loyalties, as many times they faithfully promised, but that day absenting themselves, he perceived them all traitors.

Novemb: 30. *Hugh Mac Cahill Mac Murry* the chiefe *Irish*-Tenant upon the Colonels Land, who had jugged with his *Brittish*-Tenants, making them believe he was a guard for their Cattell, in preserving and recovering some of them which had beene stolne by the neighbouring Rebels, did this day joyne himselfe with the *Cavan* Rebels, who in a great body match't with Drumme and Colours within two miles of our Castle, drawing with them a many of the *Brittish*-Tenants Cattell, and taking with them one *English*-man whom they hanged.

Decemb: 4. The Colonell now perceiving their generall trecheries, leaves off any more to trust them, and seeing no order for reliefe either from the Lord Justices, or the Lord President: They having received advertisement from

our

our Colonell not onely of the state of his owne Castle, but also of the Towne and Garrison of *Sligo*, where a part of the Lord Presidents owne Company lay, with a many *British*, who were miserably murdered at the taking in of that Towne, being promised daily reliefe by the Lord President, which promise and encouragement as some of themselves say, help't to destroy them, otherwise they could have joynd with us before the Rebellion there brake out in that height. This day by our Colonells command, a Gallowes was erected upon the top of an hill neare the Castle, and having about 24 Prisoners in the Castle, he caused 8 of them to be hanged up, which had beene at the burning of *Ballyshannon* in the County of *Donegall*, and at the burning of the Iron workes in the County of *Fermannagh*.

The same day our Horse-men scouring the fields, tooke two of the Rogues Centries, who were brought home and hanged.

A party was sent in the night to scoure *Glansfarn* Woods, upon intelligence that *Hugh Mac Cabill* the ringleader of the Colonells traitorous Tenants kept in those Woods, where indeed they were met withall, 3 of them killed, divers wounded, and their great leader narrowly escaping in the Woods through the darknesse of the night.

Our Horse-men scouring the fields, met with another of the Rebels Centries, who was brought to the Castle and hanged.

One *Thomas Abercromy* being misled by a treacherous Jesuiticall kinsman of his owne, this day did forsake his owne house, being a pretty stone house with a Barne, within a mile of our Colonells Castle, transports himselfe, his Wife and Children to the Castle of *Con o Rourke*, apparently by this time in Rebellion, leaving in his owne house his said Papistickall kinsman, married to an *Irish* woman, with some of the said *Con o Rourke Irish* Rogues, for maintaining of that house, which our Colonell held no good neighbourhood; He many times neighbourly and kindly inviting the said *Thomas Abercromy* with his wife and children to take share with him in his Castle, and not to shame and dishonour himselfe and his Nation in such a kind: whose answer was, he was fully perswaded of the destruction of this Castle and all in it, for it was so resolved; as he was credibly assured, not only by those of this County, but of all the bordering Counties neare it, and that he was promised by the favour of the said *Con o Rourke*, to have his owne life with his wife and childrens preserved until they were else-where transported.

Complaint was made to the Colonell, that some of this *Con o Rourke's* Rogues had robbed some of his Tenants, servants and gardens, who sending after them, had some of the Rogues apprehended; where little *Tha-*

Decemb: 6

Decemb: 14

Decemb: 15

Decemb: 16



that *Abercromy* the Papist presumed to interpose himselfe for the resetting of those Rogues, as they were brought by the house his Cousen left him in, upon this Information our Colonell caused him to be apprehended as a dangerous Instrument there, the Rogues in the house with him running away, the house is demolished and made unserviceable.

December  
20.

A party in the night time was sent abroad towards *Sligo*, where we met with a number of Rogues, hurt divers, killed three, brought home their heads to our Colonell with a lusty Prisoner, who was hanged next day.

January 6.

*Owen ó Rourke*, *Bryan Ballagh* his Brother, with the greatest strength of this County of *Cavan*, made a great shew this day, being about a 1000 or 1200 men, marcht with Musket shot to us, (where from the Castle we shot one of them dead, being a signe of good luck, making them march further off;) This night they encamped at *Larganboye*, where *Abercromy* house was lately destroyed, being disappointed of what they expected for there, their chiefe Commanders marching a mile further for their quarters to *Con ó Rourke* the then Sheriffe, who till that day had not publicly declared himselfe; there they found *Thomas Abercromy* with his wife and children; The Rogues continued with their Campe at *Larganboye*, within a mile to us, and their chiefe Officers at *Con ó Rourke*, from Thursday till Tuesday following, daily drawing out their men to the hills about us, every day multiplying, making great shewes, thinking thereby to have scared us out of the Castle.

January  
11.

This morning the Sheriffe *Con ó Rourke* in the head of Rebels, marcht in a full body within halfe a mile to the Castle, as if he meant presently to have assaulted us, which the Colonell perceiving, drawes forth in person as strong as he could make, both Horse and Foote, being farre short of the sixth man of their number, yet made offer there to have fought with them, which the Rogues perceiving make a halt upon a Hill a River dividing us, they calling to us that we were Rebels to the King and not they; Our Colonell wishing them, since their quarrell was so good and their number so much greater then ours, they would try it with us: In the meane time while we were thus parleying, men were sent out by the Colonell in severall quarters behind us, to set fire on a many goodly Houses and haggards belonging to his owne Tenants, least the Rogues with their multitudes should have quartered themselves most conveniently round about him, which sodaine fire the Rogues perceiving, presently imagined aide was come to us; The fires being up we advanet with greater confidence, whereupon they retreated in disorder, and dispearst themselves presently, some of our Horse-men employed in the burning, apprehended

indeed two of the Rogues, which were brought to the Colonell as we drew home to the Castle, which by his orders were that night hanged.

A party of Horse and Foote were sent towards the Sheriffs *Con. 6* January  
*Lankers* Castle, to requite his kind visit towards ours the day before, where 12.  
we found him selfe, with his wife, children and family fled that night, leaving *Thomas Abercromy* with his wife and children in possession of his Castle, whom our Souldiers turned out, victualling themselves with store of Poudred-Beefe, Butter, Meale and such like commodities, what they were able to carry away; afterwards setting fire in the Castle, and in many other thatched houses about it, burning all.

A party is sent towards the Castle of *Drommahere*, where their great Colonell *Owen 6 Rourke* with all his strength lay; yet we burned many 13.  
goodly houses and haggards of Corne within a mile of the Castle, burning all within five miles forwards.

Our party marcht Westward 6 miles towards *Sligo*, burning many 14.  
goodly houses and haggards that way, and amongst them the house and haggards of *Bryan ballagh 6 Rourke*, Brother to the fore-said *Con 6 Rourke*.

A party of Horse were sent North-westward 6 miles towards the borders of *Sligo*, where we burned a strong stone house slated with a bawne, 15.  
built by *Sir Roger Jones*, called *Unloanes Foure*; This day we also burned many other Irish-houses and haggards, and in our retreat, we encountered amongst the Woods a prime Rebelle called *Ternan age Mac Art 6 Rourke*, whose head was brought to the Castle that night.

A party of Foote are sent 6 miles Northwards towards the borders of 16.  
the County of *Fermannagh*, burning all that way many houses and haggards belonging to the *6 Meaghons*, *Thomas Mac Loans*, and the *6 Freilas of Rossenmer*. The party marching homewards was betrayed by their guide, and were layed for in their march by above 300 of the Rogues, our party not being 60, five of our men were killed, and 8 of the Rebels, so this march concluded the burning of all houses and Corne within 6 miles round about our Castle, not so much left as a Cabbin to campe in.

This day the greatest strength of the County with the assistance of the 17.  
Lord *Taffas sonne*, and Captaine *Bryan Mac Donnohy*, from the County of *Sligo*, the *Mac Gaurans* from the County of *Cavan*, to the number of 1200, or 1400 men, encamped themselves at the old place *Lungenboy*, where they lay in the fields that night, and the next morning drave away all our Colonells Cowes to the number of 4000 hundred.

Having gotten our Cowes, they who took them came this day againe, 18.  
and encamped themselves at two houses, which our Colonell was perswaded

swaded by his Lieutenant to leave unburnt, within half a mile to the Castle, where was store of Corne at one of the houses, belonging to the Lieutenant himselfe, which Corne the Rogues fell a burning, which much vexed us, but they lying in that manner, burning of our Corne from Sunday till Tuesday, our Colonell then with a party of Horse and Foote, did beate them from their quarters, killed 8 of them, and chased the rest being five times our number.

January  
30.

This day *Owen o Rourke*, with the assistance of Colonell *Con Mac Donnell o Rourke* and his Regiment from *James Towne*, with the *o Connors* and *Mac Gawrans* from the Counties of *Sligo* and *Cavan*, to the number of 1500 or 1600 men burnt our Towne and Mills of *Mamont Hamilton*, which day upon the Rogues retreat from that good service, our Colonell not being provided otherwise to entertaine them, endeavouring the safety of his people, which that day God preserved within his Castle and bawne, yet caused he to be hanged upon the gallows in their view, *Con o Rourke*, Brother to their great Colonell *Owen*, and *Conner Mac Laughlin* chiefe of that Name, two of the ablest and most dangerous men in this County.

February  
4.

*Owen o Rourke* with his Brother *Bryan Ballagh*, and the *Mac Glannabans* to the number of 600 or 700 men from the *Derry*, encamped themselves againe in the former place at our Lieutenants and *John Murrays* houses and haggards, falling to their old worke of burning, and sending away of our Corne: The next day with a party of Horse and Foote, we againe fell upon them as before, killing divers of them, their great Colonell being shot through the hat and through the Pike neare his hand; we brought home to the Castle 3 of their ablest mens heads, The wives and boyes of our Souldiers loading themselves with the burnt Corne and pillage, we burnt those houses, and what Corne in the haggards we were not able to carry with us, to prevent their further company there, they being too farre masters of the Field.

February  
12.

Our horsemen scouring the Fields apprehended two of the Rogues Centrics, *Owen Mac Thomas Mac Murray*, and *Ferries Mac Kegan*, two lusty able Rogues, which were the next day hanged.

February  
14.

Our Colonell being informed that *Mr. Parke* at *New-Towne* within 6 miles of our Castle, and 12 miles from *Sligo* was strongly blockt up with a Campe about him in his Castle, sent a party of Horse and Foote under the command of our Lieutenant, with orders to view their strength, and if possible to relieve and speake with *Mr. Parke*; As we marcht towards *New-Towne*, we saw little danger, onely some scouting Rogues from hill to hill. But coming to *Mr. Parke*, he told our Lieutenant that

he

he wisht us all home againe, holding us all lost men, as if he had beene acquainted with the plot ; Our Lieutenant amazed at his speeches, perceiving no such signe, upon his march admiring Mr. *Parke* intelligence, finding himselfe and his Castle free, desired Mr. *Parke*, since for his reliefe our Colonell had sent us thither, that he would therefore lend him 20 or 30 of his men for the strengthening of his party homewards, which Mr. *Parke* would by no meanes doe, though perswaded thereunto by his owne Officers, and divers of his men, who told him it was shame for him and them all, he leaving men enough besides to defend him in his Castle, whose answer was, it was well for him if he could defend himselfe and his till aide come, without Provoking or doing any thing to draw the County upon him : Our Colonell having in person upon his intreaty lately visited him with a small party of Horse, where since it is said, *New-Towne* should have beene the trap to have catcht us all for our kindnesse to it. On our march homewards we were beset from all quarters with neere a 1000 men, who within 3 miles to our Colonels Castle, gave us a most fierce charge in a most dangerous rocky place, where our Horses could make no play, yet did our men so bravely behave themselves being instantly engaged upon push of Pike, our Musquetieres once having given fire in their bosomes, were so plyed with their stones wherewith they had provided themselves, and had such dexterity in throwing them, as we got not leave to charge againe ; but we falling upon them pell mell with the butt ends of our Muskets, did so closely stand to it, as having by Gods great mercy and power broake through, disordered and routed them, killing a number, chasing them like doggs with our Horse and Foote from hill to hill ; In the meane time our Souldiers boyes stripped neere 30 of their best men of the Counties of *Sligo* and *Leitrim*, of which number was *Mulmurry Mac Ternan* (chiefe of that name) a Justice of the Peace who had beene Sheriffe of this County, who with his eldest Sonne and heire, and his Sonne in law *Carbery o Trower* chiefe of that name, *Cormack Mac Murray*, *Farliffe o Deganan*, *Bryan o Rourke*, and *John o Crean*, all of them that are named being prime Gentlemen of these two Counties, besides a many of their common Souldiers were killed, wherof is made small reckoning amongst them ; It is thought that we cut off that day of all sorts above threescore of them : Our party not consisting of 80 Horse and Foote, of which we lost in that service only one Pike man and one Musquetiere, though many of us were sore bruised with stones, and sleight curable wounds with push of Pike, the Rogues afterwards acknowledging that day they saw God was against them, they being ten times our number,

ber, and most confident to have destroyed us all, yet it pleased God thus to preserve us from this great dammage which we were engaged in, for that ungrate man Mr. *Parke* his fake, we brought home with us abundance of the Rogues Armes and Apparrell, which was a good supply to our Souldiers.

February 28. This day *o Connour Sligoe* shewes himselfe from that County with his Regiment, drawing to a Mountaine not much above halfe a mile from our Castle.

March 1. *O Connour* with his Regiment encamp'd themselves in *Cornestacke-Woods*, upon the side of a boggie Mountaine not much above halfe a mile from our Castle.

March 4. *Owen o Rourke* with his Regiment and the assistance of the County, encamp'd themselvs on the right-hand of *O Connours* Regiment, in the same Woods neare together; *O Connour* sends a seeming friendly Letter by a Boy of 6 or 7 yeares old, advising our Colonell to yeeld to some Treaties with them, and to prevent the eminent ruine was threatned towards his Castle and all in it, which Letter was answered with contempt and disdaine by our Colonell, who scorned any Treaty with Rebels and Traitors.

March 8. *Owen o Rourke*, *O Connour Sligoe*, and all they could then command, being a great multitude, marched towards our Castle from their Campe, as if that day they would have done great matters, but having shewed themselves, and marching about us, keeping without Musket-shot of our walls, they drew back to their quarters.

March 9. They againe that morning, being supplied the night before with Colonell *Con Mac Donnells* Regiment, which as the day before with neere 2000 men, firing some Cabbins, and sheltring themselves as they set fire in the ditches of the Orchard, where of from the Castle walls our Colonell shot two of them with his owne hands, which they carried off retreating to their old quarters.

March 17. Being their Patron *S<sup>t</sup>. Patricks* day, and the day they had prefixed for the destruction of our Castle and all in it, Our Colonell that morning with Trumpet, Drumme and Colours, marched out with Horse and Foote towards their unaccessible Campe with his small number, challenging them that day to draw neare for performance of their great brags, where we parlied and made some sport with them a while, a River and a bogge dividing us; Our Colonell sending for one of his Prisoners, the Rogues being drawne up in a body right before us, we called to them since they durst not come to performe their promise and take the Castle, they would rescue their Country-man who was there to be hanged.



ged in honour of *St. Patrick*, which Prisoner being hanged and proving but an old sack of straw, long stockings being sowed to it, as it was throwne over the gallowes, our Hang-man sitting on the gallowes, calling to them if they had charity in them to send the poore prisoner a Priest, they imagining that sack to be a man, fell all on their knees in our view praying for the Prisoners soule.

Till this day our Campers lay quiet, our Colonell daily causing the Plough to goe in despite of them till this night, that all our plough-Horses through negligence of our Centries are stolne from us, they thinking by that meanes they had overthrowne our ploughing, and the next morning we falling to geere our Ploughes, our Colonell causeth his Troope-Horses which had beene kept in the house, to be made ready and fall to plowing and sowing with them faster then formerly, and ploweth and soweth neere fourescore Barrells of Corne, the Rogues not daring for all their strength to plow or sow for themselves within two or three miles of his Castle.

By this time the Rogues grew so confident of their securities in their Campe, that the Colonell *de Rourke* brought his Cattell to graze upon some wast land within two miles of us, wherewith our Colonell being acquainted, that night sent out a party of Horse and Foote, and seized upon all their Cattell, driving them homewards by breake of day, whereupon they raising their Camp, brake out upon us, thinking to have destroyed us and rescued their Colonels cattell; but it pleased God we so paid them, that we not only made good our prey, but killed a number of their ablest men, bringing with us to the Castle, 6 of their chiefe Officers heads, of which number was *James Murrah Mac Glannaghy* the chiefe man of that name, chasing all the rest to their Campe, where we found 3 stand of Pike-mens Armes, 2 Drummes, 6 Muskets with Bandaliers, 2 Serjeants Halberts, with a many Pikes and Skeanes, most of those Armes formerly belonging to the Lord President of *Connaughts* Officers and Souldiers, having layne in Garrison at *Sligo* till it was lost and they cut off; Thus we destroyed their great Campe, where our Souldiers wives and boyes plentifully victualled themselves, bringing from the Rogues a many great Iron-crowes and such like instruments, made and marked with the signe of the Crosse, making their poore churles beleieve, that with those Irons they were to pull downe our Colonels Castle and Bawne.

A party of Foote was this night sent to *Glenden*, some 5 or 6 miles off, where we kil'd and burned in their houses neere 20 Rogues, bringing home a number of Cowes and Goates, and burning a many of *Irish* houses.

Our Colonell this night in person, marched forth with a party of Horse

and Foote into the County of *Sligo*, where within two miles of the Towne, he burnes of some Villages called *Belfusber*, and other houses there, killed some Rogues, he returns by *M<sup>r</sup>. Parke* Castle of the *New-Towne*, finding that Towne and Castle untouched or troubled, being in the bosome of the Rogues, where our Colonell being informed the Rogues were daily relieved by that Towne and Castle, their Cowes having grazed peaceably about the Castle all the while their Campe lay about *Man-nour Hamilton*, *M<sup>r</sup>. Parke* never permitting a man of his either to meddle with their cattell or themselves, as they went and came with their provisions from *Sligo* to their Campe, he having in his Castle neare 60 able men, which might have done good service if *M<sup>r</sup>. Parke* and the *o Rourke*s had not so made their bargaines, that untill our Colonels Castle were destroyed, he should not be meddled withall, so as he made them no interruption whilst they were encampt about us; In the meane time *M<sup>r</sup>. Parke* causing his Weaver to weave 40 yards of broad-cloath for the use of *M<sup>r</sup>. Bryan Ballagh o Rourke*, whilst he and his Brother *Owen* were lying in campe about us; And the next day after we had beate them from their campe, *M<sup>r</sup>. Parke* not only suffered them to carry away their cattell, which all that while they grazed neare to his Castle gates without any guard save one coward, as also that day lent *Bryan Ballagh* the cloath-weaver in his Castle, with divers such like informations proved by *M<sup>r</sup>. Parke*s owne servants, whereupon our Colonell thought fit presently to burne that Towne which so long had relieved and sheltered the Rogues, and killed some of them at that instant in the Towne.

*April 21.* Our Horse-men this morning scouring the fields, killed one of the Rogues centryes bringing his head home to the Castle.

*April 23.* This night a party was sent towards *Dromahere*, where we killed above 40 of the Rogues, burnt many good houses, brought home 7 or 8 score cowes, with many Horses, Sheepe and Goates, by this march we diverted another great gathering intended to have encampt about us the next day.

*May 1.* A party of Foote is sent into a Wood-land Mountaine countrey 10 mile from our Castle, where by the dawning of the day we fell upon some houses belonging to the great Lord of that Countrey *Mac A Name*, where we burnt and killed in the houses upwards of 3 score persons, taking *Mac A Name* himselfe, with his two Daughters, and a Kins-man Prisoner, his Wife being killed unknowne to the Souldiers, amongst the rest we brought home our Prisoners with 8 or 9 score cowes, and neere 200 Sheepe and Goates.

*May 10.* That night a party of Horse and Foote are sent into the countrey of *Sligo*, where we burnt the houses of *Teig Mac Phelamy o Connort*, *Teig bog*

log o' Connors, neere Cozens and Captaines in O'Connors Regiment, whilst he lay about us we kil'd some 10 or 12 of the Rogues themselves, being then at *Sligo*, most of the people of the *Barony* being fled to the Towne for feare of our men; That Country being almost wast, we brought home onely a prey of Sheepe.

This night we marcht into the County of *Fermannah*, where we kild the Wife of *Donnagha Mac Flaherty Mac Gwire*, with about 40 more, whom we surpris'd in houses before day, and brought with us 9 score Cowes, above 200 Sheepe and Goates, and 47 Horses and Mares, 30 Swine, and 5 Prisoners which we hanged. May 13.

Intending towards the Fryers of *Crewly*, we found that house uncovered, and the Fryers fled; This morning we encountred a number of *Owen o' Rourke*s men neare to the Castle of *Dromadure*, where we killed above 20 of them, our Souldiers got good Pillage in their Cabbins, brought home above an 100, most of them *Scotch* and *English* Cowes, 7 or 8 score Sheepe, some lusty Mares and Horses, with a many Pikes, and the Lord President of *Connaught*s Halbert, his Serjeant being taken when they left *Sligo*. May 18.

This morning our Castle is attempted to be taken by 4 or 5 hundred Rogues from the *Dartey* or *Rosenver*, but our Centries timely giving us the Alarmes, they are rescued, and the Rogues retyred to the Mountaines. May 20.

In hope this night to meete the Rebels who attempted our Castle, a party is sent towards *Glonnan* 6 miles from the Castle, where we found a many faire *Irish* houses, neither man nor beast neere them, all which we burnt, and marching homeward we perceived before Sun-rising a many Rebels at *Largenboy*, within lesse then a mile to our Castle, coming from the County of *Sligo*, with intention that morning to assaile our Castle: Our party perceiving them, notwithstanding their sore chase in rescuing the Castle the day before, and their hard march that night, yet did we advance towards them with Horse and Foote within speech of them, our Colonell calling to them from a hill, asked if their errand were for the Castle, for the rescuing their Lord *Mac A Nave* and his Daughters, or was it Cowes they were seeking; they should have a venture for both, our Colonell causing a Prisoner to be brought out, told them it was *Mac A Nave*, to be hanged for their welcome to their ould Campe, which Prisoner was immediately hanged in their owne view, the gallows standing on the top of a hill, within lesse then two Musket-shots, where the Rogues were drawne up, as the Prisoner was throwne over the ladder, we could perceive the Rogues upon their knees, thinking we had hanged May 21.

*Mac a Nave*; After this our Colonell gives order presently to drive above two hundred milch Cowes towards them, telling them there was the cowes we had lately taken from their deare friend Colonell *Owen o'Rourke*, when they were last beaten from their campe, hoping this would have put more mettall in them, since they durst not fight for rescuing their friend, they being five times our number, and we unable to reach them as they stood on those wooddy boggs, keeping a mosse and a River betwixt us and them: Whilst our Colonell parlied with them, his Lady from the castle came to us (where we were drawne up over against the Rogues) furnishing us with good store of meate and drinke, which much refreshed us, having beene upon service two nights together, yet were our stomacks sharper set to have beene at the Rogues, then either to meate or sleepe; but seeing the Rogues so unwilling to come on, we were commanded on a sudden to draw towards the castle, which the Rogues perceiving fell to stripping themselves, and with a great noyse and a cry come running towards us, and over th: River unto the middle of a mosse: scarce Musket shot from the castle, as if they would have gotten betwixt us and home; which our Colonell perceiving, gives order to the Officers, commanding the Foote to wheele about upon them, which the Rogues no sooner perceiving, but they presently fell a running over the River, throwing one another into it; as they crost, our Musketeeres getting ground of them, gave fire amongst the thickest of them, killed divers, hurt many, chast the rest neare 3 miles over Mountaines towards *Sligo*, bringing home their chiefe Commander at that time his head, our Souldiers being furnished with above an 100 of their Mantles, coates and cloakes, 2 Drummes, a many of their Armes, and good store of Meale and other commodities which their Wives and boyes found in their campe, we being tould by 2 Prisoners that all the neighbouring Counties had set up their rests with a resolution that night to have met, never to have given us over untill they had starved us or taken us out of our castle, but God of his wonted mercy thus disappointed that damnable plot, without the losse of a man to us, to his everlasting glory and all our comforts.

May 22.

Notwithstanding our severall fore marches the Weeke past, we were encouraged by the word of a Prisoner in hope of a speciall peece of service, this night to venture upon a fresh march, where we were conducted neare 14 or 16 miles into the County of *Sligo*, guiding us amongst most dangerous Rocks and glinns, intending to have betrayed us, as afterwards he confest; neverthelesse it pleased God to give us such strength and courage, and sent us such a meeting with them, as we killed above 30 in three cabbins,

cabbins, brought home a fresh Prisoner, above an 100 cowes, and neere so many Sheepe; the crye and Countrey being up in all parts about us, yet never durst so much as venture to rescue the cattle; At our comming home we hanged our guide, who died a most desperate obdurate villaine.

A party of Foote was sent towards *Mounter Kenny*, that night we killed 10 or 12 in their cabbins amongst the Woods, brought home with us neere 200 cowes an 100 Sheepe, and in our returne we were set upon by *Owen o Rourke*, and the sonnes of *Mac Nawe*, being neere 300 men, where it pleased God we not only defended our selves and our prey, but also killed and stript a many of their best men, bringing home a Prisoner with a many of their Armes.

This night a party of Horse and Foote are sent towards some Lands of *Owen o Rourke* called *Cilkoß*, where we killed 15 or 16 of his men, brought home a Prisoner, with some few Cowes, Horses, Sheepe and Goates.

A party of Foote is sent towards our Colonels Woods of *Glanfearne*, June 12. where we killed 15 or 16 in those Woods, and brought home 4 Prisoners, with some foure-score cowes, and neere six-score Sheepe.

Our Colonell having by vertue of a Commission, made use of some 20 of Mr. *Parkes* men in prosecution of Rebels, not thinking him to be so base a Traitor in correspondency with them as afterwards was proved. This night our Colonell sends his party with 20 Beeves for the supply and relieving *Parkes* and his castle, with orders that *Parkes* 20 men should returne with our party, there being twice more men with him within his castle then was requisite for the defence thereof: But *Parkes* receiving the Beeves, and getting his 20 men within his castle, would not suffer a man of them notwithstanding our Colonels commission and orders to that purpose to returne with us.

Our Colonell much resenting *Parkes* presumption the day before, this day sends his Lieutenant with a party of Horse and Foote, requesting *Parkes* by vertue of our Colonels commission from the Lords Justices and Counsell, to draw forth and muster what strength that castle could make, leaving a competent number within it selfe for making good the walls; Our Lieutenant orders being that so many should be left within the castle as his judgement should thinke fit, and the rest to march along with our party upon some speciall speedy peece of service intended, wherein Sir *William Cole* and his Regiment had severall times denied us assistance; This motion *Parkes* denied to muster his men untill he perswaded our Lieutenant to come within his castle, where shutting the gates, he mustered neere 60 able men, whereof our Lieutenant demanded 30, which *Parkes* denied.



denied, not suffering a man of his to come within the castle untill ours marcht away.

July 1.

This night with Horfe and Foote our Colonell thinkes fit in person to visit Mr. *Parke*, who had so beastly neglected his Officers in contempt of the Lords Justices and Counsells commission, fearing *Parke* was inclining rather to submit himselfe and his castle into the hands of the Rogues whom he held the stronger party, and daily corresponded with them, which to prevent, we marcht this night about midnight to his Castle walls, requiring *Parke* if he were a subject, that upon his Allegiance he would come forth and speake with our Colonell, who after some shuffling excuses and delays opens his gate, our Colonell commands him speedily to draw forth what men he had within the castle, and making choise of some 20 of them which he joyned to his owne party, caused presently to apprehend *Parke* upon strong presumption of his disloyalty and his former contempts; Our Colonell presently puts in an Officer of his owne with the charge of that Castle and all in it, which being done, our Colonell marches straight towards the Towne of *Sligo*, *Parke*'s castle being within 4 miles of it, none of us that followed him imagining that with so small a party he would have aimed at such a march, but coming neare to the Towne, our Colonell commanding a halt to be made, and the party to be drawne up in a body, using some comfortable encouraging speeches, asking if our stomacks did serve us as his did, to attempt the burning of the Towne now so neare it, which maintained so many Rebellious enemies, who had joyned in the burning our poore garrison, and so many times encampt about us and fought our destruction; This motion was no sooner made by our Colonell then cherefully embraced by us all, so recommending our selves to his divine mercy, who had many times assisted and delivered us, on we marcht towards the dawning of the day, our Colonell having no other Officers to assist him in this service, but his Serjeant *Leviston*, his Lieutenant and Ensigne being most part of this yeare diseased and unserviceable, our Colonell coming at the Bridge gives orders to the Foote chearefully to follow their Serjeant with what silence and speed they were able, and once entring the Towne, no man presume upon paine of death, to enter any house for plunder, but with fire and sword to destroy all we could come at, calling all the streete if any *Brittish* Prisoners were amongst them they should draw to us, as divers did, Our Colonell with his Horfe falling upon a many good houses full of people on this side of the Bridge, where he burned and destroyed all, appointing his Randevowes with the Foote at the South-west end of the Towne, where he cross a Foard which brought him close to the Friery, where

where the foote met and fired their brave masse house and Fryery, where it is said, we burnt a many good things, which people had given in keeping for safety to the Fryars, and all their superstitious trumperies belonging to their Masse: It was thought some of the Fryers themselves were likewise burnt, two of them running out were killed in their habits: As we finished this worke, and giving God the praise for our successe, we were told by some Prisoners that *O Connors Sligo* with what strength he could make in that County, was that night marcht to meete *Owen & Rourke* and therest of his old comrades from the County of *Cavan*, for the laying of a new campe about our Colonels castle, and the carrying away of our new supply of Cowes; upon which newes our Colonell held it fit to halt homewards, as we marcht hourly expecting to be encountered; when we came within 3 miles of our Colonels castle, we discerned our Colonels Horse passage strongly to be beset (being a straight passage) with a number of men, having a Rocky wood on our right hand, and a great bogge on the left, so that our Horse-men by our Colonels orders are forced to try another way, where many of them were bogged their Horses breaking from them; In the meane-time our Foote-men courageously charged a great body of them neere 300 which were layed for us that way; Those who had beset our Horse-passages, observing our Horse-men bogged, and our Foote engaged with 3 times our number, marcht hard after our Horse-men, where our Colonell amongst the rest was 3 times unhorsed, that day the Rogues playing hard upon him, being well knowne by his Horse and habit, as some of their Prisoners afterwards confest; nevertheless, it pleased God out of his wonted fatherly mercy, not only to deliver us safe out of their hands being a small handfull, not above 7 score Horse and Foote, who fought our selves with neere a 1000 of them from severall quarters, still skirmishing with us untill we came neare our Colonels castle, our Muskiteeres killing a many of them, with the lesse only of 3, and some few hurt; Notwithstanding our wearisome march and hot service that night in burning of the Towne of *Sligo*, where it is confest by themselves we destroyed that night neere 3 hundred soules by fire, sword and drowning, to Gods everlasting great honour and glory and our comforts.

*James Wetherford* a Scotch-man, married to an *Irish*-woman, being at *Sligo* July 2. 60, and confessing himselfe to have beene one of *O Connors* Souldiers, was this day hanged.

A party of Horse and Foote was this night sent towards *Kilbury*, July 10. where the Rogues were strongly encampd within 4 miles to our Colonels castle; we falling on them before day, there we killed and stript above

above 20 of them, brought home above 8 score of their cōwes, were set upon by a number of them, who thought to have rescued the cōwes, gave us a most desperate charge, but we kil'd 7 or 8 more of them, and brought home our prey with a many of their Armes, we lost one of our best Muskiteeres in this service.

July 15.

Our Colonell being advertized from the County of *Fermanagh*, that Sir *William Cole* had lately taken in upon protection above an 100 *Irish* Rogues, allowing them a Captaine of their owne Nation over them, quartering them neare to the way where our messengers used to pass: towards *Eniskillen*, which much troubled our Colonell, such a thing should be done by Sir *William Cole* with whom he daily corresponded, without acquainting him with his warrant or reasons for that act: here-upon our Colonell fearing least that such like neighbours should be put upon him by Sir *William Cole*, this night sends a party towards the borders of *Fermanagh*, where a many goodly *Irish* houses with an Iron worke were standing amongst the Woods, all which our Colonell this night caused to be burned; In scouring those Woods we found a few cōwes and 2 Prisoners.

July 16.

Our Colonell having divers times by Letters advertized Sir *William Cole* whilest the Rogues lay encamp't about him, desiring some aide from Sir *Williams* Regiment being most part *Scotch-men*, whom our Colonell had advised to submit to his command, being of that County which he lived in, yet Sir *William* did never since the beginning of these troubles, venture so much as one messenger to see what was become of us, for all our Colonell constantly twice or thrice a Moneth did adventure messengers to him, who was neere 10 times our number: And we being advertized from Sir *William Cole* himselfe by our messengers, that some Ponder and Ammunition was sent from *Dublin* and *London-derry* to *Dunagall*, for the supply of *Eniskillen* and us both, Sir *William* promising by his meane: and his stronger party, that some course should be taken for the bringing our Ammunition from *Dunagall* as for his owne, which our Colonell relyed upon: yet nevertheless Sir *William* did make that meane that his owne was brought to *Ballishannon* within 12 miles to our Colonels castle, and unknowne to our Colonell sends a party of 4 or 5 hundred to *Ballishannon* for his Ammunition, where he was well supplied with Salt, and marched at this time with this party neare to the borders of our Colonels Land, within 6 miles to his castle, where our small party might have conveniently met them, and have beene supplied as they were, if their intencion and wishes had beene as neighbourly towards us, as we were really to wards them, who by this and other after carria-

ges appeared rather to envy then to pity our extremities whereof they were fully informed; yet hearing by our last messenger how God had blest and enabled us to doe for our selves, and that store of c.owes were to be had in our county of *Leytrim*, whereof they heard that we got daily store: This newes it seemes did more invite our neighbour Regiment then any stomach they had to relieve us in our severall distresses untill this day; A party of neere 400 Horse and Foote are sent with Sir *William Coles* Letters to our Colonell, congratulating his severall good services, expressing he had now in accomplishment of our Colonels former desires sent these Gentlemen and Souldiers, to be employed in scouring of the Countrey, and such other services as by our Colonell should be thought fit, without limitation of time or other end mentioned in his Letter; upon reading whereof our Colonell bids their Lieutenant Colonell *Acheson* with the rest of their Captaines heartily welcome, there being in their company M<sup>r</sup>. *Deane Barkesley*, who had married Sir *William Coles* Daughter, and had lately beene relieved by Sir *William* from the Rogues, in exchange of divers arch-Rebels, Priests, Captaines and others of great consequence; This M<sup>r</sup>. *Deane* so behaved himselfe at a conference betwixt our Colonell and their Officers, as if he had come with absolute power from his Father in law over this party, Officers and Souldiers; their Lieutenant Colonell alledging they were sent thither by Sir *William Cole* upon information of our messenger, that we were blockt up with a strong campe about the Castle, and that his orders were to stay no longer with our Colonell then the next day, allowing them peremptorily 48 houres and no longer to be from their Garrison, they having in that time 40 long miles march through Woods and Mountaines to performe, let any man judge what service in the rest of that time was fit to be ventured on: upon this our Colonell advized them, since their private orders were such, contrary to the contents of Sir *Williams* Letters to him, that their best course was for that night, Commanders and Officers to refresh themselves with him in his Castle, taking order that their Souldiers should be quartered and provided for amongst his Souldiers in their cabbins, which their Officers would not yeeld to, much urging and opportuning our Colonell, that since they were come to him, and that they found the Fields cleare about him, as they had beene neere 3 Moneths before that, which they knew well enough whatsoever they pretended; that he should employ them upon some peece of service under his command before they returned: Our Colonell telling them, God had hitherto mercifully blest his undertakings with his owne handfull, that he was unwilling to engage the honour of what further service he intended up-

on such strict orders, the successe and event not fit to be limited with their time; Their Officers still importuning that night to be employed, whereupon upon their importunities, our Colonell resolved to try with the assistance of their strength, the taking of the Castle of *Drumahers*, wherein was Colonell *Owen o'Rourke*, with divers of the *Irish* Rebels of this County, hoping by that service to have relieved Sir *Robert Hanney* with his Lady and children, who had beene long Prisoners in that castle, thinking Sir *William Coles* men being so earnest, and once engaged in the hopes of compassing so honourable a peece of service, they would not for shame have left it, and carried themselves so meanely whilst we were upon the service as unworthily they did: Our Colonell not only in hopes, but full of confidence and probable reasons, marches in person with his Horse and Foote, leading them on neare the Castle walls, where he entered his Masons, Carpenters and other workemen with their instruments, who in short time did make a breach, where he placed some few Muskiteeres; The Rebels countermanding our work, play so hot upon our Muskiteeres as one of them were killed, another deadly shot, the rest were beaten from the worke, our Colonels men being wearied out, and having no seconding or assistance from Sir *William Coles* great number, their Lieutenant Colonell having no power to command them to relieve our men, whilst we were spending our lives and bloods in compassing this service; *Deane Berkeley* is publicly discouraging the Officers and Souldiers of Sir *William Coles* party, telling them they were not sent by their Colonell and Governour to take in Castles, and that their time limited by their orders was come, wishing them at their perils to draw homewards: Our Colonell much grieved and ashamed to be thus engaged with the hopes of their helpe; advised the *Deane* not to meddle with what was out of his Element, desiring to dispute the condition of our estate with the Lieutenant Colonell and other Officers of the Regiment. The *Deane* replied the Water was none of his Element, and yet he could swimme; and whosoever should command that party further, should speake to him. Our Colonell thus discontented, observing the unworthy carriage of their Souldiers, who whilst we were upon service, their Horse-men were rambling the Countrey, driving in Horses and Cowes, their Foote-men ruanning after Muttons, catching, killing and wasting under every bush; Our Colonell endeavouring after the loss of his men to perswade them only to lye that night about the Castle, knowing by the information of Prisoners, they could not possibly have held out a dayes, if they had not yeilded that night, as since we are informed they intended, and did that night, after



our Colonell marcht from thence, all of them leave the castle, leaving Sir Robert Hanney with his Lady and children lock't in a roome all alone; till the next day we were not likely to come any more, and that our *Fermannagh* friend had left us in such disorder, who intended to have carried with them not onely what Cowes and Horses they had gathered in the fore-mentioned manner whilst we were upon service, but also thought to have stolne with them divers of our Colonells cattell that morning they were to part; wherewith our Colonell being acquainted, perceived that their intended kindnesse and visit to him, was only to have made use of his person and strength to have prey'd our Countrey for them, which he held no fitting imployment for his personall service, considering how unworthily they had carried themselves towards him in the time of our distresse, and particularly in this last service; wherupon order was given by our Colonell, that not only his owne cattell should be rescued from them, but what else they had taken whilst he was in the Fields, telling their Captaines it was shame for them, they being 6 times our number, to offer to take any thing from us, since they have made us the worse and not the better for them: This much vexed *Deane Barkley*, who pretended a Horse to be taken from him, which he had catch't himselfe whilst we were upon service about the castle, our Colonell telling him, since he had deserved no better amongst us, he should carry no Horse from thence to bragge of; wishing the best 2 Horses in his stable, with 500 pounds in money had beene sent his Father in law and himselfe to *Eniskillen*, so that the Deane had not come to this march, who carried himselfe more like a Devill then a Deane: For the Captaines and Officers being ashamed of themselves, and observing our Souldiers to be but a few, and daily imployed, were perswaded by our Colonell for his Majesties service, and as a small supply for the safety of our castle and Garrison, to lend our Colonell for some time 5 men out of every one of their Companies, making up 30 men to him, and having received these men from the severall Captaines, our Lieutenant is commanded by the Colonell for the better grace and credit of their party, to march a part of their way with our Horse and Foote, and as our Lieutenant and they were a parting, *Deane Barkley* had like to have raised a mutiny, and have set their party and ours by the eares, threatening those men left with their Colonell by the Captaines consents, so as halfe of them at that instant presently ranne away from us with this unworthy carriage of Sir *William Cole* party by the Deane of *Cloghers* meanes. Our Colonell acquaints Sir *William Cole* by a Letter, hoping he would have resented his Sonne in lawes arrogant and presumptuous

carriage, and have sent us some supply of more men, but farre other-  
wise then we expected, Sir *William* in his answer, rather justified his  
Sonne in lawes actions, condemning and censuring his Captaines for  
the few men they had lent our Colonell, denying the former, and ac-  
knowledging in this Letter for what he sent his party, desiring that those  
few men which had not runne away with the rest by his Sonne in lawes  
threatnings, should be speedily returned him, and accordingly they were.  
And after this unworthy usage of Sir *William Cole*, our Colonels Soul-  
dier observing the liberty and disorderly government and discipline of  
those *Eniskillen* Souldiers, begun daily to runne away to *Eniskillen*,  
where they found shelter and imployment amongst their Captaines, to  
the great discomfort of our Colonell, and the hazard of us all.

August 8. A party of Foote is sent to the Countrey of *Cavan*, where we kil'd above  
20 Rogues, bringing home 2 Prisoners, and 7 or 8 score cōwes, and above  
200 Sheepe and Goates.

August 22 A party is sent towards *Ballyshannon* in the Countrey of *Donegall*, where  
we kil'd 17 Rogues, and burned many houses in that Countrey, and brought  
home a few cōwes.

August 25 Our Colonell being advertized that some 2 miles on this side *Sligo*, a  
guard of Horse-men did daily come forth with their Reapers of corne,  
and hoping to meete with them, this night a party of Horse and Foote  
was sent with some guides to lye in ambush for them, where having  
layne till noone, none appearing, that day our orders were to burne and  
prey what we could in that countrey, where we burned of severall Vil-  
liages, as *Donoly*, *Fowmoley*, *Coltrey* and *Lisduff*, with a many other strag-  
ling houses in the countrey, where we met with 3 or 4 score cōwes,  
and above an 100 Sheepe. By this time the countrey gathers, thinking  
to have rescued our prey and have beaten us, but it pleased the Lord  
so in his wonted mercy to stand for us, as that day we kil'd above  
40 of their best men, stript them all, brought home a Prisoner, re-  
lieved the castle of the *New Towne* with a share of our cōwes and  
Sheepe, divers of their best Gentry, the *Commodore*, and the *Harbours* being  
thus killed; We marche Horse and Foote towards the *Ross* in the coun-  
ty of *Sligo*, whence we brought a prey of neere 6 or 7 score cōwes,  
and above 300 Sheepe and Goates, where in our retreat we were set up-  
on by the greatest strength of the countrey, who were gotten into a great  
head to the Towne of *Sligo*, with intention that day to have layed a new  
Camp about our Castle, which this encounter diverted, we killing as  
was afterwards acknowledged by Prisoners neere 60 of their ablest men,  
with two of their famous Priests, *Connor & Harv*, and *Donnell & Lynch*,  
bringing

bringing home 7 Prisoners, 5 whereof were hanged the next day, one of them called Captaine *Cond Connour* and the other *Cormack & Hoy* who had beene a Minister amongst our Colonels Parishes, who since this Rebellion professed much loyalty, though a kindly traitour, his Father being Viccar generall in the county of *Sligo*, was some yeares agoe quartered in the Towne of *Sligo* for treasonable speeches against the King and State.

The Colonell this day heares divers shot of Ordinance towards *Sligo*, September 10. which put him in some hopes of some Army towards that place, or reliefe towards us.

This night a party of Horse and Foote was sent towards the Sea-coast September 11. to search for a Prisoner, for intelligences what shooting it was we heard the day before, where we fell on, there the countrey gathered together to oppose the landing of men, where 3 Ships lay within the harbour of *Sligo*; we gave the Rogues the Alarms, who fled all to a strength of an old Castle neare the Sea-coast, we brought home one Prisoner, of whom we learned that some of the *O'Donnells* and *O'Gallaghers* from *Ulster* were joyned with the county of *Sligo* Rebels to the number of 4 or 500. thinking those Ships carried men, Money, Vittuals and Ammunition for our reliefe; but it seemed their greater errand thither, was to see for a Barque which the Merchants of *Sligo* had loaded with severall commodities, which Barque the Ships met withall, and afterwards victualled themselves with corne and cattell from the *Oyster-Island*, where they landed some men, and burned divers houses, going to Sea afterwards, and as yet unknowne to us what they were.

This night we marcht againe into the County of *Sligo*, where within September 17. a little more then a mile to that Towne, we burnt a great village, *Ennagh* belonging to *Andrew Crean* the late Sheriffs of that County, we kild a number of Corne-carriers, and brought with us a Prisoner.

By reason of our daily service, never any wayes supplied or relieved October 2. now almost a yearesince the Rebellion-begunne, our Colonell in this extremity, thinkes fit this night to send the most part of his men towards *Eniskillen*, for some Armes and Ammunition which was sent thither by the conveniency of *Sir Robert Stewarts*, guarding the *Eniskillen* party from the *Derry*, wherewith *Sir Robert* worthily and lovingly advertized our Colonell from *Eniskillen* with what was left for him there with *Sir William Cole*, who had promised to give his best assistance for the speedy conveying and guarding of those necessities to us. But our party coming to *Eniskillen*, relying upon the assistance of *Sir William Coler* Regiment, not only for the guarding of our Armes and Ammunition, but also

also for the restoring and returning our runne-awayes which had beene unlawfully sheltered and employed amongst them. Our Officer demanding a guard for both those purposes, is offered the Armes and Ammunition if without a guard we would venture on them, our runne-awayes are so concealed and dispersed amongst them, as no helpe is made for us for them at all where there were 14 or 15 of them, Sir *William Cole* never appearing amongst us, but his gates shut against us, and his bridge drawne up as if we had beene Rebels come to take in his Castle, not offering us or our Officers so much as one bit of Bread, or cup of small Beere in his Castle or Garrison, our Colonell having formerly entertained 500 of his plentifully two nights though they wronged him; Thus not daring without a guard to venture upon the Kings Armes and Ammunition with so weake a party, so farre a march through Woods and Mountaines, we were forced with no small hazard to make what speede we could from whence we came; Our Colonell being advertized before our coming that the Countrey was strongly gathered together to have layed for us in our coming home, but we missed of our errand.

Most of this Weeke was imployed by us Men, Women and Boyes, in fetching in of Corne from the Rebels, from the bordering Counties of *Sligo* and *Fermannagh*, with what was neare us in our own Countrey, whereof it pleased God we had a good supply without the losse of a man, woman or child, though daily threatned with great bravadoes, yet they durst not cut any graine for themselves scarce on this side *Sligo* bridge, where abundance of Wheate, Rye and Barley rotted upon the ground for want of meanes and helpe for us to bring it from thence, which *Fermannagh* men might conveniently have done both for their owne supply and ours.

October  
19.

Seven of our Colonels men left at *New-Towne* for a guard within 4 miles of *Sligo*, upon little Naggs charged 50 or 60 reaping Corne neare *Sligo*, where they killed 4 of them, chased the rest, brought home a Prisoner, with 18 or 20 Horses and Carrs the Rogues had beene drawing Corne withall; The Prisoner being brought to our Colonell, informes him that 2 Congans of the *Ulster* Rogues, under the command of Captaine *Mannu Mac Egnahan* & *Donnell*, and Captaine *Ferdinando* & *Gallogher* were joyned with Captaine *Teig Mac Phelomy* & *Connors*, who lay at a Towne of & *Connors* called *Broad Culline*, some 12 miles from us, with intention shortly to have a sling at our Castle.

October  
21.

Upon this intelligence, our Colonell thinkes fit this night to send a party of Horse and Foote to prevent these Gentlemens visir, where we

met

met with them in the place our Prisoner informed us, having good sport with them for a while in killing neere 60 of them with all their 3 Capitaines, & Captain *Teig o Connours* Wife, his Brother having been formerly a Capitaine, and brought hither Prisoner was hanged, we brought home this day neere 200 cowes with a Prisoner, burning the Towne of *Broad Culline* belonging to *o Connour*, with divers other small Villiages neare it.

Our Colonell in expectation Sir *William Cole* and his Capitaines would now have used some meanes to have guarded his Armes, Ammunition and runne-awayes, as partly they promised within a weeke or 10 dayes of our last being with them, whereof seeing no performance, and our former store in that kind, as also our salt being almost quite spent, and understanding that Sir *William Cole* had lately beene supplied from *Balls Shannon*: In this extremity most of our company is againe commanded in a party to *Eniskillen*, with Letters to Sir *William Cole* mentioning our extremities, sending money by our Lieutenant for what salt could be had at any rate, either for love or money, which orders of Sir *William* intended no better to us then in our last march to that purpose, that we should our selves venture upon the Armes and Ammunition, we were at a stand every way, and leaving it to God and better times, to judge and revenge our usage upon these last Letters, our Armes and Ammunition are delivered us with a Letter to our Colonell, but no guard nor supply of salt to be had; Thus it pleased God to bring us safe home with what we received, still deteyning our run-awayes, making use of them.

Our Souldiers being weary after their sore march for our Ammunition, the weather being faire, all the Women and Boyes are sent towards *Dromahaire* to looke for corne; where with a small guard of Horse and some fire-locks, they marched where they met with store of corne, coming all laden home in spight of many Rogues that appeared to them upon severall hills.

We are this day likely to be surprized by neere a 1000 Rogues from the counties of *Fermannagh* and *Cavan*, under the command of Serjeane Major *Hugh Mac Bryan Mac Gwire*, thinking to have carried away all our cattell, presuming on their multitudes against our handfull, which they thought had not recovered their last sore march from *Eniskillen*, and having layen in ambush all night, expecting the drawing out of our cattell in the morning; but finding themselves discovered by 2 of our Horsemen who scoured the Fields before our cattell, these two men were so engaged amongst the Rogues that they were both killed, we taking the Alarme, rescued our Cattell, where we had a sound encounter with the Rogues, who were neere 10 times our number, thinking to have sva-



lowed us up, they giving the best fire, and coming the fierceliest for one charge, of most that we met withall this yeare: but after charge we did pepper them both with Horse and Foote, as that they made both a speedy and disorderly retreat, we breaking the legge of the only best Souldier and Captaine amongst them called *Charles Mac Gwier* who had long served the King of *Spaine*, and led on some 4 score of their Musketeeres most desperatly, and for his good service our Colonell to cure him, caused him to be carried on a barrow to the gallowes, where he rayled at us all for that he could not obtaine a Souldiers death, to be shot at a post, having formerly bene twice ransomed in two Kings services, *Spaine* and *France*, and this morning communding 300 proper men, not thinking that night to dye like a Dogge on *Munnar Hamiltons* gallowes, saying, he observed now God was against them, acknowledging themselves to be 10 times our number, and that it was the Devill brought him from his former honourable service to this base and miserable end. In this dayes service, we killed divers of the best men of both Counties, bringing home the heads of *Shane Roe Mac Gwier*, which Col: *Conaught Mac Flaherty Mac Hue*, sonne in law to *Mac A Name* who had bene long our Colonels Prisoner till this day, he was hanged for company with the Captaine and his sonne in lawes kind visit to him: We brought home Prisoners, *Phelomy Mac Peirce Mac Gwire*, who had bene Serjeant to the Serjeant Majors company, who escaped very narrowly, himselfe being enforced to quit his Horse, and to goe away sore wounded by the benefit of a boggie Wood neere by him. Thus it pleased God to enable us to deale with these Rogues.

November  
27.

A party is sent towards the borders of *Monter Kenny*, where we killed 14 or 15 Reges, burnt a many of houses, brought home a Prisoner with neere a 100 cowes.

November  
30.

Being in great distresse and want of Salt, Sir *William Cole* having used us as before is mentioned, our Colonell resolves this night to adventure a party towards *Ballsishannan* in hope there to be supplied: Our party marching in the night-time, is by the Rogues centryes discovered: Nevertheless we marcht freely to *Ballsishannan* before day, where Captaine *Folliot* hearing our Colonels trumpet and our Lieutenant, sends out the Boate for our Lieutenant, who delivering our Colonels Letter, desiring to be supplied with some salt, Captaine *Folliot* wishing he had sooner known our Colonels wants either of salt or Ammunition, there being a Barrells of Powder with Match and Lead proportionable sent from *Derry* to *Donegal* for our Colonels use, with the like proportion for Sir *William Cole*, who acquainted our Colonell therewith by his Letter, promising the  
like

like care should be taken by him for bringing our Ammunition from *Donegall* as of his owne, which Captaine *Folliot* said might as well, as easily have beene done if *Sir William Cole* had but writ so much to him, when by *Folliots* meanes his was brought to *Ballsblannan*, from thence by *Sir William Coles* party to *Eniskillen*; In which march they came within 6 miles of our Colonels castle, so it is easie to be judged what comfortable neighbourhood or assistance, either for his Majesties service or our safety we have had from *Eniskillen*: After disputing this particular with Captaine *Folliot* he shewes our Lieutenant what salt *Sir William Cole* had left him, being not above 4 Barrels, whereof he sent our Colonell two, who expected 20, sending money and Horses to that purpose with our party: by this occasion we brought with us for our Ladies use a good woman called *Unye Hale*; As we marched homewards, we could perceive as we came within 6 miles to our Garrison, the fields fowle on all quarters, which set us the better upon our guard, not daring to disperse our selves in gathering of Cattell which we observed to be driven in our wayes, thinking to have tempted us for the greater advantage against us, we having gotten neere 3 score which we drave before us till we came neare the borders of our Colonels land, where on a suddaine we were engaged amongst the Rogues, who had laid a strong ambush for us being within little more then push of Pike before we could perceive them, so as we were presently engaged to push of Pike before our Muskirees could give fire, which afterwards they did over our Pike-mens shoulders, the Rogues standing most desperately to it for almost half an houre, they being a pickt party of the best and ablest men that were of the borders of *Fermanagh* and *Leytrim*, most of them *O Flannigans*, *Mac Gwires* and *Mac Caffries*, from the Barrony of *Towro*, with the *Mac Glannaghies*, *Mac Glanbhliis* & *Freiles*, and *Mac Meaghens* of the *Daroge*, and *Rosfonter*, whereof we killed neere 3 score of their properest and best men, with their chiefe Commander, who had beene a *Spanish* Souldier, called *Bryan Darrogh* & *Tressey*, with divers others of their Gentlemen whom our boyes stript, bringing home a number of their cloathes and Armes; This glorious victory broke the hearts of the most daring dangerous men of both those Counties, to Gods holy name be the praise and honour, who thus mercifully delivered us without the losse of a man, though a many hurt with push of Pike and darts; The service was performed upon *S. Andrews* day, for the credit of our *Scottish* Patron.

A party is sent to scoure the Woods of *Rosfender*, and to search for corne, whence we brought above an 100 Cowes, our women and boyes being well loaden with good store of burnt corne, where we kild 3 Rogues and brought home a prisoner.

December  
25.

This night our Colonell intends a party of his Christians to be kept at *Ballymote*, where he hopes to burne of that Towne, not doubting by Gods former favour and mercy the performance thereof, had not a many of his Souldiers beene seduced to a most damnable plot, to have ranne away to Sir *William Cole*, being encouraged thereto by the report of a messenger our Colonell had lately come from thence, informing what liberty his Souldiers had there, who would not be commanded by Captaine or Officer, which damnable plot had so taken amongst a many of the party, that being marched but a small way, they pretend such faintnesse and wearinesse, that the like was never observed amongst them; not knowing what the mistery could meane, our Lieutenant is found contrary to his orders to march back againe, by this meanes was this service overthrowne, for which our Colonell thanks *Eniskillen*, on which retreat we encountred some Rogues, whereof we kil'd 6 or 7, and brought home neere 3 score Cowes, which were no very welcome present to our Colonell, in comparison of what service that night he expected to have beene done: This party no sooner came home, but our Colonell discovered the whole plot, where he tooke such course with them as he found the whole cause proceeded from *Eniskillen*, and the countenance was given his run-awayes there.

January 5.

A party is sent towards *Glanlogh* on the borders of *Adouunter Kenny*, where we kil'd divers Rogues, bringing home a Prisoners, above 200 Cowes, burnt a many houses in the Countrey, our women and boyes to a great number coming home loaded with store of burnt Corne.

January  
15.

We marcht into the County of *Cavan*, where in the *Laragane* we burnt some houses, kil'd some few Rogues, brought home a prisoner, and neere 9 score Cowes.

January  
16.

We were guided by a Prisoner to the County of *Cavan*, where on our march through *Glanfarne*, we apprehended a most Arch-rogue, called *Cormack o Quillan*, who had all that yeere stolne a many of our Colonels Horses; from the County of *Cavan* we brought this night neere 200 very faire Cowes, most of them as fat as if it had beene at *Michaelmas*; Thus we retreated through *Glanfarne*, killing some 5 Rogues, our women and boyes being loaded with Corne.

February  
4.

We marcht towards *Mounter Kenny*, where this night we kil'd some Rogues, tooke Prisoner the Wife of *Owen oge Mac Murray*, the chiefe man of that name, himselfe scaping narrowly, we brought home 3 score Beeves a many of them very fat.

Feb: 17.

We marcht towards *Dromabere*, hearing a great gathering was there making ready for a new Campe against us, where on our march through

a Wood within lesse then a mile to *Dromahere*, where their new Campe lay over against it at *Crowley*, we brought from those Woods some 3 or 4 score principall Beeves, killed some Rogues, and brought home 2 Prisoners, returning one of them being a wench of some 10 or 12 yeares old with a Letter of our Colonels *Irish*-Souldiers to their Countrymen in Campe, neare the Abbey of *Crowley*, the cobby of which Letter here followeth.

To the most unworthy cowardly Colonels, Captaines, and such like ragged Regiment now gazing for our Colonels  
*Easter Provision neare Dromahere and Crowley.*

**M**OST disloyall, dishonourable and unworthy Countrymen, We are much ashamed of your base cowardlinesse, that makes us so long expectt your threatening to steale away our Colonels Cowes. If you had followed the counsell of that perjured daistard Owen Mac a Bryan you had made more hast, who thought it time to runne away himselfe after we found him in a bush, whilst we were upon service against the Rogues your friends of Fermannagh, but if you make no great hast, our Cowes are few enough to eat till those be fat you now Herd for us neare Cromahere, where you lye destroying your owne poore Churles, and devising lyes to keepe them in heart, your selves keeping the Castle untill we rouse you up as we did the last morning, whilst we gave you a visit looking for our breake-fast. Tell Teig and Turlogh Mac A Nawe with their Nephew Hugh that would be O'Rourke, that their Sister his neece siars there so Beve in the Lent time, is like to bring their two Sisters to their Father, and whensoever they came within sight of his Castle, where the signe steale Mac A Nawe two Daughters upon Mannour Hamiltons Gallones, which worship may be timely challenged by the Brothers and Grand-child. Commend us to that Lowlie Lords Sonne Luke Taffe, and Bryan Mac Donnoghy his base Brother in law, who the last yeare lost their owne County, to helpe to steale our Colonels Cowes, which many a lusty lad and poore Churle with their Cowes and Sheepe of that County hath well paid for since, though they be Wise enough to keepe themselves from danger untill their turne come to doe sacrifice to our Gallones, which hath well flourished since they were here with their friends and Country-men in hope to doe themselves service at last; The Country cry out they will complaine to Owen Roe O'Neale for your carelesse blowing away your Ponder, blest and sent by the Pope to other purpose then to shoote at our Colonels Castle from the top of Benbowe, thinking your brags will carry it here as in other places, where you are not so well tryed or knowne; So Wishing your speedy conversion

which is downefall, but rather confufion, who have beene the aſſers and inſtruments in this abhominable, barbarous and deteftable Rebellion, adviſing your poore ignorant Country-men churles, to forſake longer following ſuch lying and ſeducing leaders, and truſt to our means for ever, ſo once more fare-well and be hanged,

Caſtle Hamilton this 17 of  
February, 1643.

Your loyall diſaffected Country-men  
Sname Roe Mac Roy, Edmond ô Kelly,  
Hugh ô Fellan, Bryan ô Fellan,  
Cormack ô Clery, Conner ô Fjany,  
Cum ceteris in Culnia.

March 25.

THIS day being Wednesday before Eaſter, having ſent no party abroad ſince the 17<sup>th</sup>. of Feb: in expectation of Sir William Coles men from Eniskillen, who our Colonell was informed were in great diſtreſſe there, both for Corne and Cattell, neither being to be had for venturing in that County, wherefore our Colonell advertiſed Sir William Cole and his Captaines, that here was faire hopes to be ſupplied, if they would with their party of 4 or 500 men, ſecretly haſt to us, who ſhould be ready to joyne with them for falling upon the Rogues campe, who lay neare and about the Caſtle of Dromahere, 6 miles from us, where the Rogues were plentifully provided in the Campe, both from the County of Sligo and this County, having above 7 or 8000 Cowes about this time grazing about them, and that countrey full of Corne, whereof both Eniskillen and we at this time ſtand in great need. The Captaines of Eniskillen in their answer, acknowledge the extremity of their wants and our Colonels invitation, but are in ſuch confuſion and diſorder amongſt themſelves, as they neither denied to come or promiſe any thing plainly, when we deſerting, all this while unwilling to ſeare their Campe, or venture our handfull againſt 10 or 12 Companies commanded by Colonell Lucas Taſſe, and his Lieutenant Colonell Bryan Mac Donnoghby, with the aſſiſtance of Colonell Owen ô Rowke, who lyes in the Caſtle of Dromahere, but now ſeeing no appearance of Eniskillen men, and our owne Cowes and proviſion growne very ſhort againſt Eaſter, our Colonell is neceſſitated to venture with his owne ſmall party, which adventure it pleaſed the Lord this day ſo to bleſſe, as to enable us to bring from the very Caſtle walls of Dromahere neere 400 Cowes, with pretty ſtore of Sheepe, Goates and Marcs, with ſome ſmall ſupply of Butter and Meale, ſighting our ſelvs through a great body of the Rogues, where we kild divers, hurt above 40, as appeares by one of their Officers Letters found in their Lieutenant Coks pocket, being kild by us 3 dayes after, chaſt the reſt into Woods and boggs,



boggs, bringing home our prey, and 3 Prisoners without the loss of a man, one Muskiteere only hurt on the shoulder, so that if *Eniskillen* men had beene advised by our Colonell, we had undoubtedly had a faire pull of at least 7 or 8000 Cowes, with abundance of Wheate and other corns besides: what good service might have beene done upon the Rogues, how they can answer the neglect of this and other such like service, whereunto they have severall times beene invited and advertized by our Colonell, both for his Majesties service, the common good, and their owne particular relife, as more clearly it shall appeare hereafter, God sending us aide and indifferent Judges to heare us both.

Being *Easter*-eve, our Hay for Horses growing short by reason of the number we and our Colonell kept within the Castle all Winter, he is forced to ventur 24 of his trowse Geraldines to graze neare 2 miles from the Castle, with a guard of neere 50 of his men to take charge of his Plow-horses and his Cowes, hoping till after Easter the Rogues being so lately beaten by us, they would not have ventured, as this day they did, a great body of them, appeare within a short mile to our Castle, before our Centries descried them; We taking the Alarme, most of our best Horse and best Pike-men being so farre from us, divers others of our Souldiers being imployed about fire-wood and such like necessaries, so as we are not able in this extremity to make up above 50 fighting men, if so many, with which number we were commanded to endeavour the rescuing of the rest, guarding our Horses and Cattell, having no other way or meanes to save all or loose all; where it pleased the Lord so to direct us boldly to march towards the Rogues as they were adva'cing towards our Geldings and Cattell, perceiving our small number straglingly draw together, they with speed advance towards us, marching in 3 divisions, their first division being led-on by their Lieutenant Colonell *Bryan Mac Donnoghy*, and on the head of his owne Company Captaine *Francis Taffe*, and Captaine *Cormack & Hares* Company, which division consists of 44 Muskiteeres besides Pike-men, the second division is led only by their Serjeant Major *Tigheagh & Dunde*; In the head of his owne Company Captaine *David & Dunde*, and Captaine *Bryan & Hares* Company consisting of 42 Muskiteeres; The third division lead-on by Captaine *William Tyrrell*, on the head of his owne Company Captaine *Bryan Mac Swyne*, and Captaine *Roger & Connors* Company consisting of 45 Muskiteeres besides Pike-men, which multitude thinking to have swallowed up our handfull, perceiving us draw up without Horse-men, thinking to cut those off before we joyne with the rest, their Lieutenant Colonell leading on most furiously along a Bridge, over a River, at the foote of the hill

April 1.

hill where our men were drawne up, we perceiving them all crosse the River, marching in a loose body towards us, giving fire upon us, we seeme a little to retreat, where we got the benefit of a ditch for all our Muskiteeres to play out of, whereupon the Rogues imagining we had taken the retreat, did with great shoutes crye out as if they had already beaten us; but our Muskiteeres did from that ditch so pepper them, that it is not to be beleevd what a sudden alteration our handfull made amongst their multitude, our Pike-men flying in upon them, where one Mr. *John Connigham* himselfe was deadly shot with a Mukit bullet in the body, who lived 2 dayes after: Thus having kil'd their Lieutenant Colonell, who fought most desperately as ever man did, divers being with shot and Pike beaten to the ground, yet did he fight upon his knees, pity so great courage should have beene in so Arch a Traitour, who was thought to have beene one of the greatest fire-brands of *Connaght* in this Rebellion, and the bloudest tyrant against our Clergy-men, having caused 3 of them to be murdered, Mr. *Thomas Fullerton*, Mr. *William Li-Howne*, and *Patrick Dromond*, who were bloudily kil'd by his orders, when they first lay about this Castle; Yet blessed be God this day who enabled us so to deale with them, as we put the Rogues after killing their Lieutenant Colonell, to such a disorderly and confused retreat over the River, where numbers of them threw one another into it, so as it is almost incredible to speake or write what number of proper personable men as any *Ireland* affords, were kil'd that day by our weake handfull, to God alone be the glory. The next day our Colonell sending forth to search the Fields, to see if the Rogues had dar'd in the night time to carry off any of their dead bodies, but it did not appeare they durst meddle with any; whereupon order was given for burying of them all, which was 2 dayes labour for 20 men, there being neere 3 score found and buried, besides divers which had beene carried away by the River, there being then a great flood in it. Thus it pleased God to continue his former favours and mercy towards us, with this great and miraculous victory without the losse of a man of ours, other then Mr. *Connigham*, our Women and Boyes coming home loaden with Muskets, Pikes, Swords and Skeanes, enough to Arme 7 or 8 score men, and in hope to get more that were drowned in the River. And thus God hath done for us without the help of *Eniskillen*, whom we long waited for to have contributed for their supply and reliefe, and all these men that were found kil'd, within Musket shot of our Castle.

*A copy of such Letters and Papers as were found in the Lieutenant  
Colonels Bryan Mac Donnoghy his Pockets, being killed near  
Mannour Hamilton Castle, on Saturday, April 1, 1643.*

S I R,

I Beleeve you have heard of the great losse we have sustained this morning by Mannour Hamiltons Souldiers, I pray you to morrow come away your selfe and dispartch provision for my Company, who must fast this night; your owne Company is extreame weake here; therefore have all the rest sent for speedily, that they may be compleat to morrow to march. This is all for the present, I rest

From the Campe at Crewly,  
March 29, 1643.

Your loving Brother  
Co: Lucas Taffe.

Noble Sir, we are straitly commanded by our Colonell to have all our Company to the full number here this night; and especially he doth desire your owne speedy repaire hither; and without you send for all your men upon sight hereof, and give them strait charge to be here this night with us, you will otherwise be ashamed for ever, seeing we are called upon speedy service: For my owne part, I thought you did regard the losse of me more then thus, to leave me here all this while unappointed with Souldiers and Ammunition; for without Gods great helpe, I had never come off alive from the last mornings service we had with Mannour Hamiltons Souldiers: I pray you as you love your owne credit and my life, send me the rest of the Souldiers; otherwise, if you will let me goe upon service without them, by Christ I will never be an Officer under your command more. We have not a pound of Powder amongst us all left: Your 8 Musketeeres played their parts most gallantly, and discharged more shot then halfe of the Regiment; but our Pike-men plaid the jade with us. Hugh & Hara is shot in the Foote, and 40 more of our Regiment wounded, 2 only killed, none of them yours: This is the hurt we received yesterday morning; so leaving all to your best care and discretion, I rest

From the Campe of Crewly,  
the 30<sup>th</sup> of March.

Your obedient Lieutenant  
Cormack Mac Donnogh,

G

S I R,

STR,

I Shall desire that you march towards the falling in of night, withall the Companies on this side of the water, where I shall meete you: you are to leave one Pike-man out of every Company, to guard the Baggage left at *Crewly*, who you are to require to keepe good watch upon such things as shall be left with them, and not to spoile any thing belonging to the Abby, as they shall answer it at their perils; so till meeting I rest

*Drumkhere, March 31.*

Yours

Co: *Lucas Taffe.*

*Bellisfadera the 12<sup>th</sup>. of March, 1642.*

WHereas severall grievous complaints are daily exhibited unto us, that the under-named persons doe daily commit severall incursions, massacres, robberies, outrages and many other enormities and pillages within the County of *Sligo*, contrary to his Majesties Lawes, the severall acts of the supream Provinciall and County Counsell to the contrary provided and enacted; These are therefore in his Majesties name, to will and require you Lieutenant Colonell *Bryan Mac Connagh* and Serjeant Major *Teig Reagh ô Dowda*, to attach the bodies of the under-named persons, and to that purpose, to command such of the Forces of the County of *Sligo* as they shall thinke fit; wherein all the Captaines, Officers and private Souldiers of the Forces of the said County, are hereby required and authorized, such of them as shall be hereto required, to be aiding and assisting unto these, Lieutenant Colonell and Serjeant Major *Teig Reagh ô Dowda*, as they shall receive directions; and in case that the under-named persons shall not willingly suffer themselves to be apprehended; then the said Lieutenant Colonell and Serjeant Major are to deale with them like common enemies, as well by death as otherwise; And these Lieutenant Colonell and Serjeant Major *Teig Reagh ô Dowda*, are likewise required to commit the bodies of the under-named persons, being so attached, unto the Castle of *Ballynesfada*, and there to leave them in safe custody, untill they receive further directions from us: And the Captaines, Warriours and Souldiers now garrison'd at *Ballynesfada*, are to be obedient, aiding and assisting to the said Lieutenant Colonell and Serjeant Major *Teig Reagh ô Dowda* in the execution of the premises as they

they shall receive directions, whereof you and every of you may not fail  
at your extreate perils, *Dat' Anno superiore dicto.*

|                            |                                |
|----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| Capt: Charles o Connour,   | Shane o Hart, Teig o Hart,     |
| Capt: Hugh o Connour       | Rore o Hart, Gilparick o Hart, |
| Owen Mac Roe o Connour,    | Robe o Binningham,             |
| Redagh Mac Beryan o Hart,  | Teig o Connour Sligo,          |
| Donnell Mac Rery o Connor, | Farrall o Gara,                |
| Owen o Connour,            | Nony o Hara,                   |
| Cahill deff Mac Teigh,     | Andrew Crear,                  |
| Boy o Connour,             | Phalem o Connour.              |

SIR,

YOU may perceiue by the Lieutenant Generalls Letter, how I am com-  
manded to waite in these parts, God knowes how long; but no lon-  
ger then after I know the distribution of this Army; If greater occasion  
then now appeares unto us require it not: though loath I was to be a sui-  
ter in my owne behalfe for my repairing thither. Truly I have done in  
that particular more then behoved me, therefore the managing of that  
Regiment untill further directions is left to your care to dispose of, to use  
and imploy them in all manner of defence or offence, as it to you shall  
seeme most advantagious to his Majesties service, and the preservation of  
the Countrey. I shall also desire you to addresse your selfe to the Coun-  
sell of the County, as well to participate of such occurrants as I trans-  
mitted unto them, as also to forward the execution of some particulars  
concerning the maintenance of your Forces, and the speedy levying there-  
of, imploying in your absence Serjeant Major *Donda* to over-see and  
command the Regiment, and to expedite all Country affaires: I hold it  
requisite that one well armed Captaine should always reside within the  
County. I pray Sir advertise me by the bearer, how or in what restraint, *O-  
liver o Hara* was kept by the Sheriffe since my coming away, I did expect  
that by this he would cry *mea Culpa*: but seeing he stands so stiffly upon  
his justification, I promise him that I shall desire Justice against him,  
as also against the Sheriffe, if he have not gone according to his dire-  
ctions. I pray cause Serjeant Major *Donda* to be paid for his Ponder,  
according to my promise unto him, and let me heare at large from you,  
whether any man offers disobedience amongst you, that we might take  
course with them: I hope you will not forget to rid poore *Carberry* of  
the insolent power of the Northerne, in which case I pray you be advi-



sed by your County Counsell : The enclosed of the Lord of Elphin, I pray your endeavour if your occasion will admit you the leasure to accomplish his desires therein ; This being all for the present, I am

*Tues* the 26<sup>th</sup> of Feb:

Your faithfull Brother  
Lucas Taffe.

*For my worthy Friend Mulmurry Mac Ternan Esquire,  
Found in his Pocket being kil'd and stript.*

**K**Ind Gossip, the only thing that keeps me from you, is the report that Sir Frederick Hamilton promised to come last night, or this day to see me at this Castle, which report hath made me and all mine to watch all night : I pray you have a care if you heare any such thing, to march hither with all post-hast with your Company ; And so I bid you farewell, and rest

Dromabere Castle,  
Feb: 21, 1641.

Your owne faithfull Gossip  
Owen & Rourke.

*A Copy of such Letters as were sent by the Rebels to our Colonell and to his Lady, thinking to have terrified her ; and a Copy of other Papers and Writings found in the Pockets of their Priests, Friars and Captaines, being killed and stript.*

Madam,

**I** Am sory it was never my fortune to be acquainted with your Ladiship, though much desired : Now out of the respects I beare unto your Ladiships family, I cannot but be grieved to thinke on the trouble that is like soone to fall on you. We have here 23 Companies that are now ready to march towards you, and 15 Companies more upon their march from the uppermost part of this County, and the County of Maio. I have for your Ladiships sake intreated the Captaines of the Army to write unto Sir Frederick, I should be right glad that he would imbrace the conditions sent him, for there are many resolved to loose all their lives, or they will have Sir Frederick's head, notwithstanding their friends he hath prisoners. For the Army doth protest and sweare, they will have Sir Frederick and Mannour Hamilton Castle, though it cost the lives of thousands, and the lives of his Prisoners, rather then to suffer him longer to remaine within their bosomes, especially carrying himselfe as he hath done towards them. It is but in vaine to strive against the streame.

If I had not been well assured that the Army now in Armes and ready to march, are too strong against any powers this Kingdome can make, or readily come to helpe you, and that which incourageth us most to take Armes, is the Justnesse of our cause, which is for the maintenance of his Majesties Prerogatives, our Liberties and Religion, which is so much trodden under-foote, that most of all this Kingdome are resolved to sacrifice their lives in defence thereof; And if we get not our demands of Sir Frederick, take it on my word he will soone repent it: I should be very sorry that any hurt should come to your Ladiship. I make no doubt but you know how neere a kinne, which you will by the bearer, if you doe not, however I will remaine

From our Campe at Sligo.  
December 13, 1691.

Your loving Obedient Servant  
Patrick Plunkett.

*This Paper was found in Mulmurry Mac Tervans Pocket.*

**W**E have agreed, that a supply of 200 Souldiers shall be presently prest and taken up in the Barrony of *Dromahere*, for the service now in hand against *Manner Hamilton* Castle, according to the division hereafter expressed, witnesse our hands, this last of *January*.

*Owen O Rowrke.*

**T**He two septs of *Chlamloghins* and *Clammurages* are to maintain four score souldiers, *Monuterkenny* and *Ballymackenagh* thirty souldiers, *Killargy* and *Killimurry* are to maintain fifty souldiers, *Leeland* and the parish of *Dromlasse* are to maintain forty souldiers.

*This Paper was found in a Priests pocket, being killed and snipt.*

**W**Hereas we are certified that the unexpected insurrection did arise in defence of our good faith, and holy Mother, the Catholick *Romane* Church, and of his Majesties prerogative Royall, both which being lately intended by the Protestants of *England* and *Ireland*, to be abolished, wherefore *F Teig O Connour Sligo*, Collonell of the *Irish* Regiment for the county of *Sligo*, doe hereby command all the inhabitants of the parish of *Cadbury*, as you are naturally obliged to obey the *Romane* Church, to pay or cause to be payed unto father *Connor O Hary* Pastour of the said parish, all such tithes and other duties as he can find out were unpaid to the former Minister of the said parish, and in failing hereof I promise to assist him as I best can, as witnesse my hand this 17 of *January*.

Noble

Noble Sir *Frederick Hamilton*, I cannot forget that in times past there was a mutual correspondency of love, and affectionate friendship between my father, and your self, which on your part hath been approved by severall of your favourable courtesies, which hath left such an obligation upon me his sonne and heire, as I cannot but wish your happiness: before your hurt. Though the generall matter now in hand requires the contrary. I am perswaded you cannot but know or imagine, as true it is, that there is so fast an union made and concluded amongst us all the *Romane* Catholics, as members of one body, we have vowed to help one another, so that if one member receiveth hurt, the other must apply his best endeavours for the cure, all tending to the defence of our Christian Religion, and the preservation of his Majesties most Royall power & prerogatives, being the chief reasons of this our most Christian quarrell: Therefore, when I saw the most miserable distractions & afflictions which my most neare Cousins, and Neighbours of this county suffered under this pretence by your cruelty and meanes, my heart could not for the brotherly Christian charity I owe unto them, besides the severall invitations and perswasions of many of my friends and alliance, but make this present expedition. I have here with me lying about me, besides a many more drawing towards you for the places to seek redresse and revenge of these great miseries and calamities you have put upon them, which I wish to have in the gentlest sort I may. Wherefore, I thought fit to acquaint you more for your own good, then any end of mine, That I am here strong enough from the county of *Sligo*, having all the best, and chiefeest men of that county about me, besides the strength of the county of *Leytrim* under the command of my Cousins, the *O'Rourke*s whom you have much harmed, who have procured by their friends from the county of *Maio* these great supplies, daily drawing towards us, so that you will find it impossible for you to resist, wherefore out of my unfeigned good will do advise you: that before we go to extremity, you will take the best course for your own safety and relief, which great Potentates and Nobles are not ashamed to doe, when they are in the like extremitie as we hold you to be, in desiring that you and we may agree upon quarters & a Cessation of Arms, untill Articles propounded upon either side may be agreed upon, I desire to be free from giving way to shed your blood, if otherwise I may compass my pretences: If you will not make use of this friendly offer instantly without delay, and before the county of *Maio* Gentlemen joyn with me, I feare they being so near and great in numbers; I shall hardly stay their hands from seeking revenge for killing and hanging so many of their kinsmen, the *O'Rourke*s, and others of their friends of this County, whom you have destroyed, herein I will

will expect your present answer, and desire that our messengers on both sides may freely passe without harm or danger, as is usual in all leaguers, Meane time I shall remain

From our Camp near

Yours at pleasure and hearts desire  
Manner Hamilton, March the 15 1641 Teig O Connour Sligo Collonell.

*This Letter answered thus.*

**Y**Our loyalty to your King, your faith to your friends once broke, never more to be trusted by me, but revenged as God shall enable the hands of him who was loving to your loyall Predecessours, whose curse will contribute to your destruction, for extinguishing the memory of their loyalties, Thus I rest with contempt and scorn to all your base bragges.

Your scourge if I can.

F. H.

*For Captain John O'crean, Allowed to himself and company  
nineteen quarters of Land, in the parish of Collorey.*

March 22.  
1641.

**B**Y the consent of the Collonell Teig O Connour Sligo, who appointed us to allot unto every Captain of his Regiment, that are now encamped about Manner Hamilton, and to stop the incursions of that Garrison we hold and think fit, that every Captain to this purpose shall levy, and take up in every quarter of Land that is allowed for his share fourty nine quarters of meale unprest, and twelve pence of money every week, for the relief of their companies, and for so doing this shall be their sufficient Warrant, as witness our hands, the day and yeare above written.

*Andrew Crean, Teig by O Connour  
Connor Oge O hars* These last two  
killed, and these Papers found as they  
were stript.

We did beat them from their Camp finding this Paper in one of their dead mens pockets.

April 11.

**V**Hereas there hath severall warrants issued for the levying of three score quarters of meale, in every quarter of land of a third levy, which three severall levies is within the Barrony of Carbery, for the maintaining of the souldiers out of the said Barrony now encamped about Manner Hamilton, out of which every souldier is to have for his meales whilst

Comiratus  
Sligo.

whilst he is there fourteen quarts in meale, and twelve pence in money for every week and more. And in as much as we find that there is meale already allotted as is well able to maintain the said Army till the 15 of *May* next. We doe therefore hereby require all Captaines, Collectours to surcease and keep their hands from collecting any more meale or money then what was allotted in every quarter for the said three levies, whereof the severall Collectours and Captains according to a former warrant, are to meet by a day to give up an exact account thereof. Dated at *Sligo*, the 4 of *April*, 1642.

*Teig O Connor Sligo, Andrew Crean*  
Captain *Conn O Connor* since hanged there.

*For the Lieutenant Collorell Brian Mr. Donnogh*

SIR,

I Hope you have taken course in my absence to keep some of your forces in action here, least tergiversation being ill construct by the gentry of this County, not onely having deprived them of your own aid, but such assistance as they expected from *Maio*, or thus delaying will produce no better effect then ruine and destruction, being now nearer unto it, then ever it hath been formerly. The County of *Galway* Gentlemen have of late petitioned to the Earl of *Clanrickard* against the Lord *Forbus*, who hath already committed severall acts of hostility, that his Lordship might perswade him to part quietly with his forces, or to give them leave to stand for their own defence, the answer of which was transferred to this day at *Longreagh*, where *Clanrickard* my Lord President, and the chief of that county meet, and from thence my Lord President goeth to *Galloway*. Sir, what their resolution will be I cannot yet imagine, but feare much so generall a meeting will produce a strange issue tending to our deserved ruine, which I commit to a higher power to prevent. then any commission that comes from Parliament. The County of *Maio* forces is gathered to *Seabruell* and intend to camp upon the confines of that County. My Lord of *Maio* sent to us for aide, being well known to his Lordship how able we are to spare any, he was pleased to write plainly if we had not in retribution of their losse susteined in these parts paralleled his courtesies, that we should expect no more aid from thence. A fair excuse, or a fit denyall, sure the small forces we have here are in greater danger, then that County which needeth not feare any forraigne invasion: we are I protest unto you not above three hundred in number, not like henceforth to be at any rest or quietnesse. The Powder bestowed upon *Connaught*, is brought partly



to the county of *Maio*, and some to the County of *Galloway*, resolved upon not to be touched, untill our Provinciaall County distribute it as they think fittest, when the Counsell is held. I cannot well assure you, the report of the arriving of shipping at *Sligo* give we no little occasion of feare which I pray with expedition to certifie me. And if my own repair, be any whit necessary upon the landing any new supplies, I will not fail to post night and day unto you. I hope your Counsell have agreed to meet often, being very necessary, especially now, I doubt not they will be soon called upon to meet when ever I receive intelligence of the full & true resolutions of the county of *Galloway*, I have seen late intelligence of *England* of *July* date, concerning the King & Parliament, who are at great distance, the Lord of heaven continue them so, untill I send them an absolution. The powder made at *Laughlin* is as good as any is in *Ireland*, we shall want no more of that commoditie, so we be furnished with all other necessaries. I pray Sir, let my mother use all the hast she can to have the ditch wholly scoured about *Ballymore* Castle, before the bad weather overtakes it, I pray that I may have every second day what occursents those parts afford you. In the intervall I present my service to our friends and rest

Castle Keagh the 18  
of August

Your loving Collonell  
Lucan Taffe.

This letter was found in a Priest's pocket that day we killed above 80 in the County of *Sligo*.

*The names of such as have been hanged at Mannor Hamilton by  
Martiall Law, since the beginning of this Rebellion*

|             |                           |              |                          |
|-------------|---------------------------|--------------|--------------------------|
| Decemb 3.   | Turlogh mac Clever.       | Septemb. 10. | Captain Con O Connors.   |
|             | Neale Mac Gluan.          |              | Credough Mac Derno.      |
|             | Manns O Gallagher         |              | Cor Mac O Hay had been   |
|             | Manns O Hoy               |              | a Minister.              |
| Decemb. 12. | Phelomy Duff Mas Cob      |              | Teig Mac Goane.          |
| Decemb. 18  | Gelpatrick O Kan          | Septemb. 4   | Brian Mac Duffe.         |
|             | Brian O Moriice           | Septemb. 17. | * Donough O Donnde.      |
| Decemb. 20. | Turlogh O Cally.          | Septemb. 19  | Grady O Dangan.          |
| January 1.  | Brian O Cannan.           |              | Patrick O Neale.         |
|             | Con O Rowk the            | Febru. 2     | John Wytherfin.          |
|             | Collonells brother        | Febru. 11.   | Donough boy O Bane.      |
| January 8.  | Connour mac. Shane Glaske |              | Newe Mac Laughlin.       |
|             | Mac Laughlin the chief    | Feb 12.      | Owen Mac Thomas Murray.  |
|             | of his name.              | Febru 26.    | Ferrall Mac Kegan.       |
| Aug. 23.    | Owen Mac Garraghy.        | Mar. 13      | Turmultagh Mac Garraghy. |
|             | Cormack O Cornan.         |              | subberiffe deputy of     |
| August 28   | Shane Mac Skerrie.        |              | Donoughall.              |
|             | John Space.               |              | Cormack O Hopes wife.    |

|           |                                |            |                        |
|-----------|--------------------------------|------------|------------------------|
|           | neare kinswoman to O Connors.  | July 12    | James halfpenny.       |
| April 18. | Hugh O Hart                    | July 26    | Hugh O Foy             |
|           | Donnell O Hart.                | Novem. 4.  | Garrat mac A Nao       |
|           | Grany ny Kene.                 |            | chief of his name.     |
| May 1.    | Phelanymack A Nao              | Nov. 14.   | Cap. Charles mac Ombie |
|           | Gilpatrick O Mullane           | Nov. 16.   | Phelanymack Pierre,    |
| May 16.   | Laughlin O Degannian           | Decem. 22  | in Gwyre.              |
| May 21.   | Call boy mac Garry.            | January 7  | Edmond Mac Gawan,      |
|           | Donnogh O Hart                 |            | Turlagh Reagh O Moz-   |
| May 23.   | Hugh O Phin.                   |            | relan.                 |
| June 9.   | James Rock the chief Murderer, | February 3 | Brian O Cuir.          |
|           | of the British at Sligo.       |            | Cormack O Cuir.        |
|           | Donnell O Clery.               | Februar 18 | Cormack O Quillen.     |
|           | Hugh O Cullen.                 |            | Kahill mach Kan.       |
|           | Glahy O Regan.                 |            | Donnel ma G'annaghy,   |
|           | James W'jersstin.              |            | William mas Kengaa.    |

*Sir Robert Hannay his Letter and others being Prisoners at Sligo  
and sent to Donabere Castle.*

*Honourable Sir,*

**W**E the undernamed persons having suffered in all our whole estates and being upon our banishment out of this Kingdome, under the safe conduct of Mr. *Edmond Bonrk Ragagh*, and Mr. *Walter Bonrk of Ardagh* towards the North, but most opposed at Castle Connour Ennis Cromne Eiscagh bridge, *Dawne Neale*, *Armagh* and *Tomler* go by severall bands of armed men purposely set for our lives, were not their extreame violence suppressed by the discretion, worth and care of those two Gentlemen, and we taken prisoners by the *mac Swines*, brought before *O Connour Sligo*, where we now remain, and intended to be sent unto the Castle of *Dromakeere* to be kept untill you Sir deliver such prisoners of the *O Roukes* and others as you have in your custodie, or to be dealt with, as you doe unto them. Sir, you are nobly disposed, so that in honour we hope the meanes of reliefe, being now in your self, you will not suffer us to perish, who will ever remain, Sir,

Yours truly, obliged to leave you

*Robert Hannay, Andrew Adore,*

*Alexander Montgomery,*

*William Liffon, Thomas Fullerton,*

**T**Hese be the names and number of Prisoners, *Sir Robert Hannay*, his Lady, his two daughters, two boyes, two men, and a Gentlewoman  
Mr.

Mr. *Andrew Adair*, and his wife and sisters sonne, Mr. *Alexander Montgomery* his wife and eldest sonne, Mr. *William Liſton* his wife and daughter, Mr. *Thomas Fullerton* and his wife, *Patrick Deomond*, Mr. *Adair* man.

Sir after the writing of this Letter we are brought to *Dromaberry*, and order left by the Capitaines to bring us unto the Camp at *Maunor Hamilton*, where we must suffer death, if those Prisoners with you Sir, be not delivered.

---

*Sir Fredrick Hamiltons answer to the Letter afore-mentioned.*

SIR,

I Have received your Letter, whereby I am given to understand of your treacherous surprisall, notwithstanding of your safe conduct promised; for the which I am very sorry, but such is the treacherous falshood of those disloyall traytours generally throughout this whole Kingdome, that hath made me vow and sweare in the presence of Almighty God, that I will never give nor take quarter with them, or any of them, yea though my own sons who have descended from my own Loins, were in your estate, I had rather they should die gloriously for the cause of Christ, then I should so abase my self as to deal with such traitours to God and his Majesty. Thus beseeching God Almighty to strengthen and encourage you, that you may continue constant till it shall please God to give you deliverance either by life or death. In the meane time I am perswaded that they will use you with no worse measure, then their Prisoners, who were apprehended by me in the action of Rebellion are used: So recommending you to God, I rest,

*Castle Hamilton*

*January 19. 1641.*

Your very loving friend

*F. H.*

---

*By Letters from Dublin dated 26 of July and 2 of August  
from a good hand.*

**T**He Lord Marquess of *Ormond* as I heare, hath now writ to the State here, to send him Bread and Cheefe for 5000 men, for that he hath no victuals for his Army, and yet we hoped here, that those Countreies would have afforded plenty of victuals, and these sending still abroad, we being in such want at home, makes our necessities desperate. There came lately to Towne here, Lieutenant Colonell *Scuteger*, sonne unto the late President of *Albanster*, who came through *Kilkenny*, having a passe

for his safety from the Viscount *Muskerry*; he saith that at *Kilkenny* he saw and dined with the Popes Nuntio who is come thither, and hath brought to the Rebels 80000<sup>lb</sup>. This is likewise reported by others, who say they saw him there; and it is much beleevd here, *Sentlegers* businesse hether as I heare was about the Cessation, to know by what authority it is to be done, and how farre proceeded in; what will be the issue of that businesse is not yet knowne.

Our Ammunition here growes very scarce, and if we be not suddainely relieved from *England*, it will be an unanswerable reason for a Cessation; and then we must either submit to the mercilesse mercies of these cruell Rebels, and to their treachery, or else come for *England*, and indure these miseries and afflictions there which God shall please to lay upon us.

Remember this, that that pretious thing time; if it be over-past but a little before reliefe comes to us, the Kingdome is not like to continue in his Majesties government as it now is, but as the Rebels will please to have it: we now heare that *Preslon* hath disperfed his Army, and lodged his Ordinance at *Sir Luke fitz Gerald*s at *Tecrohon* in *Meath*, that he wants Carriages and Ammunition, so that if we could prosecute this Warre, and had provisions before *Preslon* had againe furnished himselfe, there would be good hopes of putting a speedy end to this Warre, which otherwise will prove long, tedious, and of excessive charge, and weary out all the *English*s.

We now begin to despaire of any help from the Parliament, hearing how unable the Parliament is to send any, and that his Majesty to farre prospers, that we are in hope to have help only from him. We are now like a Candle burnt out, and the snuffe in the socket giving a little light some times, but ready every moment to perish for want of a new supply of oyle.

Upon Sunday morning about one of the clock, there was a great Alarum here in *Dublin*, the Rebels had got into New-streete, and came up as farre as the pottle, and had pillaged divers houses before we could make resistance, and set some thatch houses on fire, some 20 one and other, the certainty is not so well knowne though we dwell here, as I can assure you of it: the Rebels were as some say who saw them 300 Horse, a great Company of Foote, but how many we know not, (God be blessed) they were beaten out, and about 20 of them killed, and some 6 or 7 of ours, they presently after burnt a great deal of Hay made up in Cocks about *Ragarr* and *Rafarnam*, and a night or two after about *Donna brooke*, our Army being abroad we could not follow them, but thought our selves well that the City was kept safe, being much afraid of and suspitions the Papists,

Papists within us, though I cannot heare of any prooffe against any in particular.

The victuals which were brought us by *Barlet*, are long sithence spent, and we are now againe in as ill case for want as ever, our Army being the greatest that ever we sent out since this rebellion; they went neere *Edenderry* which was given up to us, but all pillaged, and the *Crohan* which likewise they had taken, they left and burnt it, since which time our Army without doing any thing more, came back to *Kilcock*, where they have since been for some dayes past in great necessities, and very many of our Souldiers dying in the Fields for hunger, so that we feare it will consume in a short time to a small number, though in these necessitous times we account them as though their numbers were full: The *Marquess* came the last Thursday from them to *Dublin*, and yesterday went back to them againe; and as it is said here, the Army for a great part of them shall be placed in our Garisons, and the rest come to *Dublin*.

*Brent* is come over againe with some Letters out of *England*, which were as I heare delivered yesterday, the *Vicetreasurer*, and *Sir John Temple*, and *Sir Robert Meridish* were committed to the Castle, and the Master of the Wards as I heare, should also have bin so committed but that he is sick, and so his committall respited till he recover his health. So I rest.

Your very loving Friend

S. M.

---

To my worthy Friend William Lenthall Esquire, Speaker of the  
Honourable House of Commons in England, to be speedily  
communicated to the House.

Master Speaker,

There is now some short time effluxed sithence here began a great rumour to be spread amongst us (and much fomented in the mouthes and ears of all sorts of people) of a treaty for a Cessation of Armes to be concluded on betwixt the forces settled in and about *Dublin*, and the *Lynster* Rebels, and that the same was agitated and set on foot by vertue and force of severall Letters from his Majestie to the *Marquess* of *Ormond*, and that the businesse hath been in a great probability to take effect untill of late some appearance of a breach hath fallen out betwixt them; what the substance or successe of that treaty may be, we in these parts have been kept utterly ignorant, and so far from being (to our knowledge) comprehended therein, or concluded thereby, as that we have not had the least notice thereof, but by the hands of the Rebels, to whom in that, or any other



other particular, we have little reason to give credit, save that at a late parley, which was held betwixt me and the principall Officers of this Army, and the Lord of *Mulker* (who pretended to communicate unto us matter tending to the publique good;) we made such advantage thereof, as to obtain leave to send a Gentleman of our own to the place, where this treaty was related to be in agitation, who suddenly returned unto us, with assurance that upon sundry specious overtures made by the Rebels such a Treaty had been entred into, but that the same by the appearance of their delusive irreality was broken off at present, and that the Marquesse of *Ormond* was then marched into the field with a good strength to prosecute the Lynster Rebels. And as we are of opinion that extreme necessity did compell those of the Lynster Army to harken to such a Treaty, so we cannot but avouch our owne wants and generall distresses to be equall to, if not surpassing, the sufferings of any other part of the Kingdome. And indeed albeit we are most faithfully zealous and desirous to bestow our lives and fortunes on this cause and service; yet will our generall defects and necessities disable us to administer any advantage unto it; being altogether unfurnished of such meanes, as might make our persons and endeavours available, or considerable: And although we have lately received a ship laden with Provisions, furnished out by the care and providence of that Honourable House (for which we are desirous that you would returne them our humble and thankfull acknowledgement of their great favour therein;) yet when the same fell out to be divided amongst our whole Army, it amounted not to above ten dayes provision for the common souldiers, so as I am again inforced to lay the souldiers upon the wretched inhabitants of our severall Garrisons, who were altogether unable to find either themselves or the souldiers a subsistence, if some private Merchants had not been enduced to bring in provisions upon their own account; which were sold out to the poor people, and may make them subsist untill the harvest draw on upon us, that we may expect to gain something abroad, which then neverthelesse we cannot hope to doe, or to be able to look out of our Garrisons, for the especiall want of powder and Munition, which is such as that our whole stores will be utterly exhausted, and spent in meer watching without other service, in one moneth or six weeks, having not for all our Garrisons and men above thirty Barrells of Powder, and Match in no sort proportionable to it; So that I shall humbly desire that in the first place we may receive at the least 200 Barrells of Powder with Match and lead proportionable, if any service be expected at our hands.

In the next place, there is cast upon me a most heavie and insupportable burthen

burthen of satisfying and giving contentment to the Officers, who having now neither money or Cloathes (meat being as scarce and dainty with them as either) doe daily importune me for leave to forsake the service, which I could not refuse to some few whom I had no meanes to relieve, nor can, but with reluctancy, deny unto the rest, seeing the contemptible and wretched condition they live in, beneath the qualitie of Gentlemen, or indeed common souldiers in other parts, and therefore I am enforced to deale with them by perswasions, wherein I have hitherto proved so successfull, and have found them so faithfully devoted to this service, as that they are content at my entreaty to wait for, and expect the order and direction of that Honourable Assembly, how they shall be disposed of, or provided for: And hereupon have I prevailed with the Admirall (whom we are all exceedingly obliged to, for his care and willingness to advance this service) to employ this Pinnace expressly with this dispatch to be communicated unto the House. And shall earnestly beseech you, as you tender the good and preservation of this considerable and important Province and Army, that you would effectually represent the substance of this my Letter unto that Honourable Assembly, and obtaine and returne unto me such full and ample directions and advertisements, what supply we are to expect, or depend upon, or what other course we shall apply our selves unto, as that we may (according to our generall desire) so dispose of our selves as may best suit with the liking and approbation of that Assembly, being confident that they will only Order and Command us such things as may be feasible, at least possible for us to observe: And now that we may not in the interim perish before any supplies or directions can overtake us, or returne unto us, (which we shall be in great danger of) if we receive not a sudden resolution. I shall make humble suit that this Pinnace may be dispatched back with all possible speed. And seeing we have already received good benefit by the Assistance of the Admirall; I shall also humbly desire that a course may be conceived to continue him upon this Coast, and that he may be directed to comply with me in all occasions of service, for that it is very probable we may by his help, when we shall have supplies, take in divers of the sea Towns, which had been performed ere this time, if ever we had been in a condition (since his coming to us) fit to March into the field. The enimie advancing lately to the siege of *Capperrquin* and *Lyfmore*, which places (in regard I was unable to draw forth the whole Army, through meere want of all kind of necessities) I did endeavour to strengthen with men, and provisions, and to that purpose marched with a good party of foot, and some horse to *Tallow* within two miles of their Campe, and there lay to face them, and attempt the putting in

in of provisions into the said severall places: I had there an opportunity to have a perfect view of their whole Forces, and did finde as well by my espyals, as by my particular survey, that their strength of horse did at the least treble ours (although ours according to their severall numbers, were indifferently full) and that they were very competently armed, which gave me then occasion and resolution to desire you would represent unto that Honourable Assembly how that Sir *John Pawlet*, Knight, having by his industry and earnest desire to advance this service, gotten a considerable number of serviceable men, well mounted together, who have on all occasions been employed, and shewed themselves active and able in the performance of severall services, I have for their encouragement and for the keeping of them together, and for the strengthening of our Horse issued some small quantity of Tobaccos unto them, to keep them alive, and promised to use my endeavours to gaine them an entertainment; I shall therefore earnestly desire you to represent unto the House, that if they will vouchsafe to supply Sir *John Pawlet* with a small sum of money, and some Arms to recruite and compleat them (which are the only thing they want) and to give me Order to enter them into pay and entertainment under his Command, that there will be a very serviceable and considerable Troope raised for the publique service, and such an one as will bring a good addition of strength to this Army. I have formerly of late directed most of my dispatches unto Serjeant Major *Jephson*, a Member of the House, and an industrious solicitour for the Province (to avoyd your too much trouble) but now I must desire your favours and furtherance in the returne of this dispatch, (he being probably come thence) in attendance whereon I remain

*Cork 7. Aug.*  
1643.

*Your affectionate friend and servants*



INSIQUIM.

FINIS.

